Taking Antoinettian Complacency for Normativity
The case of donor-driven security sector reform in Sub-Saharan Africa.

Mutengesa, Sabiiti

Awarding institution:
King's College London

KING'S COLLEGE LONDON
FACULTY OF SOCIAL SCIENCES AND PUBLIC POLICY
DEPARTMENT OF WAR STUDIES

TAKING ANTOINETTIAN COMPLACENCY FOR NORMATIVITY: THE CASE OF DONOR-DRIVEN SECURITY SECTOR REFORM IN SUB-SAHARAN AFRICA.

Sabiiti Mutengesa

Submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, 2014.

Supervisors: Professor Mats Berdal, King's College London
Dr. Funmi Olonisakin, King's College London

CONTENTS

ABSTRACT **6**

Table of Figures **8**

Chapter 1. The Pedigree, Birth and Marketing of SSR **9**

1.1 Introduction 9

1.2 Main Arguments of the study 11

1.3 Justification for the Study 15

1.4 Research Questions 18

1.5 Review of the Literature 18

1.6 Methodology 28

1.7 Chapter Overview 29

1.7.1. Chapter Two 29

1.7.2. Chapter Three 32

1.7.3. Chapter Four 34

1.7.4. Chapter Five 36

1.7.5. Chapter Six 37

1.7.6. Chapter Seven 38

1.7.7. Chapter Eight 40

Chapter 2. The Epistemological Limitations of the Normative Bias of the SSR Framework **42**

2.1 Introduction 42

2.2 The Normative Bias of Peacebuilding: The Case of SSR 44

2.3 Positivism Vs Innatism and the Origins of Normative Theorizing 45

2.4 The 'Bunsen Burner Fallacy': Rationalism Vs Science 49

2.4.1. Assumed methodological distinctness of the social and biophysical sciences ... 52

2.4.2. Science as a Process vs Science as a Product 54

2.5 Methodology Vs Methods 56

2.5.1. Conflation of the context of discovery with the context of justification 58

2.5.2. Perception and interpretation 59

2.5.3. The rationalist mix up of positivist knowledge with description 60

2.5.4. Rationalist conflation of Prior impressions with innate ideas 63
2.6 Reductionism and Dogmatism of 'Ought' in Normative Theory..... 68
2.6.1. Normative blinkers Vs the linguistic versatility of 'oughtness'..... 71
2.7 Normative Assumptions and The Problem of Induction 73
2.7.1. The impossibility of normative judgments being a priori..... 74
2.7.2. Normative theorising: Standard-issue metaphysics or positivism via the backdoor?..... 78
2.7.3. Normativity, ontophobia and the principle of induction..... 78
2.7.4. Normative claims: genuine propositions or naturalistic fallacies?..... 82
2.8 Non-Cognitivism and the Validity of Normative Claims 83
2.8.1. Cognitivist attacks against non-cognitivism 85
2.9 Sources of Normativity in International Development Policy 86
2.9.1. Intuitionism as a Putative Source Of Normativity..... 89
2.9.2. Utopianism and normativity..... 91
2.9.3. Speculative idealism and normativity..... 93
2.9.4. Power differentials, exceptionalism and norm setting..... 97
2.9.5. Latter Day Mission Civilisatrice : Europe as a 'Normative Power' 100

Chapter 3. Mixed Conceptions of Security in the Peacebuilding Discourse.. 108

3.1 Introduction..... 108
3.2 Post-Cold War conceptual Turmoil and the Birth of Neo-Liberal Reformism..... 109
3.3 Security Sector Reform and the Human Security Agenda 115
3.3.1. Origins and purpose of the Human Security framework..... 115
3.3.2. Human Security as an aspect of 'state-centric' security 118
3.3.3. Limitations of the human security framework..... 119
3.3.4. Human security and the limits of middle power diplomacy 122
3.4 Securitization Theory 124
3.4.1. Debatable founding premises: security as non-politics 124
3.4.2. Securitization or Threat Construction?..... 127
3.4.3. Securitisation Theory as mutilation of the Austinian Speech Act..... 131

Chapter 4. SSR as the New Variant of Civil-Military Relations 135

4.1 Introduction..... 135

4.2 Reflection on African Militaries: Analysis or Demonology 140
4.3 SSR and CMR: Hide Bound Levelers or Normative Homogenizers? 143
4.3.1. Diversity of Military Culture 143
4.3.2. Overlooked Contrasts: Anglophone Vs Francophone Africa 147
4.3.3. Implications of Diversity of Military Cultures for SSR and CMR Theory and Practice 153
4.4 Military Involvement in Politics: Its Genesis and inevitability 154
4.4.1. The Futility of a Blanket Veto on Military Involvement in Politics 154
4.4.2. Political Culture and Military Interventionism 156
4.4.3. Liberal Democratic CMR Vs the Party in Uniform 160
4.4.4. The Desired End: 'Civilian Control' or Civil Supremacy? 162

Chapter 5. Facilitating Vs False Starting SSR: The case of DDR in Uganda. . 185

5.1 Introduction 185
5.2 Essence and Typology of DDR 187
5.3 The Uganda DDR Process and Its Implications for Future SSR 189
5.3.1. Dissolution and Amalgamation Vs Disbandment and 'Demobilisation' 191
5.3.2. 'Disarmament' by unconditional incorporation 200
5.3.3. Regularisation as a requisite for regulation 210
5.4 The Future Rwanda Patriotic Army (RPA) and the Timing of 'Demobilization' 225
5.5 DDR as 'Doctrinal Stretching' ..... **Error! Bookmark not defined.**
5.6 The Twin Myths Of Uganda's DDR: Retrenchment Of Resources and Personnel ... 215
5.7 Discharge of Regulars and Upsurge of Irregulars 226
*5.7.1. Conclusion ..... **Error! Bookmark not defined.***

Chapter 6. Local Ownership, Political Will and SSR: Myths and Realities 263

6.1 The Illusion of Local Ownership in the Implementation of SSR 263
6.1.1. Introduction 263
6.1.2. SSR as a hard sell: supplicant ownership of benefactor's national interests ... 267
6.1.3. Imagining 'local ownership' and 'buy-in' through participatory approaches 270
6.2 Local Ownership as the Incarnation of the Civil Society Myth in Underdeveloped Polities 273

6.3 The Status of Civil Society and State Responsiveness: The Case of Contemporary Uganda 278
6.3.1. General underdevelopment 284
6.3.2. Low level of socio-economic mobilisation 285
6.3.3. Lack of information 287
6.3.4. Physical isolation of the population 288
6.3.5. Unfavourable demographic profile 291

Chapter 7. One-size-fits-all Reformism and its Critics 293

7.1 Introduction 293
7.2 Boilerplate Reformism: The Issues 294
7.3 Inescapable Limits to Reformism: Hazy Mission, no Theory 299
7.4 Aid Donor Condescension: Hectoring the Turkey to Vote for Christmas 304
7.5 The Amnesia of Conservative Reformism: Institutions and Habits as Living Histories 310
7.6 Isomorphism vs. Enhanced Functionality 313
7.7 Decoupling: Reform-Busting and Neutralization of Isomorphic Pressure 317

Chapter 8. Towards an Alternative View of the Security-Development Nexus321

8.1 The Overlooked Political Content of the Security Predicament 322
8.2 Thinking security 'outside the box': state of the debate 328
8.3 The Critical Twin Variables: Nation Building and State Making 330
8.3.1. Developmental, functional and historical theories 331
8.3.2. Sequence and stage schemes of nation building 332
8.3.3. 'Crises of development' and the software of security: Physical Safety Sector Reform or Security Sector Reform? 334
8.4 Institutionalization as the Master Imperative: Praetorianism or Militarism? 341

CONCLUSION 346

BIBLIOGRAPHY 350

ABSTRACT

As the Cold War ended, the international development establishment turned its attention to the challenges of protracted conflict in Sub-Saharan Africa, among other underdeveloped regions of the world. The realities of the Cold War had ruled out the engagement by multilateral and bilateral donors with the armed forces of aid-dependent countries.

Following the East-West rapprochement, the armed forces were singled out as the major driver of conflict and insecurity and as an obstacle to economic development. In order to engage with the governments of those countries, donors demanded that the professionalism and cost of maintaining armed forces be addressed through an initiative called as 'Security Sector Reform' (SSR), part of a normative agenda that marked a steady shift from project-focussed, to 'sector wide' approaches.

It is argued that SSR remains a re-embodiment of civil-military relations (CMR) theories of the 1960s and 1970s and like them, it is equally beset by the normative bias towards liberalism and the disregard for the realities in pre-liberal and transitional political systems or countries whose historical experience differs from the Western setting which initially influenced the formulation of CMR theory. It is further argued that the post-Cold War turmoil in the conceptualisation of security adds to the haziness of SSR both as a policy and as an analytical tool, in addition to the limits imposed by its normative orientation.

It is argued that SSR is premised on a problematic conception of security that conflates it with immunity to violent attack or physical safety. A conception that views security as a state of affairs in which groups and individuals are assured of sustainable and stable existence is suggested as the approach capable of capturing

the development challenges at the heart of the security predicament of Sub-Saharan African countries as a specific category of the Third World.

Table of Figures

Figure 1: Post-Cold War Concepts of International Security 111

Figure 2: The Realist Framework of National Security Management 114

Figure 3: The Politicisation-Securitization 'Model' 125

Figure 4: Military Intervention and the Level of Political Development 159

Figure 5: The Uganda 'DDR' Process 214

Figure 6: Uganda Military Expenditure, 1997-2006 226

Figure 7: Socio-economic Development and Civil Society's Influence on Policy .. 280

Figure 8: Socio-economic Development, Civil Society (CS) Capacity and State Responsiveness. 283

Figure 9: Critical Dimensions of Third World Security 338

The Pedigree, Birth and Marketing of SSR

1.1 Introduction

The realities of the Cold War had meant that, for years, donor countries were limited on how much they could debate issues related to the armed forces of recipient countries or very close allies. Following the East-West rapprochement, such constraints were eased and the veil on the armed forces of aid recipients and prospective allies was lifted. This happened by way of direct demands for reform. These demands were inaugurated by the United Kingdom's Secretary for newly created Department for International Development (DFID), Clare Short in a speech that first saw the use of the term Security Sector Reform.[1]

The calls for reforming the 'security sectors' mounted particularly because the armed forces and security services were considered to be a drain on the resources of crisis-ridden countries and promoters of intractable conflict. Those calls coincided with the realisation that traditional project models of aid provision, particularly to the dependent and weakly institutionalised countries mostly in Sub Saharan Africa were not yielding the intended results (Jones, 2000:1). In light of that, a shift had to be made from the focus on projects to 'sector wide approaches', a move that was expected to enhance the effectiveness of aid by 'cutting down transaction costs, improving coordination between donors, bringing aid under the effective management of recipient governments and widening the involvement of stakeholders in decision-making.'[2] Added to this was the general acknowledgement by the 'development community' that poverty eradication targets set by the Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development's Development Assistance Committee (OECD/DAC) had some utility; and agreement

[1] Speech at the Royal College for Defence Studies (RCDS) on 13 May 1998.
[2] Jones, ibid.

that policy-based lending under conditionality had severe limitations in light of the failures of structural adjustment programmes.

The events of 9/11 pointed out above also served to add new impetus to calls for reform and the rethinking of aid giving, but more importantly they terminated the relaxed attitude that had become a feature of the of the Cold War. The horror of 9/11 alerted the securitocrats and statesmen of the developed world to the security implications of the squalor, 'state failure' and endemic violence in the underdeveloped countries. Regarding 'state failure', Ghani and Lockhart have observed that:

> As 9/11 and subsequent attacks showed people in prosperous countries can no longer take the security of their lives for granted. This problem...is at the heart of the world-wide systemic crisis that constitutes the most serious challenge to global stability in the new millennium (2009:4).

Aid giving and defence relations had to be put to the purposes of countering the new and emerging threats. Security Sector Reform has since grown into a vibrant domain of policy, research and advocacy. Governments and multilateral agencies have in place departments and bureaucrats dedicated to SSR, while academic institutions have integrated it into their teaching curricula and research agendas. Non-government research and advocacy organisations in the fields of conflict, security, peace and development have likewise embraced SSR as a key area of research and advocacy.

Most striking however, is the relative indifference of much of Sub-Saharan Africa to the SSR debate. What continues to happen is that, some governments may be compelled by aid donors to cast some light in the dark recesses of their establishment, and specifically, to lay bare their financial outlays. Pressure is put on such governments to subject their defence and law-and-order institutions to reform to make them more transparent and accountable. What has remained unclear is the actual success of SSR initiatives. The broad aim of this study is to

examine the conceptual anchors of the security component of peacebuilding – understood as 'action undertaken at the end of a civil conflict to consolidate peace and prevent a recurrence of fighting' (Paris, 2004:38) – focusing on the reform of the 'Security Sector'. The study closely examines the objectives of SSR and its soundness, both as a concept and as a policy framework. The key assumptions and premises of the SSR are explored in order to establish whether they lend to the framework the robustness that would enable it to meet its set goals; and whether indeed, SSR as an aspect of Western liberal theory has much to offer to the understanding of the security and development challenges of the war-torn and conflict-prone countries of Sub-Saharan Africa, as a representative case of the Third World. The study draws on and seeks to contribute to the current literature on the nexus between security (or the lack of it) and development and the linkage between the two phenomena and conflict.

1.2 Main Arguments of the study

Certain common arguments run through this study and it is important that we flag them right at the outset starting from the next Chapter Two. Chapter Two and Chapter Three explore the theoretical and conceptual concerns of the study respectively. Chapter Two interrogates the philosophical basis of prevailing normative approaches highlighting the extent to which they continue to privilege prescriptions of values over empirical evidence derived from detailed analysis of the social, economic, political and cultural realities of the polities that are the targets for 'post-conflict' institutional reform. It argues that the approach being taken by common normative approaches is that, what works in the developed countries now is the norm which should work in the underdeveloped countries now, irrespective of what worked in the developed countries when they were also still developing. More than anything else, it is further argued, such a view amongst key sections of the international development establishment probably

stands out as the most insidious threat to the long-term security of developing countries as understood by this study.

Chapter Three explores the various conceptions of security in the post-Cold War era highlighting their utility in shedding light on the security challenges of underdeveloped countries. It builds on an existing view that the security predicament of the conflict-prone polities of the Third World – epitomized by the countries of Sub-Saharan Africa – goes beyond the narrowly conceived concerns of physical safety but is primarily shaped by the crises entailed by the ongoing processes of political development in the form of state making and accessorily, nation building. The chapter argues that the statehood and nationhood of the underdeveloped countries of Sub-Saharan Africa has been erroneously taken as a given, resulting in a misreading of the root causes of insecurity in those countries. Initiatives such as SSR are offshoots of that major omission. It further argues that, contrary to common portrayals of security as a service, or as a commodity or utility to be purchased, provided, delivered and consumed, it is a state of affairs and an outcome of the provision of other services; in addition to the attainment of critical thresholds in the process of state making. The chapter questions the common tendency in international development circles to conflate security, as defined here, with physical safety, understood by the study to mean immunity to violent attack. The study argues that physical safety is only one out many elements of security and that the prevailing conception of SSR – which is in real terms is 'Physical Safety Sector Reform' – is premised on a category mistake which amounts to the trivialization of the broader debate on security and development.

Chapter Four explores the linkage between the debates on what has been framed as 'security sector governance' and 'democratic control of the armed forces' in the 1990s with the debates on civil-military relations (CMR) theory especially in the 1960s and 1970s and argues that SSR is a latter-day reincarnation of earlier civil-military relations theories and further suggested that SSR is equally handicapped by the same limitations that invalidated CMR, namely the normative bias towards liberalism and the disregard for the realities in pre-liberal and

transitional political systems or countries whose historical experience differ from the socio-political contexts that influenced the original formulation of the theory. Those limitations do not portend well for SSR.

Chapter Five uses the Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration (DDR) in Uganda as a micro case study of the often-cited synergies between SSR and DDR programming in light of the latter's chequered record. Uganda is chosen in light of the fact that its armed forces are deemed to have undergone both DDR and SSR. It is argued that the actual sense in which synergies between DDR and SSR can be realised is rendered questionable by the lack of clarity on what is meant by DDR even in countries that are commonly acclaimed to have implemented it with success. Uganda's experience in managing armed groups in the immediate aftermath of major hostilities is explored to identify the key features of the process from 1986 onward, with a particular focus on the donor-supported mass discharge of the 1990s, with the view of identifying whether as commonly suggested, that exercise was DDR as commonly suggested in policy and academic literature, and what this means for follow-on initiatives like SSR.

Chapter Six examines the limitations of the rhetoric on four elements, that are deemed to be critical to the successful implementation of SSR and allied reforms, These elements are local ownership, buy-in, political will and civil society. It is argued that, even if those terms and what they refer to was clear enough, the status of the institutions targeted by SSR as the cornerstone of sovereignty tends to automatically preclude the realisation of buy-in, ownership or political will. It is argued that the non-inclusiveness and non-democratic nature of the process of conception and formulation of reform policies renders the rhetoric of ownership hollow, unwholesome and condescending and goes a long way to explain why the antipathy with which reform initiatives are received. It is argued that, the surprise with which external actors view the lack of political will and commitment in underdeveloped countries is in itself paradoxical and deserving of further investigation. It is argued that the tendency by the formulators of reform initiatives of putting civil society on a pedestal almost as the magic bullet in the

implementation of externally-conceived reforms overlooks the serious limitations of wider society in underdeveloped countries in its capacity to shape the public policy processes.

Chapter Seven examines the common approaches to institutional reform in the context of peacebuilding and 'post-conflict' reconstruction focussing on the one-size-fits-all model approach that dominates those activities. It argues that reforms such as SSR short fall of meeting expectations set for them because they fail to fit in the contexts of developing countries particularly those in regions that are afflicted by protracted conflict. It is further argued that reform initiatives continue to be ill-formulated or are most times undertaken as a panacea even in contexts that call for more far-reaching interventions. Reform pursued as a cure-all or as a magic potion very easily degenerates into 'business as usual' dogmatism especially if it underestimates the real magnitude of the security and developed tasks at hand. As is often the case in Sub-Saharan Africa, institutions must first be formed before they can be reformed or even re-formed; they must first come into existence before they can become unfit for purpose and therefore necessitate any form of reconfiguration.

Chapter Eight builds further on the arguments in Chapter Four and argues that basing on a false theory of civil-military relations, of SSR advocacy of the post-Cold War era has gone astray by falsely attributing the praetorian character of Sub-Saharan African polities to the armed forces – or the so-called security sector. It argues that, the symptomatology of political disorder, chronic instability and military intervention in politics is part of a much broader crisis in the functioning of affected political systems in which all other social forces apart from armed forces are galvanised haphazardly in politics, on account of the low level of the rate political institutionalisation being outstripped by the increasing levels of political participation. It concludes by noting that the armed forces emerges on top only because it has more dramatic means of intervention in disjointed politics than other groups and therefore focusing on the armed forces like SSR does is

diversionary and only serves to conflate a complex syndrome with one of its components, albeit a dramatic one.

1.3 Justification for the Study

A closer examination of the policy and academic literature in the field of post conflict peacebuilding, more particularly in the areas of physical safety and law-and-order, reveals a continuing oversimplification of the complex linkages between security and development; and a lack of nuance in the use to which the two terms are put. Currently, there is limited effort to place the security and development challenges of the conflict-prone countries in their proper historical perspective of the ongoing processes state making. Our understanding of state making derives directly from the general conception of the state as adopted by this study. We take the state to be the historically-determined mode of social organization in which a population, suitably a national one, occupying a given territory is presided over by a politically constituted government that claims internal and external sovereignty. Following from that, state making is the more-or-less open-ended process that either results in, or is aimed at integrating communities, consolidating the territories they inhabit, constituting the political authorities that preside over them and imbuing those authorities with sovereignty.[3] The deeper challenges that are entailed in those processes are currently either disregarded, or are taken for granted or are subject to misconceptions to an extent that undermines the wholesomeness of the peacebuilding orthodoxy.

Analysts, commentators and practitioners remain disinclined towards drawing vital lessons from the historical experiences of the more developed countries,

[3] We do not subscribe to conceptions of state making that take any of the four components of the state as outlined above as a given. Such conceptions would include Fukuyama's in which the existence of government is taken for granted in his characterisation of state building as the 'creation of new government institutions and the strengthening of existing ones' (2004:ix), or Call and Cousens who define statebuilding as 'actions undertaken by international or national actors to establish, reform, or strengthen the institutions of the state which may or may not contribute to peacebuilding' (2008:4). If at this stage nation building is not given prominence, the only reason is that it is implied directly as the core component of the broader process of state making. The details of those processes are highlighted in Chapter Eight of this study.

which, albeit in different epochs, faced similar challenges to those faced by today's developing countries (Chang, 2003b; Ayoob, 1995; Cohen, Brown and Organski, 1981, Tilly, 1975 a&b). The disregard of the insights of the latter analysts has given rise to an ahistorical, apolitical, overly technocratic and paternalistic narrative on the security of Third World countries. This shortcoming can be explained by the sense in which the discourse on security and development has been shaped by the search for short-term quick fix solutions by technocrats and politicians. This research will seek to examine some of those shortcomings by putting the common-place conceptions in the security and development field under the spotlight with the aim of enabling scholars to regain the initiative of concept formation in the two vital areas, initiative that has been surrendered to practitioners. Accordingly, the study will examine:

- The conceptual assumptions of the SSR framework and interrogate the analytical vitality of its key terms and categories.
- The epistemological assumptions of SSR with a focus on the normative thinking that continues to inform the framework.
- The framework's practical assumptions focusing on the limitations set by SSR's genealogy and the operational obstacles to its implementation.

This study revisits the hitherto disregarded studies on Third World security and examines some of the historical processes of state formation and nation building drawing on what can still be applied to contemporary development studies from theories on political development.[4] By doing so, the study seeks to demonstrate that ultimately, security is a downstream derivative of development research will seek to tease out the sense in which 'security sector' reformism is an offshoot of the conflation of physical safety with security.

[4] Among these are Black (1967), Huntington (1968), Tilly (1975), Binder et al (1971), Finkle and Gable (1971), Huntington and Nelson (1976), Strayer (1970), Weiner and Huntington (1987), Kolodiziej and Harkavy (1982), Al Mashat (1987), Thomas (1987), Ayoob (1984, 1991, 1992, 1995), Job (1992), Azar and Moon (1988) and Graham (1994).

The key propositions of the research are as follows:

1. Contrary to the common portrayal of security as a service, commodity or utility to be provided/delivered and consumed, it is a state of affairs and an outcome of the provision of other services and the attainment of historically determined socio-economic equilibriums in the overall functioning of a political community.
2. Security is a state of affairs in which groups and individuals are assured of stable, safe and sustainable existence, phenomena whose attainment goes beyond the remit of instruments of coercion and the institutions of law and order, the targets of SSR.
3. Given that security is a state of affairs, fencing it off as a 'sector' creates false categories such as SSR, itself a product of the ongoing conflation between physical safety (immunity from violent attack) and security as defined above.
4. The ongoing conflation of 'security' with 'physical safety' only serves to contradict the two major claims by the advocates of SSR; first, that it is a holistic approach, second, that it goes beyond the cold War militaristic conceptions of security.
5. Given the nature of security as a state of affairs that goes beyond physical safety, every sector of public policy formulation and implementation is essentially a 'security sector', hence, the continuing reference to the instruments of coercion as the "security sector" trivializes the security predicament of the underdeveloped countries of the Third World, the main targets of so-called Security Sector Reform.
6. The security predicament of the conflict-prone countries of the Third World goes beyond the narrowly conceived concerns of physical safety but is primarily shaped by the ongoing processes nation building and state making that are either taken for granted or perceived perfunctorily by peacebuilding initiatives including SSR.

It is envisaged that the outcome of this research will be of interest for those specializing in the area of peace, conflict, security and development studies, political science and international relations. It will also benefit scholars with interest in comparative historical analysis of the processes nation building and state making. More particularly, the research will aim to show that, rather than being a service that can be provided or a commodity to be purchased, security is an end state and a downstream derivative of wider societal process that cannot be meaningfully grasped if they are subsumed under such simplistic short hand as 'security sector'.

1.4 Research Questions

The key questions that the study addresses are:

1) What, if any, are the key conceptual anchors of the SSR framework and how well do they reflect the security and development challenges of the conflict-prone countries, the intended beneficiaries of SSR programmes?
2) How does the genealogy of the SSR initiative as an externally originated and donor driven agenda constrain its advancement as a policy and analytical tool, and in the process, undermine the attainment of its declared goals?

1.5 Review of the Literature

The scope, and arguably the amorphousness of SSR as a field of policy, advocacy and analysis, makes the task of reviewing literature related to it a daunting one, particularly given the steady flow of books and pamphlets that have continued to issue from the many think tanks, advocacy groups and implementing agencies that have embraced what has clearly become an industry. More than anything else, the multiplicity of the organisations, activists, practitioners and scholars involved

with the initiative account for the highly variable quality of the literature on SSR, as well as for the disparate conceptualisations of SSR.

A closer examination of the objectives of SSR reveals that its broad aims across all contexts of its implementation are the recasting the relationship between the armed forces and civil authorities and the demilitarisation of target countries. Those have remained the main themes within civil-military relations and development studies, the fields from which SSR has drawn most of its assumptions and conceptual formulations. For the beginnings of the theme of demilitarisation in general, Lamb (2000) shows that it first attracted scholarly attention in the first half of the twentieth century with as an avenue for the reduction of military capabilities, especially preferred by victorious parties on defeated nations and alliances following the end of major hostilities. It became one of the major strands of the new field of Peace Studies dating back to the end of World War I. SSR and most other peacebuilding frameworks and initiatives that have emerged following the end of the Cold War have maintained demilitarisation as a major component. Hutchful (1998) makes the most explicit link between demilitarisation and SSR, linking it directly to other measures that are common to post-authoritarian and post-conflict peacebuilding.[5]

The civil-military relations (CMR) roots of SSR can be found in the writings pioneered by Huntington in his seminal work, *The Soldier and the State* (1957) which dwelt exclusively on the situation in the developed liberal democracies of the West. One already notices Huntington's 'subjective' and 'objective' control of the armed forces and professionalism in the being put to use by the Bonn International Centre for Conversion (BICC) in its definition of the aim of SSR as the process intended '…to create armed, uniformed forces which are functionally differentiated, professional forces under objective and subjective political control, at the lowest functional level of resource use' (Brzoska, 2000: 9). Huntington later examined his original theory in his equally seminal *Political Order in Changing Societies* (1968) in

[5] Prominent among these measures is Demobilisation, Disarmament and Reintegration (DDR), Defence policy review, budgetary review and civil military relations.

which he reflected on the nature of civil-military relations in the less developed and the communist states. In those two works, Huntington makes six major observations five of which have remained the cornerstone of the theory of civil military relations as has been inherited by the SSR framework. The sixth observation which derives from his 1968 publication is still absent from much of the scholarly and policy debate regarding the armed forces and of civil-military relations in general.

First, Huntington advanced the view that the civilians and military officers make up two distinct groups whose existence he portrays almost in adversarial terms, which is the second major claim that is implicit in his views. Third, he highlights the importance of 'civilian control' as the medium through which civilians maintain their hold on the overall polity by exercising supremacy over the military, though giving latitude in matters requiring their expertise, thereby forestalling the likelihood of conflict between the two groups. Fourth, according to him, the effectiveness of 'civilian control' is directly related to shifts in civil-military relations over time. Fifth, in a later examination of praetorianism in his 1968 work, he stepped outside the confines of the structure and functioning of the 'civilian' and military domains and advanced the view that the political and institutional structure of wider society has greater potential to fundamentally affect civilian control.[6] Specifically, he notes that the absence of political institutions capable of mediating, refining and moderating group political action is weak in praetorian societies. All political groups are politicized as result of which '[E]ach group employs means which reflect its peculiar nature and capabilities. The wealthy bribe, student riots; workers strike; mobs demonstrate; and the military coup' (1968:196). The foregoing leads to Huntington's sixth major observation on civil-military relations, namely, that civilian control is threatened not so much by the military *per se* but by the absence of or weakness of institutions.

---

[6] Political Order, pp. 192-263.

In *The Soldier and the State*, Huntington observes that it is the existence of the officer corps as a professional body that gives a unique cast to the modern problems of civil-military relations (1957: 7). He traces the phenomenon of the professional officer to no earlier than 1800, further noting that by 1900, all major countries of the world could lay claim to possession of professional military officers.[7] The emergence of the professional officer corps, further contends Huntington, resulted in the problem of the relationship between the politician and the expert, more specifically, the military and civilian spheres resulting in tensions whose resolution lies in 'civilian control'. Huntington gives the justification for 'civilian control' as the lack of competence by the military outside their field.[8] Huntington refers to a balance of roles between the military professional and the statesman wherein the latter acknowledges the integrity of the military profession and its subject matter while the former accepts to remain neutral in political terms and accepts guidance from the latter.[9] Huntington holds that, it is the maintenance of this balance that determines the integrity of civil-military relations. A negative balance is more likely to result if civilian control is based on 'subjective control' and a positive balance is assured when civilian control rests on "objective" foundations.

In response to Huntington, several theorists have criticized his but not to the extent of debunking them. Janowitz, has been the most strident of Huntington's critics taking issue with most of his key claims ranging from professionalism to the taxonomy of the forms of civilian control. While Huntington highlights the three essential elements of military professionalism as expertise, responsibility and corporateness, some of the key attributes that SSR seeks to achieve, Janowitz insists that professionalism is a concept that implies an element of desirable behaviour, hence, '[A]s it applies to the military, it represents an

---

[7] Ibid., 7

[8] Ibid., 70

[9] Ibid., 70-72

ambiguous topic', further posing the question, 'what is the import of ethics and responsibility for the professional combatant?' (1971:6). He also takes issue with Huntington's reference to so called objective institutional constraints as a determinant of civilian control. Like Janowitz, Abrahamsson doubts on the utility of the notion of objective control by questioning the connection that Huntington makes between professionalism and political neutrality and goes ahead to further question the suggestion that the maximization of professionalism enhances civilian control.

Allbright makes note of writers such as Eric A. Nordlinger, Amos Perlmutter, and Claude E. Welch, Jr., and Arthur K. Smith who have adopted the position that the notions supplied by Huntington offer minimal insight into the behavior of military, or 'praetorian' governments once they emerge (1980:155). In the process of distancing themselves from Huntingtonian concepts, some like Nordlinger do not take on board Huntington's later insights on praetorianism. Nordlinger describes praetorianism as the antithesis of civilian control and has argued that it arises when there is conflict between soldiers and civilian governors that leads to a breakdown of civilian supremacy. In other words, the defining feature of praetorianism is the breakdown of civilian control. On the other hand Huntington conceptualizes praetorianism as a breakdown of civic order, and rather than viewing it as an antithesis of civilian pre-eminence, he looks at it as an antithesis of civic order and as an outcome of the levels of political participation outstripping the rate of institutionalization.[10] Huntington's initial disregard for nonwestern contexts in his pioneering work has compelled other analysts to assert that his theory lacks universal applicability. To bridge that gap, some like Odom (1973) and Colton (1979) have articulated alternative views of civil-military relations for communist run states. Odom proposed the institutional congruence approach to capture Russian historical experience, while Colton has come up with the participatory model.

---

[10] Political Order, pp. 78-82; 195-196.

Available literature shows that SSR became a feature of both academia and policy in the late 1990s. It was popularised as one of the frameworks through which the aid donors could reorient their relationship with the aid recipients in the underdeveloped world as the need to target development assistance to what were considered to be priority areas became the preferred approach (Brzoska, 2003:2). Additionally, following the collapse of the Soviet Union, SSR became one of the policy innovations for framing the entry of Eastern and Central European countries into the European Union and the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO) through liberalising their civil-military relations (Hadzic, 2004:11).

The literature on SSR falls into three general categories. First, are the analyses of the framework's exponents, second are the writings of scholars and policy analysts that are sceptical about its efficacy and third is a small but growing group of its critics. SSR exponents and experts trace the origins of SSR to a 1998 policy statement by the UK government Department for International Development (DFID) (Short, 1998). However, the term 'security sector' appeared as early as 1983 (Ball, 1985: 44-48).[11] Ball later makes extensive reference to the 'security sector' in a later publication also focusing on fiscal aspects of defense management (1988: 212-236).

Literature that is sympathetic to SSR also uses other labels to refer to the related activities; amongst which is 'Security Sector Transition', 'Security Sector Transformation' (Chuter, 2000; Cooper and Pugh, 2002; Williams, 2001, 2005); Cawthra and Luckham, 2003; Dokos, 2007; Caforio, 2006; Gompert *et al.*, 2007); 'Justice and Security Sector Reform' (JASSR), Safety, Security and Access to Justice (SSAJ), Security Sector Governance and Security Sector Management (Cranfield University), Security Sector Development (Ministry of Defence, UK), Security Sector Transition (Hills, 2000), Security Sector Restructuring (Williams, 2005:45), Security Sector Reconstruction (UNDP, 2000).

---

[11] Ball has noted that the term was preferable to the more frequently used one, 'military expenditure'. It was hoped that it would be more inclusive particularly in regard to paramilitary forces (p. 44).

In terms of basic definitional issues, Hanggi and Scherrer have noted that, 'there is no generally accepted definition of the security sector or what SSR entails, with different actors embracing broader or narrower understandings of this relatively new concept' (2008:4). This is support of Hanggi's earlier observation that '…it is a relatively ambiguous concept, which refers to a plethora of issues' (2004:1), an ambiguity that may account for the several definitions of SSR one finds in the literature. The 'security sector' is generally referred to as:

> [A]ll those organizations that have the authority to use, or order the use of force, or the threat of force, to protect the state and its citizens, as well as those civil structures that are responsible for their management and oversight (for example, the military, specialized peace support forces, intelligence agencies, justice and law-enforcement institutions, the civilian structures that manage them, and representatives of NGOs and the mass media).

Chuter (2006) has compiled almost a dozen of conflicting conceptions, including the one by Women Waging Peace, according to which SSR is aimed at '…reducing the size, budget and scope of the security sector and reforming it to become more transparent and accountable to its citizens [sic]'[12], while the United Kingdom's Department for International Development (DFID) refers to SSR as an activity aimed at '…helping developing countries improve the accountability and transparency of their security sectors' (2006:2). Others include the paper for the Stability Pact Working on Security and Defence defines SSR as 'Right-sizing, re-orientation, reform, and capacity-building of national defence forces (2001), while the Bonn International Centre for Conversion (BICC) defines the same process as intended '…to create armed, uniformed forces which are functionally differentiated, professional forces under objective and subjective political control, at the lowest functional level of resource use' (Brzoska, 2000:9). Other definitions also include DDR and promotion of regional security structures (Chalmers, 2000). Other

[12] Cited in Chuter 2006 p.3.

exponents of SSR have gone further to characterize it as an initiative 'needed to ensure sustainable development, democracy, peace and security' (Hanggi and Scherrer, 2008: 4), 'a central component of efforts to overcome fragility and conflict in a number of countries… ' (OECD, 2007, p. 3); 'a broad, holistic policy approach aimed at improving both the effectiveness and democratic control and accountability of the various institutions, ministries and actors involved in the provision (sic) of security…' (Wulf, 2005). Although Brzoska is a key SSR promoter, he has made reference to SSR's initial popularity and the eventual wariness with the use of the category, which, according to him has resulted in the adoption of other labels for this unclear undertaking (2003).

In an apparent throwback to Huntington's affirmation of the role of the military in modernization, Hanggi presents SSR as an agent of a wider development agenda with the institutions of the security sector serving as vehicles by which to instill the values of democratic governance and public service transformation (2003). The classifications of country contexts for implementation of SSR are as varied as the definition of the term. Lilly and von Tongen (2002: 12-13)[13], one by Hanggi (2004: 10-14),[14] while Hutchful and Fayemi delineate the policy contexts that make SSR relevant (2005: 74), further categorising the types of regimes and transitions that may dictate different approaches to SSR (2005:78). Greene identifies 'situations' in which SSR interventions take place basing on what he calls the conflict cycle (2006:3).

Those diverse characterizations by SSR's exponents have fed into the misgivings of skeptics and critics who view it as incoherent and ambiguous. According to Chuter, the incoherence of SSR '… can be explained by the parentage of SSR itself…as the bastard child of Civil-Military Relations and Development

---

[13] Cited in Brzoska , 2003, p.40-41. This classification gives five categories of countries, viz., consolidating democracies, lapsing or stalled democracies, transitional democracies, conflict-torn societies and states under reconstruction.

[14] There are three categories under this by context: developmental context, post authoritarian context and post-conflict context.

Studies' (2006:2). Born *et al.* have been prompted to simply describe SSR as 'an ill-defined concept' (2003:3), supporting Chuter's claim that, 'a subject such as SSR, important and complex as it is, does not actually have a respectable, empirically founded, set of concepts from which to work.' The most incisive critiques of SSR have been made by Peake and Scheye (2006) and Chuter (2006) who share the sentiment that, the framework needs to be reworked and be presented more pragmatically, in a 'modest', 'moderate', tone. Scheye and Peake point to the 'contextual-conceptual' divide that dogs the concept, and the general lack of an intellectual foundation and practical guide.

Other general criticism of SSR has come from Chuter according to whom, it is an attempt '…to remold military institutions in the world in line with the Anglo-Saxon vision' (2000:14), while Alao in comments on the development community's SSR programs in Africa notes that, the term itself is rarely used in African countries, and that SSR may only be incidental to the need to meet a number of post-Cold War realities (2000:19). Williams has simply discounted the utility of SSR by noting that, it is 'fundamentally pejorative and borders on the offensive' (Williams, 2000:7).[15]

Also to be criticised are some of the key themes that constitute the major strands of SSR, among which is the concept of civil society, civilian control of the military, good governance, human security, people-centeredness and local ownership. On the importance of civil society in implementation of SSR, Ball contends that, it (civil society) '….can actively monitor the security sector and be consulted on a regular basis' (2000:14). Anheier *et al.* query the theoretical wholesomeness of such use of the concept of civil society and claims that, it conflates an empirical category with a political project (2001:15). Similarly, Caprini notes that the term '…tends to mean all things to all people, and the analytical benefit from a more rigorous use of the concept may be lost' (2004:8). The employment of the concept has also been criticised on the grounds that, SSR

[15] Cited in Smith, 2000; p.16

practitioners continue to artificially appose Civil society against government, while at the same time denouncing the latter and in the process, creating antagonisms between the people and their governments, in the process, undermining intended reforms (Hendrickson, 1999:31). Scheye and Peake question the Eurocentric bias of the term by referring to its definition by the United Nations and the international development community that excludes structures that are predominant in preindustrial settings (2005: 317).

The term 'human security', a central theme in SSR literature also attracts criticism particularly for privileging the individual over the collective. Buzan notes that, '...individuals are not free standing but only take their meaning from the societies in which they operate: they are not some kind of bottom line to which all else can and should be reduced or subordinated' (2004: 369). Newman has indicated that the term is 'a normatively attractive but analytically weak concept' (2004:359), while Suhrke describes its broader agenda as a stalled initiative (2004:365); with Buzan referring to it as a '… reductionist, idealistic notion that adds little analytical value' (2004:369); while Paris wonders whether human security is a 'Paradigm shift or hot air' (2001).

On 'local ownership' as a prerequisite for the successful implementation of SSR, Boughton and Mourmouras have pointed out that as currently conceptualised, the term is '…more akin to a rhetorical device than a guide for implementers', further adding that,

> Finding empirical support for the role of ownership…is difficult because ownership cannot be directly observed or measured and because it is dynamic and often fragile. These features make assessment of program ownership a subjective exercise (2002:14).

The foregoing view tends to support Peake and Scheye's observation that what cannot be measured cannot be operationalised programmatically (2005: 318).

The notion of 'civilian oversight of the security sector', one of the key goals of SSR has attracted extensive criticism from Chuter (2000), Hutchful (2003) and

Williams (2005) on grounds that, the desire to have the instruments of coercion placed under civil control is conflated with 'civilian control', yet civilian control is not necessarily a guarantee for sound government. Williams notes that, the SSR framework's insistence on 'civilian control' is '…a problematic and potentially divisive concept…', noting also that, it '…confuses the civilian content of many democratic institutions…with the political principle of civil oversight over the armed forces' (2005:9); a sentiment that is echoed by Chuter (2000:27-28).

1.6 Methodology

This study is a thematic critical inquiry that aims to examine the conceptual rigour of currently held views and assumptions about the nature and remedies of insecurity in the Third World with SSR in Sub-Saharan Africa as a focal point. It involves an extensive theoretical investigation of the key themes that form the focus of the project. The emphasis is on a comparison of the concepts and principles that form the core of the SSR framework and to scrutinise them against existing frameworks in the literature on security, development studies in general and political and institutional development in particular.

The study relied on two major strategies. First, being focused mainly on the analysis of conceptual categories, specifically a policy and academic category, the preferred methods of the study have been principally qualitative. To achieve this, the study relied primarily on desk-based research and this involved archival and library study of published and unpublished literature. The sources of Information were printed and online journals, online gateways and databases, publications from government, research institutes and think tanks, reference texts and books in the field of development, conflict studies and political science. The techniques employed were basic and straightforward textual analysis followed by interpretation, explication and criticism.

The second strategy hinged on the researcher's first-hand experience on the research contexts which constitute the micro case studies, specifically on Uganda, and particularly on the military. The writing of Chapter Five and the comments on

SSR in Uganda is based on the researcher's direct participation as a member of the Ugandan Armed Forces for fifteen years of 'field work' from 1986 to 2002, serving as a staff officer in departments that oversaw the integration of former insurgents, the processing of personnel that were earmarked for discharge in the early 1990s and the co-ordination of the UK Government supported defence review from 1998 to 2002. Although the study is thematic, it has drawn on my personal experience as indicated above and comparative analysis of selected countries and regions of Africa.

1.7 Chapter Overview

1.7.1. ***Chapter Two***

Chapter two serves two major purposes. First, it is a response partly to the lack of sustained debate on the important question of epistemology in the field of security and development; and partly also a reaction to the pre-eminence of normative thinking in the policy and academic debates on Third World security and development. In highlighting that concern, Chapter Two implicitly critiques what can be considered to be a key deficiency of mainstream Social Science research, namely 'methodologism', or what Bakan (1973) has called 'methodolatry' or the 'methodological imperative'. By 'methodologism' we mean the tendency by researchers to turn methodology into an end in itself when they overemphasize method at the expense of epistemology, ontology and practical considerations of the real-world applicability of research outputs. Whereas social theorising is generally assumed to stand on three legs, namely, 1) claims in respect of the nature of the social world (ontology); 2) claims on the nature of knowledge that can be obtained on that social world (epistemology) and 3) the manner in which that knowledge may be obtained (methodology), it is mainly methodology that tends to be emphasized in most research undertakings. The thrust and gist of Chapter Two is to highlight the auxiliary status of methodology and to bring to the fore the question to do with our claim to possess the knowledge that we profess

on the social world and how it is that we gain possession of that knowledge. Briefly, Chapter Two seeks to restore epistemology to its rightful place.

Secondly, Chapter Two serves as a statement of the epistemological commitment of the rest of the study, namely positivism, or the philosophical position that knowledge derives from sensory experience of the world, as opposed to innatism,[16] the view that knowledge derives not from sensory experience of the outside world, but instead arises from inborn ideas that become accessible through introspection and reasoning. The position taken by this chapter is that certain aspects of international development thinking are representative of the latter, as exemplified by so-called Normative Theory. In light of the study's key finding that the term 'normative' has become a flag of convenience for claims advanced by certain scholars, commentators and practitioners in the area of international development, the second chapter proceeds by undertaking a philosophical unpacking of normativity and normative thinking in general, to lay bare its shortcomings. This is achieved by situating normative thinking squarely where it belongs, namely, at the heart of the longstanding philosophical controversy between the 'empiricists' who hold that human knowledge is derived primarily from experience and the 'rationalists' who assert that we are born with all the stock of the knowledge we possess – hence our reference to the innate principle – and that by a process of reasoning (hence rationalism), we activate such inborn knowledge from its dormancy. The common anti-empiricist arguments advanced by the rationalist school of thought are explored telegraphically to expose their shortcomings.

A brief overview is made of the roots of the empiricism-rationalism controversy, followed by a detailed exploration of, and rebuttals to rationalist claims against empiricism. This exercise is important for this study because the prescriptive approaches in the world of practical policy as exemplified by neoliberal reforms such as SSR are the direct descendant of the anti-empiricism and anti-

[16] A detailed critique of innatism and the innate principle has been carried out by by Locke , 1961, pp.5-32.

positivism (and by implication, rationalism and innatism) of the social sciences. Anti-empiricism constitutes the philosophical justification for the reluctance by international development practitioners to base their policy proposals on analysis of the concrete socio-economic, cultural and political realities in parts of the world where they seek to implement those policies. According to that thinking, it is not necessary to base policy on existing reality or experience, let alone '...analytical and conceptual clarity about the challenges that need to be tackled' (Berdal, 2013:8). In any case, reality is a social construct according to the constructivists, besides the fact that, '...there is no longer a universal test of what is probable or what is rational to believe on the basis of experience' (Hollis and Smith, 1990:61). The extreme form of that position is the assumption that individuals, groups, classes, castes or races are inherently and naturally endowed with varying levels of knowledge, therefore requiring that those are more endowed innately with values and norms (hence those with 'normative power'), or those that are naturally endowed with mores and progressive ideas should reform and civilise the less endowed.

The chapter looks at the traditional anti-sciencism of rationalism and examines the recurrent conflation by the rationalists of science looked at as 'systematised knowledge', with the layman's view of science specifically as knowledge about the biophysical world. Also examined are the fallacies of rationalist criticisms of empiricism relating to the knowledge acquisition process as it is understood by positivism in general. The link between rationalism and normative thinking is traced, followed by an examination of the main ingredients and problematic linguistic assumptions of normativity to expose the weak ground on which it stands, both from the philosophical perspective and on grounds whether normative statements can be considered to have any literal significance. The common antecedents of the normative impulse are explored followed by an examination of the limitations of one of the contemporary by-products of the nexus between normative theory and international policy as exhibited by the notion of 'Normative power Europe'. Later sections of the chapter sound a veiled

warning on the real implications of rationalist thinking for the wholesomeness of international development practice, particularly when views to the effect that, human knowledge is innate and that there are inherent group variations in endowment of that knowledge, a view that is held dearly by some practitioners and scholars as demonstrated in the study.

1.7.2. ***Chapter Three***

Chapter Three closely follows the exploration of the epistemological deficiencies of the normative orientation of the SSR debate with a rough sketch of notable problems of the debate's ontological framework. The major theoretical frameworks that continue to structure the debates on post-Cold War security are outlined from their origins in the days of the Cold War to the events surrounding 9/11. It is argued that the end of the Cold War has engendered more of a meltdown than a blooming of a thousand flowers, as the longstanding ordering principle of the international system suddenly vanished sparking off an ontological fragmentation in the strategic environment, and a related epistemological fragmentation in the scholarly world. SSR – just like any other post-Cold War framework such as the human security agenda, the debate on widening and deepening and so-called securitization theory – has suffered significantly from that era's conceptual turmoil that has not been helped by the lack of initiative on the part of scholars.

It is further suggested that much of the blame for the post-Cold War conceptual turmoil falls on the 'idealist' or the defunct 'system-centric' camp and not on the 'traditionalists' or state-centric camp. While the latter stayed put after the collapse of the Berlin wall, the former went out of currency with the demise of systemic threat of nuclear conflagration. This is the point that Buzan *et al.* are emphasizing when they refer to 'a period of disorientation' following the end of the Cold War, resulting in a situation where '[t]he function, and therefore the status and funding, of the entire edifice of strategic studies built up during the Cold War

seemed to be at risk...'(1998:3). To find a new purpose for themselves, and a new lease of life and funding, the idealists or system-centric analysts of the Cold War era went behind the lines of the traditionalists, splintered into factions of neo-idealists, and crafted a multiplicity of agendas ('society-centred', 'human-centred', 'environmental security' or 'feminism', critical security studies, among others) at the sub state level.[17] Some of the agendas were based on the rebranding of societal vulnerabilities into threats, while others took on epistemological labels. The category that most dramatically epitomises the bewilderment that has been precipitated by the end of the Cold War is 'Human Security' particularly as it spelt out in *New Dimensions of Human Security,* the UN publication that inaugurated it (United Nations: 1994). It implies a classification of security that points to the vagueness that has come to typify neo-idealist thinking. Unsurprisingly, it has found utility with the United Nations, some small and medium global powers and a vast array of NGOs and advocacy and other groups that stand to benefit from the term's elasticity. That elasticity, it is argued is a double-edged which will spell doom for the cliché in light of the specificity of the demands of policy practitioners whose reality always calls for precise answers to pressing problems.

The chapter argues that, 'Securitization theory' further complicates the challenges of post-Cold War neo-idealism by superimposing the baggage of social conctructivist obscurantism on the already rudderless idealists who were, by now burdened enough by the crisis of lack of a mission in the wake of the demise of their cause. It is argued that 'securitization theory' probably stands out as a paradigm case of the challenges entailed by the pursuit of sophistication just for the sake of it. The major premises of Securitization Theory, namely the politicisation-securitization framework and Austin's Speech Act Theory are examined in order to demonstrate that point. It is argued that both those frameworks do not provide a robust enough ballast to enable the 'theory' to be of any theoretical or practical value.

---

[17] For details, see Figure 1 of this study (P.142).

It is further argued that that, 'Securitisation Theory' is constructed on a series of category errors all of which collectively degrade its theoretical and practical significance. The errors include first, the politicisation-securitization continuum which is based on the false assumption that security falls beyond and outside of politics, and that the two are mutually exclusive; second, is the categorisation which implies that issues of security concern are not matters of public interest and third is the error that is common to all neo-idealist thinking based on a mistaken conceptualisation of the state that seems to imply that government and wider society are extra-state entities. We argue that those false categories render 'Securitisation Theory' trivial and ill-thought-out. The reference to 'security' as a 'move' is queried especially when it is assumed by the theory goes to the extent of portraying security policy formulation essentially as an act of breaking the law.

It is argued that the most significant failing of 'Securitisation Theory' lies in its misuse of Austin's Speech Act Theory, mainly by failing to recognise that Austin's theory is not merely premised on speech as an act of making an utterance but rather, it is constructed around the use of verbs whose action function lies in their utterance. By interpreting the 'Speech Act' literally as the physical act of making an utterance, 'Securitisation Theory' goes ahead to substitute Austin's verb as the principal figure of speech for his theory with a mass noun such as is security. It is argued that this, among other theoretical errors made by the securitisation theorists reduces the worth of their framework.

1.7.3. ***Chapter Four***

Building further on the discussion on the origins of SSR as outlined in the review of the literature, Chapter Four explores the linkage between the debates on what has been framed as 'security sector governance' and 'democratic control of the armed forces' in the 1990s with the debates on civil-military relations (CMR) theory especially in the 1960s and 1970s. It is argued that SSR is a latter-day

reincarnation of earlier civil-military relations theories and further suggested that SSR is equally handicapped by the same limitations that invalidated CMR. One of these limitations is the normative bias towards liberal idealism which remains oblivious to the reality that, like any other socio-political dispensation, liberalism is a qualitative manifestation of historically specific quantitative realities which it services, and which in return give it life. The SSR debate shares the same weakness with civil-military relations in its disregard for the political realities of pre-liberal and transitional systems or political systems with a historical experience that diverges from that which shaped the evolution of the theory.

The chapter examines the extent to which the frequency of military intervention in politics of underdeveloped countries has unduly coloured common notions of civil-military relations and how in turn, those influences shaped to the framing of the SSR initiative. It is suggested that military intervention in politics may have a lot more to do with the deficiencies of the civil domain than with the assumed robustness or presumed iniquity of the armed forces. A model of civil-military relations that takes an uncharitable stance towards military can only serve as a an unwelcome distraction from the more important concern of political development. A framework of institution building that looks at the political system in its entirety is suggested as a means of freeing the debate on the relationship between the armed forces and the political system from an approach that is prone to being distracted by those structures and institutions via which the symptoms of systemic malaise are manifested.

Chapter Four further suggests that the final solution to question of praetorianism in the conflict-affected underdeveloped countries may in fact lie in strengthening and not weakening the military; and strengthening the civil sector even more, with the aim of establishing a level of equilibrium in the input and output functions of political systems of affected countries. It is argued that even where a critical threshold of political development is attained there will still be a residual level of military intervention in politics even if this does not necessarily

result in overturning the legitimately constituted political order. Accordingly, it is suggested that idealist reform initiatives that aim to totally expunge the military from politics are as equally utopian as they are counterproductive. A more nuanced understanding of some of the terms and dichotomies that structure the thinking on civil-military relations is suggested with a focus on the obfuscation of debate and avoidable utopianism that results from such terms as civilian control as contrasted with civil control; militarism as opposed to praetorianism and being partisan as opposed to being political.

1.7.4. ***Chapter Five***

Using Uganda as a micro case study, Chapter Five examines the linkage between Disarmament, Demobilisation and Re-integration (DDR) and SSR programming to explore the actual extent to which SSR programming can build on the successful implementation of DDR programmes in whatever sense that success can be measured. It is argued that the realisation of synergies between DDR and SSR is often rendered questionable by the lack of clarity on what DDR actually entails and whether indeed its sanguine depiction in the academic and policy literature accurately mirrors its implementation. The part of the study examines the case of Uganda, a country whose armed forces have supposedly undergone both DDR and SSR. Uganda's experience in managing armed groups in the immediate aftermath of major hostilities is explored to identify the key features of the process from 1986 onward, with a particular focus on the donor-supported mass discharge of the 1990s, with the view of identifying whether as commonly suggested, that exercise was truly DDR and the implications of that for other follow-on initiatives.

It is particularly stressed that claims that Uganda undertook DDR cannot easily stand up to scrutiny. An analysis of the dynamics of the 'DDR' in Uganda is made to highlight in passing the aspects of the exercise that laid the ground for unsuccessful implementation of any future SSR. Questions are raised on whether

indeed the Ugandan process amounted to DDR in whatever sense DDR is understood. It is suggested that the country adopted a much more complex process of managing armed factions than the linearly conceived model of DDR often encountered in the 'peace building' literature and that the logic of this process put in place major obstacles for any future reform process along the lines of SSR.

1.7.5. ***Chapter Six***

Chapter Six examines the limitations of the rhetoric of four major elements that are deemed to be critical to the successful institutional reform, namely, local ownership, buy-in, political will and civil society. It is argued that, even if the four were clearly understood, the fact that the institutions targeted for SSR are the cornerstone of sovereignty tends to preclude the realisation of buy-in, ownership or political will. It is further shown that the non-inclusiveness of the processes of conception and formulation of reform policies renders the rhetoric of ownership hollow, unwholesome and condescending and furnishes the sole explanation for the much talked-about lack of political will and limited commitment. It is suggested that, the surprise with which external actors view the lack of political will and commitment in underdeveloped countries is in itself paradoxical and deserving of further investigation.

Using the example of Uganda, it is shown that an idealized notion of civil society as the magic bullet in the implementation of externally conceived reforms overlooks the serious limitations of wider society in underdeveloped countries, in its capacity to shape the public policy process. It is argued that the considerable discrepancy between the unrealistic and uninformed expectations of external actors on the one hand, and the concrete realities in the countries targeted for institutional reforms such as SSR on the other hand, accounts more than anything else, for the poor performance of reform initiatives.

1.7.6. ***Chapter Seven***

Chapter Seven uses the case of SSR to look in deeper detail at the range of critiques of public sector reforms of the 1990s by policy and academic analysts in many fields, including economics, sociology and political science. It explores the many explanations for the poor record of attempts at institutional reform in developing countries. The chapter highlights the limitations imposed by the historical record of some of the Western countries that are key promoters public policy reforms. That historical record, it is argued, impacts negatively on the credibility and moral mandate of the promoters of reform, and weighs heavily against their uptake of programmes they recommend. The example of SSR it is shown, clearly overlooks the fact that many of the countries that are now vigorously campaigning for reform were instrumental in systematically entrenching the very practices that are now closely associated with the dysfunction that the reforms are intended to remedy. It is suggested that any reference to context that disregards or discounts those historical factors only adds to the credibility questions surrounding the externally-inspired drive for reforms.

It is argued that, while the focus of SSR and any other institutional development reform initiatives is organisational development and change, there is limited evidence to show that in putting it together, any effort was ever invested in making it a beneficiary of existing knowledge of organisational science in general and more particularly, available theory on the evolution of institutions that fall under the 'security sector'. As a result, it is hampered by the dearth of a theory or a model of organisational development or change. The lack of a founding concept accounts for the haziness and lack of clarity of purpose that contributes to reform initiatives not being taken seriously by the countries where they are promoted, beyond considering them as an inconvenience to be instrumentally endured for the sake of accessing financial support.

Chapter Seven questions the judgment of external actors in their choice of one of the most sensitive arms of government and a key sovereignty domain, the armed forces, as an entry point for public sector. It is argued in acutely praetorian and divided polities like those targeted for reforms, the armed forces are always the fulcrum of the calculations of contending political groups. This makes the most highly sensitive and most closely watched player. They are the razor's edge on which balances the future survival of regimes and whole communities, or even continued existence of countries in question. This part of the study questions whether external actors whose reform initiatives target that most delicate aspect of the politics of other countries are ever mindful of the associated sensitivity, rhetoric on conflict sensitivity notwithstanding. In many of the 'post conflict countries', the cessation of hostilities is always a result of a settlement or settlements that put in consideration the ethnic composition of the armed forces particularly because most conflicts have an ethnic angle; making any intervention that will threaten to upset the closely-observed equilibrium appear at best presumptuous or ill-informed and at worst suspicious.

It is shown that, under external pressure to effect institutional reform even against what they consider to their best interests, countries adopt a set of strategies of conformity particularly when there is a prospect of being denied access to much-needed financial resources, recognition or legitimacy and in order to accommodate external scrutiny and regulation. The adoption of strategies of isomorphic conformity tends to contradict commonly held assumptions that reform is necessarily undertaken to enhance organisational efficiency or functionality as would be suggested by Weberian organisational theories, the basis of neoliberal institutional reform in underdeveloped countries particularly those that are afflicted by conflict. Instead, organizations adjust their internal and external characteristics by superficial conformity in order to conform to the expectations and 'best practices' of those that control access to the tangible and intangible resources that they desire.

Chapter Seven further shows that the adoption of externally imposed institutional reforms by way of isomorphism often runs concurrently with other strategies by dependent countries aimed at counteracting or those reforms rendering insignificant. To nullify what they consider as intrusive outside influences or interference with their sovereignty dependent governments, may delink the symbolically adopted policies and structures from internal operating processes and actual organisational practices through a process of 'decoupling' while at the same time being able to access the tangible and intangible resources they need from those external agencies and actors.

1.7.7. ***Chapter Eight***

Chapter Eight seeks to look beyond the limitations of the approaches to institutional development examined in the last chapter by delineating the substantive criteria that will for a long time bear critically on the security and stability of the less developed countries as epitomised by Sub-Saharan Africa. It examines a selection of earlier and more contemporary studies on comparative political development focusing on state making and nation building puts a spotlight on crucial dimensions of development which are often taken for granted in many developed countries, but still account for intractable instability in the less developed areas of the world, especially Sub-Saharan Africa. Many of those concerns are to do with the attainment of socio-political integration and the development of the overall capacity of states. It is argued that the pressure to increase economic output has overshadowed the need to address the severe deficiencies in polities as nations and as states. The study shows that what is presented as the 'security sector' is in real terms a false category, and is merely a sub-aspect of a broader crisis area which continues to receive only disjointed attention.

The study gives an overview of crises of identity, legitimacy, distribution, socio-political integration, participation and looks in more detail at penetration and institutionalisation as the key variables. It argues that, the more a polity successfully resolves those crises, the closer it should get to the attainment of security in a sustainable sense. An argument is made against the conception of security that underpins the SSR debate in which security defined as the state of affairs in which groups and individuals are assured of sustainable existence, is conflated with physical safety, that is, immunity from violent attack. It is argued that while physical safety may be a necessary condition for security, it is not a sufficient condition.

Closer attention is paid to institutionalisation, which the study holds out as master imperative of political development and stability. It is viewed both as an ongoing process and end state. As a process, it is the 'software' that underpins the conversion and filtration framework within the political system through which the procedures and structures for mediating the interaction between diverse social forces are given stability, coherence and value. As such, it is the process through which public interests are aggregated and the main avenue for depersonalising political action. As a stabilising factor, it constantly bridges the gap between the ever-accelerating mobilisation of new social forces into political action, and the gradual development of the mechanisms for disciplining the interaction between those social forces. Such are the conclusions that one draws particularly from the later works of Samuel Huntington on civil military relations and particularly on political development in the rapidly changing less developed countries.

It is emphasized that any policy position or school of thought that disregards the state of institutionalisation, and instead goes on to attribute the broad symptomatology of disorder, instability and military intervention in politics to the armed forces is inherently fallacious and only serves to lay the ground for instituting measures that will in the long term worsen the socio-political disequilibrium of affected polities. Military intervention in politics, it is argued, is

part of the broader crisis in the functioning of political system in which all other social and political forces intervene in politics, the military only being able to come up on top because it has more dramatic means of intervention. As many cases across the Third World show, civilian political activists have on many occasions been able to access the same instruments of violence and managed to neutralise the formal military forces. As such, seeking a solution to the chronic crises of insecurity and instability in the less developed countries from tweaking and jiggling the 'security sector' is at best diversionary.

The Epistemological Limitations of the Normative Bias of the SSR Framework

2.1 Introduction

Staking a claim to fundamentally transform the social world, whether nominally or substantially and the motivation for effecting such transformation is probably the most emphatic declaration an agent can make regarding their possession of knowledge, in the epistemological sense of 'justified true belief'. At the minimum, such an agent would be assumed to have internalised the basic attributes (in all their interdependencies) of the object of change, the trajectory of that change, its final outcome the potential for circular cumulative causation and unexpected outcomes. That has to be said about the wide-ranging initiatives that up to the early 1990s came under the heading of 'post-conflict reconstruction', and have since taken on other labels including 'post-conflict peacebuilding' and 'conflict prevention'. The emergence of the latter two terms also marked the founding of a comprehensive normative framework that centred on the promotion of peacebuilding as a field of international action, with what was from inception a limited and circular purpose, '…to identify and support structures which will tend to strengthen and solidify peace in order to avoid a relapse into conflict' (Boutros-Ghali, 1992:11).

Normative theory, '…that body of work which addresses the moral dimension of international relations and the wider question of meaning and interpretation generated by the discipline' (Brown, 1992: 3), has since emerged to furnish a conceptual prop for the policy and analytical approaches that fall under the rubric of peacebuilding, one of which SSR, the focus of this study. This chapter attempts to examine that close linkage between normative theorising and peacebuilding and in doing so, it serves three main purposes. First, it is lays out the theoretical framework and epistemological commitment of this study. This it does by going beyond the standard statements on the variables to be measured and the statistical relationships to be looked for in understanding the phenomena under investigation as ordinarily required, and critically examining the pitfalls of the normative theoretical framework which, in our view, is antithetical to the empirical approach preferred by this study. Second, and arising from the foregoing, this part of the study is intended to weaken the stranglehold that normative theorising continues to exercise over international development theory and practice. Thirdly, it is intended to address what in our view, is a shortage of sustained debate on epistemological questions as they apply to the field of security and development, a fact that accounts for prescriptive approaches of contemporary international development practice many of which have limited relevance to the realities to which they are applied.

The chapter examines the philosophical underpinnings of normative theorising, situating it within the context of the long-standing debate on the two major theories of knowledge, namely, empiricism and rationalism. On the basis of the mainly anti-empiricist and anti-positivist claims of some of its key exponents prominent among whom are Brown (1992, 2000), Frost (1983, 1996), Hutchings (2010) and Smith (1992, 1996), the rationalist roots of Normative Theory are explored to highlight its inbuilt epistemological shortcomings and their theoretical and practical implications for its utility. The much deeper debates on the theory of knowledge will largely lie beyond the scope of the issues that will concern this chapter, its main focus being only to clarify the essential outlines of the theoretical

and conceptual bias of prevailing thinking on security and development. The diverse presentations of normativity in the policy and academic literature are examined with the view of pointing out the major shortcomings of normative thinking, particularly as it is applied to development theory.

2.2 The Normative Bias of Peacebuilding: The Case of SSR

The international peacebuilding and postconflict endeavour had its foundation as 'liberal peace' with its origins as the long established tradition of Western liberal theory and practice according to which, political and economic liberalisation are antidotes for violent conflict. In pursuit of this normative agenda, several activities have been undertaken, including the promotion of human rights, democracy, administering elections, writing and rewriting constitutions, tutoring police personnel and military officers, lawyers and judges, rule of law, property rights, good governance, formulating economic policies aimed at establishing the neo-liberal economic order (Tshirgi, 2004:5; Paris, 2004:4). With a focus on Security Sector Reform, our purpose here is to explore whether the normative orientation pointed out above is a facilitating or a constraining factor in the attainment of the goals set for international peacebuilding initiatives particularly in Sub-Saharan Africa.

The United Nations applauds its role in SSR programming by noting how it '…has made significant progress in defining a normative framework and in providing technical assistance in this vital area', directly implying the setting up of 'international principles and standards for support to security sector reform' (2008). The 'source book of SSR' notes that, SSR

> [S]uggests an explicitly normative direction for the concept in the sense that reform prioritizes the provision of security within the state in a preferred way. Therefore, a normative working definition of SSR is that it concerns 'the provision of security within the state in an effective and efficient manner and in the framework of democratic civilian control' (Hadzˇic´, 2004, p. 46)

That normative slant is characteristically dual. On the one hand it is focused on recreating the institutional architecture and political culture of post-conflict countries in the image of their developed counterparts mostly in the West, as noted by the Sourcebook of SSR in its observation that, '[a]t the heart of this original conception of SSR lay a set of Western liberal values concerning individualism and democracy. Implementation was understood as a process of adjusting….societies to modern norms' (Hadzˇic´, 2004, p. 12). And moreover, '…SSR contains two key normative elements. The first of these is the importance of democratization and civilian control in any process of SSR. The second is the importance of developing effectiveness and efficiency in SSR.'[18] The other side of the duality normative bias of SSR and peacebuilding is the general emphasis of terms that give it the approximation of a moral awakening. As often visible in much of the literature, the building of institutions in post-conflict settings is mostly referenced in notions that highlight value judgment, prescription and evaluation. Elsewhere return or restoration to a prior standard or one that is thought to be tested by its being a successful practice in more stable settings is emphasized.

2.3 Positivism Vs Innatism and the Origins of Normative Theorizing

By being characterised by their promoters as 'normative', the principles and methods of the initiatives that come under the heading of peacebuilding are placed squarely under the spotlight and at the centre of the longstanding debate on the fundamental question of epistemology: How do we justify the knowledge that we claim to possess? This important question hinges on that great historical controversy in philosophy between the two conflicting schools of the theory of knowledge, namely, empiricism and rationalism and their divergent claims and interpretations of the sources human knowledge. The empiricists, represented typically by the British philosophers, Locke, Berkeley and Hume have always maintained that all human knowledge is derived from experience while the

[18] Ibid, p. 46

rationalists represented by continental philosophers, mainly Leibnitz and Descartes maintain that there are certain innate principles and a priori ideas that the mind possesses independent of experience.[19]

Secondarily, one has also to consider the associated question concerning the relationship between sensations and objects: whether sensations are images of objects, that is, the bodies and things that are extended in space and persist in time, or whether objects are complexes of our sensations, a claim that always comes in handy to bolster a variety of rationalist and normative assertions. In the simplest formulation, the first school, empiricism, lays claim to sense experience as the source of genuine knowledge, acquired by means of sensations that are posited (hence positivism) on the mind from the world that lies without. The rival school, rationalism, claims that ideas are inborn and are not a product of experience and are activated from their dormant state by reasoning, hence rationalism.

A closer examination of the claims commonly made by those that uphold anti-positivism betrays an acute awareness on their part of the frailties of their assumptions about the sources of human knowledge. What is particularly noticeable is an attempt by anti-positivists to refer to their position in other terms other than what sums up its real content and character. Some of those labels, common among which are metaphysics, idealism, constructivism, ideationalism, critical theory, *a priorism* and normative theory are deliberately employed to obfuscate the real character of the the thinking that is based on the innate principle. The common labels that are employed as substitutes for innatism include and of course, rationalism as already stated above. Bertrand Russell alludes to the justification for the marginalisation of innatism as the label for the anti-positivist philosophical tendency. He notes that,

---

[19] That list of the 'un-empirical' continental philosophers could be expanded to include Fichte, Schelling, Hegel and Schopenhauer, the philosophers that according to Fullerton, were '…ever ready to spread their wings and hazard the boldest of flights without a proper realization of the thinness of the atmosphere in which they must support themselves' (1920:217).

> It would certainly be absurd to suppose that there are innate principles in the sense that babies are born with a knowledge of everything which men know and which cannot be deduced from what is experienced. For this reason, the word 'innate' would not now be employed to describe our knowledge of logical principles (Russell, 1998:41).

That underlying absurdity of anti-positivism indeed creates a sense of urgency to obscure any connections with innatism opting for what Fullerton has referred to as rechristening with a taking name. In doing so, Fullerton's verdict roughly mirrors Russell's view above. He refers to '…an ancient rhetorical device to obtain sympathy for a cause in which one may happen to be interested by giving it a taking name…' further adding that, '…it is a device that is frowned upon by logic and good sense.' (1920:181).

As a philosophical position, positivism has received its most explicit expression from Auguste Comte; although it can be traced back mainly to Francis Bacon, among others, a point that John Stuart Mill alludes to in his observations on Comte's contribution to positivism. Mill notes that, the founding of positivism was '…in no way peculiar to him [Comte] but, the general property of the age…', adding further that, positivism '…is not a recent invention…but a simple adherence to the traditions of all the great scientific minds whose discoveries have made the human race what it is' (1866:8-9). Positivism then, is closely bound with the very process of the 'making' of modern mankind and has remained the leading light in 'The quest for certainty', to borrow from the title of John Dewey's Gifford lectures in which he sums up the quest for certainty as a contest between two tendencies, on the one hand, mankind's '…attempt to propitiate the powers that environ him and determine his destiny' and on the other, his will '…to invent the arts and by their means turn the powers of nature to account' (1988:3). It is, indeed within the bounds of those two tendencies that one can clearly discern the two major contending dispositions in our understanding of what is knowable and the means of attaining that knowledge.

It is when the etymology of the term 'positivism' is examined that its real significance as an approach to philosophy and social knowledge in general becomes clearer. The underlying conflict between positivism and innatism is to do with how the source of knowledge can be accounted for. As opposing approaches to understanding the sources of human knowledge, one asserts that perceptions and ideas are 'posited' onto the faculties of knowledge from without, namely, the realm of reality that resides outside the human mind. While the innatists will claim that the human mind is, right from its inception and in its first being, endowed with primary notions, the positivists' position is that knowledge is acquired from the reality that inheres outside the mind, by means of the sense apparatus through the medium of seeing, tasting, hearing, feeling and smelling.

As a framework for explaining how sentient beings come to claim the possession of knowledge, innatism, along with rationalism gets its defence from its proponents through means that at best, weakens their cause. The arguments in favour of innatism tend never to outline its merits, its explanatory coherence and its robustness as a theory of knowledge, but instead focus exclusively on discrediting positivism. With justification, the rationalists' defence of their cause through attempting to tear down positivism remains their major vulnerability, particularly when one notices the ease with of resort to the common logical fallacies in the attacks against positivism. In what tends to become an exhibition of shortage of hinterland in the antipositivist argument, one notices a movement back and forth by the rationalist, from the straw man argument, to simple argumentum ad hominem, to the slippery slope argument and to the red herring and so on, much of it underpinned by a misreading of the real basis of the dispute between positivism and innatism.

A similar approach can be observed in the way in which other antiscientific doctrines are often defended, mostly by 'name calling' the opposed doctrines. As Fullerton has warned, '… philosophers call names much as other men do, and that one should always be on one's guard', for doctrines that '…should not be allowed to posture as saints merely because they are cloaked with an ambiguous name'

(1920: 186-187). 'Idealism' and 'realism' furnish a common example that Fullerton, among others, has aptly used to illustrate the point. In literature, 'realism' as is commonly understood is '…the degradation of literature to the portrayal of what is coarse and degrading, in a coarse and offensive way.' In painting, realism means '…the laborious representation upon canvas of things from which we would gladly avert our eyes if we met them in real life', while idealism refers to the things we tend to associate with the possession of ideals, '…a regard for what is best and noblest in life and literature.'

Likewise, Humean epistemology can easily be rendered unattractive by an account of ideas that links it with 'sensation', particularly by associations with 'sensationalism' or even 'sensualism'. The defence of rationalism also takes on an ad hominem by its referring to empiricism as irrationalism, since the latter is the antonym of rationalism in ordinary language. In the epistemological and methodological sense, empiricism, that is, the theory that all knowledge that is not purely analytic derives from and rests on sense experience, is opposed to rationalism, the theory that knowledge can be gained without reference to sense experience, for example by pure reasoning. The rejection of the latter theory is anti-rationalism and it is quite obviously distinct from irrationalism, the pejorative epithet that the defenders of the innate principle often ascribe to positivism.

2.4 The 'Bunsen Burner Fallacy': Rationalism Vs Science

The catalogue of deprecatory characterisations of positivism and the empirical method in general has to be expected to grow, doing so in direct proportion to the pressure that rationalists will continue to face to distance themselves from innatism. McCarthy has claimed that positivism now '…functions more as a polemical epithet than as a designation for a distinct philosophical movement …' (1978:137); while according to Giddens, positivism '…has today become more of a term of abuse than a technical term in philosophy' (1977:3), with Williams and May describing one of its more strident expressions, logical positivism, as '…one of the heroic failures of modern philosophy' (1996:27). Some of those references are

arguably straw man arguments aimed more at concealing the flaws of the epistemological approaches that espouse the cause of the innate principle in all its guises, than at discrediting positivism. But what is even more striking anti-positivism is its aversion to positivism's close association science, particularly when the latter is construed not as it ought to be – as systematised knowledge – but in the narrower sense of the study of the natural and physical world through experimentation, observation and hypothesizing. The reductionism that inspires anti-positivists to reduce all science to one of its subcategories, namely, the study of the natural and physical world, let alone, in some instances even conflating science with technology is what for our present purposes we shall call the 'Bunsen burner fallacy'.

The 'Bunsen burner fallacy' can be considered to be a collection of defective modes of reasoning and failures of argumentation by anti-positivists, aiming to question the validity of positivism in social science inquiry, but basing on a restricted, or even one would say, a layman's conception of science. The failure of argumentation and errors associated with that reasoning fall in the category of informal fallacies, encompassing the '…introduction of irrelevancies, failure to disambiguate terms, vagueness, misplaced precision…' (Blackburn, 2005:130). The common feature of most of those claims is the direct association of the positivist methodology with the techniques of the physical sciences, hence our choice of the label.

As pointed out elsewhere, the major concern for anyone examining a theory, a theoretical formulation or concept should be the question of the minimum justification or warrant required of it to count as knowledge. In highlighting this concern, we hold that rationalism, the philosophical backbone of the predominantly normative prescriptions that feature prominently in the formulations for effecting institutional reform in the underdeveloped parts of the world falls short as an epistemological framework as can be seen from its three founding theses. First, according to rationalism, knowledge of a particular subject matter, for example, the question of the development trajectory that a certain

country should take, or the dimensions of underdevelopment obtaining in a particular region or state, is underwritten by rational insight or intuitive judgement in addition to deductive reasoning; rather than experience or empirical examination of the reality in question. Second, knowledge according to most rationalist thinking is as alluded to already, innate, being determined by natural factors to do with who ever chooses to reflect on the issue being examined and not by a particular course of experience. Third, the very concepts and ideas that make up our capacities and abilities to reflect on any one subject matter are innate.

There are obvious shortcomings – and one would even argue, dangers – with the rationalist mode of cognition of the social world as summed up that way, particularly when it is employed as the prism through which to perceive the challenges posed by underdevelopment and insecurity as normative theory supposes. Looked at in the context of the way forward for the underdeveloped societies, those claims would appear to be nothing more than an elaborate excuse by development practitioners to abstain from facing up empirically to the challenges development and security directly by analysing the realities of the affected countries on their own terms. The common practice of development orthodoxy is biased in favour of perceiving the challenges of the contemporary underdeveloped countries through the prism of prescriptions based on the achievements of the now developed countries, not even at the equivalent stage of development of the less developed countries, but in terms of the former's present day accomplishments in political and economic development.

It is for this reason that the rationalist epistemology in all its guises remains fundamentally incompatible with development theory and practice. Most significantly, this tendency is typical of the longstanding failing of scholars especially within the rationalist tradition: they do not seem to be inclined to give, as Lasswell and Kaplan would put it, '…full recognition to the existence of two distinct components in political theory — the empirical propositions of political science and the value judgments of political doctrine. …' (1950:xiii).

2.4.1. ***Assumed methodological distinctness of the social and biophysical sciences***

That the social sciences are radically different from other sciences on grounds of the distinctness of their methodology is a recurrent claim by those that question the validity of positivism and its value in the pursuit of enquiry in the human sciences. On closer examination however, it becomes evident that the thesis of methodological distinctness of the social sciences is nothing more than an attempt by anti-empiricists to advance their cause by hiding behind the conflation of methodology with methods and techniques. This is in addition to the very basic confusion in the taxonomy of knowledge; yet some are rooted in deliberate or inadvertent equivocation between differing conceptions of key categories in the philosophy of social science and general epistemology.

Several arguments have been presented in support of the methodological thesis of anti-positivism, ranging from the bold to the subtle. Of the more bold claims, one would include von Mises' assertion in which he portrays positivism as an epistemology that:

> [P]ostulates a social science which has to be built up by the experimental method as ideally applied in Newtonian physics…..to be experimental, mathematical and quantitative. Its task is to measure, because science is measurement. Every statement must be open to verification by facts. Every proposition of this positivist epistemology is wrong (1990:4).

Similarly, Frost discounts the utility of empiricism in the social sciences by referring to what he characterises as the 'positivist bias' and its reliance on '…such diverse theories of knowledge (according to which an item will not count as knowledge unless it corresponds to an item in the world), empiricist theories of science, verificationist theories of science, falsificationist theories of science' (1986:37; 1996: 17-18). Apart from the false presentation of positivism as some kind of photographic art, one notices that such claims as the foregoing rely, whether

deliberately or inadvertently, on equivocating between the different meanings of science. On the one hand, they conflate the physical and life sciences with all forms science; and on the other hand, they confuse science as a product with science as a process. While science would ordinarily be taken to mean organised and systematized knowledge, all science according to common strands of anti-positivism appears to refer to the physical and life sciences as they are commonly known, and not any other branches of systematized knowledge, be it in sociology, economics or politics. 'In other words', writes Frost in respect of one such branch of knowledge, 'there is no normal science in international relations' (Frost, 1996:17).

Such views, I would argue, arise from identifying positivism too closely with the varieties of knowledge where the positivist epistemology first made its impact in its early strivings to free human thinking from obscurantism and mysticism. Yet, indeed, it comes as no surprise that obscurantism and mysticism should still stand out as qualities – or even synonyms – of rationalism, as evidenced by the advent of what is being called constructivism. This may not be surprising given that, it is within the realm of the physical and life sciences that theological and metaphysical explanations of the world were systematically repudiated and substituted with positive ones as Comte recounts. What we seem to see then is the history of positivism seeming to tempt rationalists to conflate it (positivism) with the methods and techniques of the physical sciences, in addition to causing a mix-up of the physical sciences with science in general.[20]

Similar views by other anti-positivists reveal what appears to be a disregard for or even what could be viewed as a misapprehension of the basic tenets of the empiricist method. Echoing Frost's assertion that an item of empiricist knowledge only counts as knowledge if it represents an item in the physical world, Hollis

[20] The emergence of Logical Empiricism in the 1920s may have helped to strengthen the false perception in rationalist thinking of the equivalence of positivism with the physical sciences. Most of those who were to form the Vienna Circle that was responsible for developing and popularising Logical Empiricism were physicists and mathematicians·

observes that, empiricism is '…an epistemological doctrine to the effect that claims to knowledge of the world, including the social world, can be justified only by final reference to observation' (1996:303). This is stated in disregard of the convictions of leading empiricists who are clearly aware that, '…though all knowledge begins with experience, it by no means follows that all arises out of experience' (Kant, 2003:1).

2.4.2. ***Science as a Process vs Science as a Product***

Besides the mix up of science as systematised knowledge with some of its specific forms, anti-positivism also exhibits what has been called the 'process-product ambiguity'. This is closely related to what in ordinary discourse, has been described by Quine as 'systematic ambiguities of verbal nouns' (1960). 'Science' as a term serves well to illustrate this phenomenon, among the many terms that are often subject to inadvertent, but in the case of common arguments against positivism, deliberate equivocation. Generally, the terms that are associated with this ambiguity refer both to a process or activity as well as to its product, outcome or eventuation. They include such philosophical notions as justification, deduction, observation, evaluation, perception, validation and other general terms such as vote, protest and education. With specific reference to the 'process-product ambiguity' and its relation to the straw man arguments commonly advanced by rationalists against the use of 'scientific' methods in social inquiry, what has to be noted is that science-as-process refers not only to observation, quantification and experimentation as it is often cited by anti-positivist claims, but it also includes reasoning, reading, organising and implementing research processes and projects and other activities which when fully examined expose the futility of the anti-science stance of anti-empiricism in general.

It may not be necessary here to cite all instances in which anti-positivist arguments thrive on sliding between the two meanings of science. All we need to

note is that science-as-product is as general to all forms of systematised knowledge, as is science-as-process, especially if one does not cherry pick some of the techniques of the physical and natural sciences in a bid to defend a flawed claim. According to Rudner, science-as-product refers to '…a corpus of statements purporting to describe one or another aspect of the universe…' (1966: 8). The erection of a wall between the social and non-social science as often evident in the more vulgar anti-positivist arguments implies an indefensible duality within the realm of knowledge. This seems to be counterintuitive in relation to the logic of such a universe as aptly referred to by Rudner, and this, in our view, necessarily implies some kind of unity of whatever it is that we can come to know about that universe. This is additional to the degree to which the methodological arguments of the rationalists (which derogate from that universe, to imply a 'duoverse') may well be a case of the fallacy of composition, in which reasoning proceeds from the properties of elements or individuals in a set, to the properties of the wholes which they constitute.

Even when the problem as we lay it out above has not been an outright conflation of science (meaning systematised knowledge), with the natural sciences – quite apart from the 'concerns' of the anti-positivists regarding the encroachment by 'scientific' techniques into social inquiry – the anti-positivists might benefit from noting that their own scepticism in respect of science is a double-edged sword. Doubts have in the past been expressed in relation to the utility and feasibility of the social sciences in general, testimony of the sense of terror which 'science' as a category and as an approach to the comprehension of the world, continues to inspire in the minds of groups and individuals, who, in one way or another, have historically benefitted from mysticism and superstition. Anti-positivists have to take note that, critics of the same social science (from which natural scientists are now being elbowed off) have in the past remarked that 'social science is not really possible', and that 'too much social knowledge will endanger human freedom'.[21]

[21] Cited in Rudner, 1966, p.68.

The claim of impossibility of social science is often supported by arguments relating to the complexity human affairs, the very same arguments currently made by the rationalists to advance their anti-positivist cause. It is to that 'complexity' bogey that Rudner has responded by wondering about where we would likely end if the epistemic defeatism of rationalism was pursued to its logical conclusion. For if that were to happen it would occur to us that,

> Not only is the behaviour of human beings too complicated to be captured, or accounted for by science …but also in the realm of the non-social, the intricacies of leaf patterns, the subtle play of light and shadow in a meadow on a partly cloudy afternoon, the purling waters of a brook – in fact, all phenomena of the physical and biological realms – must forever, on account of their infinite complexity and subtlety, elude the gross, distorting, pigeon-holing of any scientific inquiry (1966: 68-69).

Were that thinking to be embraced even in its mildest form, humanity would as soon embark on the journey of climbing down the Comtean tree of the evolution of knowledge, back to its twilight when that species was perpetually trapped in beliefs and practices that only amounted to placating the natural forces instead of being a master of his own destiny. What is being highlighted here is a four-way conflation first, of methodology with techniques, second, of experimentalism with empiricism and third, of what we may call 'quantitativism' with behaviourism. That, we contend, is a mix up of means and ends, and of journeys with their destinations.

2.5 Methodology Vs Methods

In regard to methodology, developments in the philosophic orientation of the social sciences in the last few decades may have helped to accentuate the rationalist crusade against empiricism and in support of normative thinking. As Pye has observed, the period following the end of World War II witnessed an increased awareness by social scientists that their branch of inquiry was coming of

age as a science, a point that would be supported by a luminary in the anti-positivist camp. 'Perhaps social science has not yet found its Newton' writes Winch, 'but the conditions are being created in which such a genius could arise' (1990:1). Many social scientists are seeking, with justification, to distance their craft from loose and broad generalisations in favour of the merits of sophisticated techniques. Thus, '…they tended to place a high value on precision, rigor, and exactness of measurement…' (Pye, 1965:4). It might be this turn towards the search for rigour that may have disturbed the anti-positivists.

But even if that had not been the case, what remains clear is, that '…to become aware that various scientific disciplines employ differing techniques of investigation is not to become aware of anything significant about the nature of social science' (Rudner, 1966:5). In any case, the techniques of the social sciences as opposed to those of the natural sciences may differ from each other to a far less extent compared to the differences between the techniques of the many branches of the natural sciences. As Rudner observes, there are no serious grounds that can be adduced to support the claim that use of a telescope in astronomy differs in any way from the use of a one-way mirror in a small group research more than it differs from the use of a bathysphere in ichthyology (1966:5).

However, what is noticeable from all this is the absence of any claim to the effect that there are major differences in the methodologies of the social and non-social sciences. It is only certain specific approaches, such as experimentation, that continue to receive a lot of emphasis, even when it should be obvious that experimentalism is distinct from empiricism. More to this, there is also a tendency in the anti-positivist crusade to equate general approaches to social inquiry with technique and to equate techniques with methodology. It is only a major difference in methodology between approaches to inquiry that would amount to a bold statement on distinctness; and not an incidental matter of technique, because with a difference in methodology, we would be dealing with a fundamental

divergence in the logic of justification, to which we next turn our attention as one of the futility of buttressing normative theory through flippant anti-positivism.

2.5.1. ***Conflation of the context of discovery with the context of justification***

Regarding that latter point of the uniformity of the logic of justification in all the fields of philosophical endeavour, when the anti-positivists mix up methods with techniques, they further weaken their position by confusing what has been called the 'context of discovery' with the 'context of justification'.[22] The importance of the distinction between discovery and validation was initially pointed out by John Stuart Mill in his work on Comte's positivism and later developed by Reichenbach (1938). At the heart of the distinction are the two principal components of the philosophy of science, namely, the methods of investigation and the requisites of proof. While the methods of investigation include all the avenues via which the human intellect arrives at conclusions, the requisites of proof set out the methods of testing evidence. In Mill's language, the methods of investigation are the 'organon of discovery' and the requisites of proof are the 'organon of proof'. More contemporary writers such as Ayer (1925); Reichenbach (1938); Rudner (1966) and Salmon (1973) have referred to them simply as the context of discovery and the context of validation/justification. The blurring of the distinction between the context of discovery and that of justification remains one of the sources of avoidable confusion on which the claim of methodological distinctness of the social sciences is based.

Already mentioned in passing are the claims by promoters of so-called critical theory to revamp Marxism by purging it of materialism. This can only be explained by a very basic reluctance to pay attention to the very essence of

[22] Philosophers of science, among them Thomas Kuhn, Karl Polanyi and Paul Feyerabend have attempted to dismiss the significance of this distinction but it remains an important tool in understanding the broader process of justification of beliefs.

Marxism. That too is evident in the claims by the proponents of Verstehen, which is supposed to be an alternative and counterpoint to positivism. Against the aspirations of the logical empiricists for a unified science, the proponents of verstehen hold that empathetic knowledge marks them out as distinct from any form of positivism. What remains unclear, however, is the problem that the rationalists find with the position of the positivists.

The central dispute between positivism and rationalism hinges primarily on the claims advanced by the each of the two philosophies as to the ultimate source of what each of them calls knowledge: either sensory experience or from innate sources. It then becomes puzzling why the rationalists should turn the question of empathetic knowledge into a source of fundamental divergence. The fact is that possession of so-called empathetic knowledge does not tell us anything about the history of that knowledge. As such, the attempt by promoters of the variety of obscurantism called versthen to advance empathy as a front for anti-positivism is a red herring argument.

Either way, one is only left to wonder whether there is any conflict at all between positivism's wish for a unified science – even when we take its more hard-line strain, namely, logical empiricism – and the desire by the rationalists to pursue social science enquiry under the aegis of verstehen, particularly seeking to gain so-called empathetic knowledge.

2.5.2. ***Perception and interpretation***

Most rationalist criticisms of positivism tend to portray it as a passive state of mind, in which a non-thinking, 'irrationalist', knowledge-seeking agent imbibes sensory input from his surroundings. By such an account, the positivist and the empiricist is made out to be a mere receptacle for 'facts', transmitted to his consciousness through the senses. The typical output of empiricism and the positivist's epistemology then becomes a residuum, Quine's 'unvarnished news' (1960:2). Therefore, in the positivist framework, '…facts are supposed to be

available to the senses as discrete entities – i.e. individual data that can be identified independently of theory and interpretation' (Frost, 1996:27). Supposedly, 'theory and interpretation' are strictly unique to normative theorising or for that matter, any other school of thought other than positivism. That view is as surprising as it unhelpful for rationalist thinking.

That being the case, the rationalist is duty-bound to fashion new doctrines that can at last varnish the news, so to speak, and free knowledge from the disfigurement to which it has been condemned by positivism's rather perfunctory deposition. The , Frankfurt School will thus grace philosophy with, 'Critical Theory' while others will develop 'constructivism', 'interpretivism', 'reflexivity' and other recent doctrines that come under the umbrella of postmodernism. What the antagonists of positivism seem to disregard is the commonality in the predicates from which the anti-positivist doctrines are derived and the core processes of knowledge formation as it is understood within the positivist tradition.

2.5.3. ***The rationalist mix up of positivist knowledge with description***

That empiricism is all about mere description is one of the most frequently encountered rationalist claims, most commonly associated with the additional view that positivism merely mirrors sense content and does not involve in any form, any abstraction as would be necessary in the understanding of social reality. In the words of von Misses, '[t]he elements of social cognition are abstract and not reducible to any concrete images that might be apprehended by the senses' (1990:4), a view that partly echoes Frost's reference to the reluctance by empiricism to prescribe, and its focus on explanation and description. Frost writes:

> In international relations as a discipline it is generally taken for granted that the aim should be primarily descriptive and/or explanatory. The focus is firmly on explaining what happened in the past, what is happening now, and what is likely to happen in the future. Very little attention is paid to questions about what ought to be done (1996:12).

That the empiricist does not concern himself with 'what ought to be done' cannot be just a matter of paying 'very little attention' attention to that sort of activity as Frost has claimed. This is not to mention that, it is never clear at all what is meant by the expression 'what ought to be done'. Looked at closely, the expression seems to imply that, all there is to 'doing' is political appraisal, evaluation and the stating political alternatives, tasks that would be suitably handled, at best by social engineers and political philosophers, and at worst, by the opinionated and seekers of political office.

The point here is, that it is very much a question of a basic division of labour that empirical science should concern itself with 'what is' and not 'what ought to be.' There is a distinct realm of those that interpret the world, separate from that of those who change it. This finds apt expression in Dahl's observations on the predicament of the empirical scientist. According to Dahl, the empirical scientist,

> [F]inds it difficult and uncongenial to assume the historic burden of the political philosopher who attempted to determine, prescribe, elaborate, and employ ethical standards—values, to use the fashionable term—in appraising political acts and political systems. The behaviourally minded student of politics is prepared to describe values as empirical data; but, qua "scientist" he seeks to avoid prescription or inquiry into the grounds on which judgments of value can properly be made (1961:771).

But even when we put aside the question of the division of labour between, on the one hand, describing or explaining the world; and on other, tendering political alternatives, the rationalists still remain faced with a major challenge. By making it appear as if empiricism and empiricist knowledge is all about description, they (rationalists) betray a major incomprehension of what the empiricist method really entails. This is particularly the case when we look closely at knowledge as understood by basic empiricism. When we do so, we discover that the typical anti-empiricist argument on descriptiveness disregards the distinctions between types of knowledge as clearly recognised by empiricism, namely, knowledge of truths,

knowledge by acquaintance and knowledge by description (Russell, 1998). The first form, knowledge of truths applies to knowing that something is the case. This is knowledge as opposed to error, in the sense of knowing what is true, as it applies also to beliefs and convictions, collectively called judgements. The second form, knowledge by acquaintance, applies to knowledge of things and this is to do with the sense of our knowledge of sense-data and would seem to be the interpretation into which rationalism falsely condenses all empirical knowledge by labelling it collectively as description.

However, knowledge by description is understood differently by empiricists. In fact, what the rationalists seem to be calling description and knowledge deriving therefrom is, in the real sense, knowledge by acquaintance, that is, '...anything of which we are directly aware, without the intermediary of any process of inference or any knowledge of truths' (Russell, 1998:25). Contrary to the rationalist view of empiricism, one can possess a true judgement without acquaintance; and that is the case in which reference is made to knowledge by description in the empiricist sense, contrary to the propensity for description, often attributed to empiricism and positivism. Nor should rationalism take it that by acquaintance, empiricism is referring exclusively to being aware of objects with which we are in physical contact. Amongst the 'things' that we get acquainted with are sense data, let alone knowledge about the sense data themselves and knowledge about the past. These are subsumed under knowledge of abstract ideas or universals, elements which in rationalist thinking, specifically to von Mises' view on the incompatibility of empiricism with abstraction, would be considered outside the scope of empiricism. Similarly, Frost holds that, according to objectivist theories of knowledge, '…an item will not count as a piece of knowledge unless it corresponds to an item in the world…' (1996:17). That view is not supported by forms of acquaintance that do not involve physical contact with objects of perception, among which are included, acquaintance by memory, acquaintance by introspection, and acquaintance to the contents of our minds, or self-consciousness. As Code has correctly observed, '…objectivity requires taking subjectivity into account' (1991:31).

It should not be understood that the anti-positivist habit of deriding descriptivism is anything that should elicit penitence even from the least committed empiricist. In any case, as argued above, reducing empiricism to mere description only serves to betray a total disregard by the rationalist for what empiricism really entails, let alone demonstrating a lack of awareness that, description by and of itself, remains a key aspect of our claim to being a language bearing and knowledge producing species. Ayer sheds light on this point in his succinct observation that,

> The fact is that one cannot in language point to an object without describing it. If a sentence is to express a proposition, it cannot merely name a situation; it must say something about it. And in describing a situation, one is not merely 'registering' a sense-content; one is classifying it in some way or other, and this means going beyond what is immediately given (1958:91).

It is actually impossible to record what is immediately experienced without making reference to anything else beyond that experience. Therefore, persistent reference to positivism, or for that matter, any other epistemology as mere description would erase from human language the notion of conception and of concepts, yet as should be known, our awareness of universals is what is called conceiving; and a universal of which we have gained awareness is how a concept has come to be known.

2.5.4. ***Rationalist conflation of Prior impressions with innate ideas***

One of the most commonly encountered anti-positivist claims takes issue with what is referred to by its exponents as the theory-laden quality of observation. That observation is theory-laden has indeed become a central question of philosophy of science and epistemology, but of primary concern here is the use to which the claim as to the 'theory-ladenness' of observations is advanced as grounds for invalidating empiricism and the positivist method by those who uphold the innate

principle in all its guises. Theory-ladenness as an aspect of anti-empiricism sums up the view that sensory experience, observational statements/reports and empirical data are permeated with theoretical preconceptions and prejudices. As such, any claim by empiricists as to objectivity of their approach to understanding the social world is invalid. According to this view, in as far as observation is taken to be the starting point of the positivist approach it cannot prove the importance of experience in the formation of ideas since observations are not neutral adjudicators in theory testing. According to Hanson, '[t]here is a sense, then, in which seeing is a 'theory-laden' undertaking. Observation of x is shaped by prior knowledge of x' (1958:19).

Even if Einstein was to give credence to the thinking behind his oft-quoted statement that '[w]hether you can observe a thing or not depends on the theory which you use. It is the theory which decides what can be observed'[23], he is also known to have later yielded to the demands of empiricism and observed that, '[a] man should look for what is, and not for what he thinks should be.'[24] Nevertheless, the recurrent references to theory-ladnness of observations in support of innateness and normativity can only be a diversionary argument in view of the fact that the pre-existence of one theory prior to carrying out an observation, or in advance of the formulation of a secondary theory does not establish in any way or sense that the prior theory or advance knowledge is innate.

The critique of the reliance of empiricism on observation is probably one of the most frequently encountered contentions against the empiricist method and has varying strands two of which require highlighting. First is the Popperian critique that does not deny observation per se as part of the investigative process but subordinates it to hypothesis, second is the critique advanced mainly by the so-called post positivists and normative theorists that single out observation as the Achilles heel of empiricism. Of the luminaries of the philosophy of science, none

---

[23] Quoted by Heisenberger, p.77

[24] Quoted by Michelmore, p.20

has been referred to more than Karl Popper in support of the putatively anti-positivist argument by him that the making of observations is driven by theoretical frameworks. Popper has observed that,

> Sense-data, untheoretical items of observation, simply do not exist. For we always operate with theories, some of which are even incorporated in our physiology….This is one of the many reasons why the idea of completely untheoretical, and hence incorrigible, sense-data is mistaken. We can never free observation from the theoretical elements of interpretation (1968: 163).

That assertion is was re-echoed by another one expressing the view that science does not proceed from observation to theory, this time by making recourse to what can be fairly termed as *reductio ad absurdum*. In a commonly-cited passage, he has noted that, '…the belief that we can start with pure observations alone, without anything in the nature of a theory, is absurd' (1969:46). He elaborates by noting that,

> Twenty-five years ago I tried to bring home the same point to a group of physics students in Vienna by beginning a lecture with the following instructions: "Take pencil and paper; carefully observe, and write down what you have observed!" They asked, of course, what I wanted them to observe. Clearly the instruction, "Observe!" is absurd . . . Observation is always selective. It needs a chosen object, a definite task, an interest, a point of view, a problem. And its description presupposes a descriptive language, with property words; it presupposes similarity and classification, which in its turn presupposes interests, points of view, and problems.[25]

An initial criticism of Popper's way of putting the problem as he does above would be purely on linguistic grounds, a criticism that could even have been advanced by any those students, requiring Popper to justify the literal significance of his instructions. At the very minimum, a sentence conveying any sort of instruction, question, exclamation or declaration would have to be compliant with the basics of

[25] Ibid.

linguistic structure. Popper's famous instruction to his students would fall under the category of sentences called imperatives, and like all other sentences, it should have had to embody not only just a predicate (observe), but also a subject. A chain of words lacking a subject or predicate or both is not a proposition and is in ordinary terms, not even absurd, as Popper describes the instruction to his students, but nonsensical. That it is nonsensical cannot be blamed on any one subject or predicate of a sentence or an apology thereof, as Popper attempts to do with 'observation'. If 'observe' is substituted with any other predicate, such as 'eat', 'touch' or 'give', Popper's instruction will still remain literally insignificant. Anorexics would not do any justice to their cause if they launched a campaign against eating, mirroring Popper's instruction and requiring their prospective proselytes to, 'Take knife and fork; carefully eat, and swallow what you have eaten!' If that instruction sounds absurd, it is not because of anything to do with the verb 'eat', but it is because of the choice by the speaker to utter an imperative sentence that makes no sense. The 'selectivity' which Popper attributes to observation is not peculiar to observation, being rather an intrinsic characteristic of all predicates. This point may sound inconsequential but it is important to highlight it given the trivialness that seems to characterise anti-positivism, but more so, the recurrence of Popper's argument against observation in metaphysical and rationalist literature.

Although Popper was only objecting to, or suggesting an alternative to the usual three-step scientific procedure of observation, hypothesis induction and hypothesis confirmation, his assertion that science does not begin with observation seems to have been construed, and indeed, to have been embraced as a repudiation of empiricism by those opposed to the positivist method. Other than beginning with observation, Popper thought that the process of scientific investigation begins with a hypothesis. Normative theorists, among other rationalists seem to base on the first assertion to discount the significance of sense experience and on the second to give credence to the innate principle and that of *a priori* knowledge; and on both, even Popper would never agree with them, much

as they would be inclined to cite the instruction to his students. Indeed, scientific investigation begins with a hypothesis. The epistemological question however is: Where does the hypothesis come from? Without fearing that we may risk drifting into an infinite regress, we can assert that hypothesis originates from guesses we make about a puzzling aspect of our observations of the social and biophysical world (conjectures); or doubts we raise about certain claims and propositions (refutations). The evidence of that purely empirical process of conjectures and refutations is Popper's own work, *Conjectures and Refutations* which we quote in the foregoing passages.

One cannot doubt that Popper did not intend to question the significance of sense experience. However, it has to be pointed out that by prioritizing hypothesis formation over observation in the investigative process he was scaling the epistemological tree from mid trunk. Popper's assertion that the starting point for scientific investigation is hypothesis formation raises two related questions, the first to do with what is meant by a hypothesis; the second, to do with where it is that investigators derive their hypotheses from. From whatever angle one may look at hypotheses, there will always be prior observation as their basis. Bailey suggests a number of sources or inspirations of hypotheses (1987:42-3, 51-8). Investigators may observe evidence in their daily lives or in the course of research and data analysis, or even in the process of reviewing past research or formal theories. The evidence may suggest that certain observed behaviours, events and phenomena are related requiring investigators to formulate tentative explanations. A hypothesis then becomes a provisional or proposed explanation for observations that cannot be supported by existing theories; or in the words of Kerlinger, it is a '…conjectural statement of the relation between two or more variables' (1986:17). So, the assertion by Popper that the scientific process begins not from observation but from hypothesis is a self-negating argument. It has to count little in affecting the integrity of positivism so much so that anti-positivists should not hope to draw on it to bolster their position.

It is common also for anti-empiricists to cite the doubts that have been expressed by philosophers of science such as Kuhn, Hanson and Feyerabend regarding the objectivity of observational evidence, particularly in view of the influence of the biases imposed by the observers' 'paradigms' and their other theoretical commitments. This too cannot help to advance the rationalist cause. The dispute between the innatist and the positivist schools of thought is not one about the subjectivity or objectivity of the claims advanced by either school, for, the latter qualities are secondary to the manner in which the impressions that constitute the basis for knowledge were obtained in the first place. The important poit that anti-empiricists need to keep in mind the priority (or 'priorness') of impression (or idea, or proposition, or observation) X over impression Y does not suggest that X is innate. That priority is more a matter of the history than epistemology.

2.6 Reductionism and Dogmatism of 'Ought' in Normative Theory

In spite of the lack of clarity as to its actual meaning, what is being called Normative Theory has since the early 1990s gained prominence in the field of International Relations as a key philosophical defence for the initiatives that aim at ensuring that liberal values can gain global reach. At the heart of the notion of normativity lies what Mackie has described as '…a relatively weak auxiliary' (1977:64), namely, 'ought'; weak in comparison with others such as 'must' or 'shall' which give clearer purpose, but strong enough to arm its users with sufficient scope for the kind of conceptual elusiveness that would appear to be a requisite for metaphysical argumentation. While normativity stands out as the stamp of quality for the neoliberal development agenda, 'oughtness' represents the free pass of every prescription that constitutes that agenda. In order to expose the limitations of that theoretical orientation, it is necessary to lay bare the shortcomings and dogmatism of the 'ought' around which normative prescriptions are erected.

To further highlight the challenge that rationalism will continue to face in its attempts to dissociate itself from the innate principle, we explore briefly the notion of 'oughtness' – if it may called so – as it has been presented in some of the leading writings on normative theory, particularly those by Frost (1996, 1983). To borrow from Baginni and Fosl in their characterisation of reductionism, what is whole, complex, sophisticated and nuanced has been broken down into something that is simplistic, sterile and empty (2010:62). It is from the etymology of the adjective, 'normative' that one can trace that reductionism. 'Normative' derives from the Latin word, 'norma', or the carpenter's square. When adapted to and contextualized in the social sciences refers to anything that pertains to a standard, a model or ideal, and in most instances, a typical or preferable one. Setting standards has now come to carry different meanings to different categories of people depending on the purposes intended by whoever seeks to employ the term. What cannot be doubted is the sense in which it is being turned into a cliché. To some it simply refers to the setting of standards of conduct, or norms, while others interpret it as the state of being normal in contrast to being abnormal, while to those specialising in ethics, it refers to behaving not according to standards in general, but according to morally prescribed standards. The latter notion is what one detects in some of the recent writings on international ethics and is one that we find problematic particularly when it is applied to the field of development. As stated elsewhere, that interpretation of normativity turns underdevelopment and its numerous manifestations not only into a deviation from or falling short of a perceived or set standard, but also portrays it as a manifestation of immorality. It is this notion of normativity that seems to underpin institutional reform as it is referred to in SSR.

To illustrate the point further, we refer to Frost's notion of the normative, i.e., conformity to moral standards, based on upholding one's obligations by doing what one 'ought' to do according to 'settled norms'. Frost's interpretation of normative standards and his notion of 'oughtness' turns all the general forms of obligations that agents owe each other into moral obligations. What we see then

is a double conflation: Normativity is conflated with the setting of moral standards, while all obligations are turned not into those of a moral type. Frost's interpretation goes further by turning into a moral dilemma all scenarios requiring an agent to make choices or to make decisions on a course of action, to such an extent that the case for normative theory ends up looking contrived even in the most ordinary of instances. Accordingly, even where the demands on an actor would take the form of 'has to', 'should' 'shall, 'must, 'required to', 'is due to' or 'is to', all those forms are turned into 'ought to'. While the latter is used in reference to moral obligations that are the intended subject of most studies of normative theory, the former are employed in relation to institutional obligations, meaning '…those obligations that are created in the performing of an institutional act' (Cameron, 1971:309). There should therefore be no justification to mistake one for the other.

Moreover, the requirements placed on an agent by an 'ought to' imperative are not as straight forward as Frost has presented them in his case for normative theory. Ordinarily, 'ought-to' requirements break down into the moral, the prudential and the instrumental. The latter form, which as Cameron demonstrates, is essentially an 'ought-as-a-means-to-a-desired' form needs further emphasis given that according to Frost's case for normative theory, it appears that deciding 'the right thing to do' and making the choice of suitable technical means to policy ends are mutually exclusive on moral grounds (1996:11).

What should be emphasized however is, that the argument for normative theory seems to subsume the prudential and instrumental instances of 'ought-to' scenarios under the moral one, a case of lack of nuance that goes a long way to severely undermine efforts for the promotion of normative theory. This is important for us especially in light of the predicament of underdeveloped societies and that is why we invest some effort here to delve into the philosophical and linguistic detail of the terms that are used to buttress an epistemology that has a direct bearing on our thinking about security and development, let alone the major implications for security in the practical sense. If Frost's interpretation of

normativity is made part of the practice of international relations, it will only become a source of severe insecurity not only for the less developed societies, but also for those societies which for reasons other than underdevelopment will seem not to be complying with the standards or 'practices' defined by international actors such as those that are already referring to themselves as 'normative powers'. Normativity as is it is being presented in 'normative theory' and as it is being referred to in such initiatives as SSR seems to turn every instance of non-compliance and any instance of falling short of expectations or non-conformity to certain standards and prescriptions for any reason whatsoever, into unethical conduct. That in our view amounts to nothing less than 'normative fundamentalism'.

2.6.1. ***Normative blinkers Vs the linguistic versatility of 'oughtness'***

Moreover, the attempt to craft a case for the relevance of 'normative theory' basing on the supposed moral obligation of an agent as to what they ought to do, has disregarded important linguistic attributes, meanings and contexts of oughtness. Two instances can be cited. The first of these has been pointed out by Chrisman in his observation that 'ought to' statements that are commonly encountered in daily life are inherently ambiguous. They carry both a normative (or deontic) as well as an epistemic meaning (2012:307-308). The deontic meaning that all forms of the 'ought' auxilliary have taken on within the prevailing formulation of normative theory covers the strictly moral interpretation relating to duty or obligation. The epistemic interpretation which tends to be unselectively subsumed under the former interpretation covers cases of possibility, necessity and certainty, and at times, advice. For example, a statement such as, 'humanity ought to sympathise with Somalia' might mean that humanity is 'obliged' to sympathise with Somalia, this being the ethical interpretation. It may also carry an epistemic interpretation to the effect that humanity is 'likely' to sympathise with Somalia, referring to a mere possibility, but implying no obligation. The epistemic

form refers to our level of confidence in, or the degree to which we believe in the knowledge that forms the basis of whatever proposition is under examination. As Mackie observes, '…epistemic ought-statements refer to what are or were the reasons for expecting such-and-such an outcome' (1977:74).

The second derives from the fact that the deontic ought is itself not as straight forward as the literature on normative theory tends to put it, for, while what is emphasised is its moral content, there are, as Chrisman shows, other senses of the normative ought, including the legal, teleological and the bouletic forms,[26] all related to the linguistic use of ought as a modal auxiliary to express necessity or possibility, but not moral obligation as seems to be assumed in much of the literature on ethics.

On the question of obligations in general, further reference can be made normative theory as it has been elaborately presented by Frost (1983, 1996) which, even on superficial examination seems not to give recognition to the distinct forms of obligations. By taking all obligations to be 'ought-to' obligations, Frost reduces into a moral dilemma every situation in which an agent has to make a choice or select a course of action as we point out above. This could also be extended to other situations such as living up to some expectation, bidding at an auction, promising, engaging in an institutional activity such as a game or a conversation or even making a simple decision. By turning every question related to what one can do into an 'ought to', the presentation of the common case for normative theory appears to turn every matter one is faced with in life into a moral imperative. In our view, this oversimplification of the complex realities and contexts in which agents have to make choices easily turns 'ought-to' into a dogma which, as Cameron has noted, may easily '…lead us to beg important questions by unconsciously reading a seriousness, and perhaps even a moral force, into institutional obligations' (1971:312).

---

[26] Ibid, p.308.

2.7 Normative Assumptions and the Problem of Induction

McIntyre has observed that, '…there are certain features of human life which are necessarily or almost inevitably the same in all societies and…there are certain evaluative truths which cannot be escaped' (1967:95). But he further cautions that, '…this kind of argument might be quite wrongly held to provide us with a kind of transcendental deduction of norms for all times and all places…'[27] That latter caution by McIntyre is instructive for anyone who may wish to question the validity of the all-too-common tendency by some analysts and commentators in the field of international relations and strategic studies to cast their views, arguments and propositions using the framework – in as far as one can talk of one – of what we have identified already as 'normative theory'. Looked at closely, those norms present us with two major epistemological problems and one minor one.

From the epistemological angle, it is important for us to establish the essential nature of normative statements as we see them being employed in ethical analysis, and specifically for this study, the manner in which they are put to use especially by global northern institutions and governments, in framing the proposals and initiatives that underpin the prescriptions for social and institutional change in the less developed and conflict-afflicted areas of the world. It is therefore central to our inquiry to try to understand the sort of propositions we are expressing when we make normative statements. The assumption of course, is that normative statements are actually genuine and verifiable propositions bearing in mind that '[t]he meaning of a proposition is the method of its verification' (Schlick, 1936: 341). Whether they really are is a matter that we shall seek to examine.

We adopt Hume's binary classification of genuine propositions, namely, those that are to do with 'relations of ideas' and those that concern 'matters of fact'. Basing on that classification, we shall subject normative statements to close scrutiny with the view of establishing whether they are genuine propositions or

27 Ibid

whether they are utterances that hold no literal significance. While relations of ideas as identified by Hume are *a priori* propositions, normally to be encountered in logic and pure mathematics, matters of fact are *a posteriori* propositions or hypotheses relating to observable facts. By their nature, and as common sense would show, matters of fact are always hypothetical, a quality that implies that, they can be probable but never certain. This distinction is crucial for our examination of the statements made by proponents of normative thinking, or as we generally refer to them here, rationalists. The crucial point here is that, by continuing to dissociate their views and beliefs from any form of empiricism normative theorists directly imply that their statements are *a priori* propositions, such as those we encounter in logic and mathematics. If we successfully demonstrate that normative statements cannot be possibly be *a priori* then we shall be left with the option of considering them to either be empirical assertions but masquerading as normative principles or we shall dismiss them as metaphysical assertions, thereby qualifying them to be nothing more than nonsense, and as epistemologically inconsequential.

2.7.1. ***The impossibility of normative judgments being a priori***

Our first task should be to establish whether normative claims as we commonly encounter them qualify, as their exponents intend them, to be *a priori*, in the same sense as the truths of logic and mathematics. In performing this task, we put to use the simple tool that has come to be called 'Hume's fork', an epistemological aid that identifies propositions as either analytic or synthetic. For our present purposes we shall refer to the two classes of propositions as the *a priori* and *a posteriori* respectively. In implying even remotely, that normative statements are non-empirical and therefore*, a priori*, their exponents seem to suggest that they are tautologies, that is propositions that are '…true solely in virtue of the meaning of [their] constituent symbols, and cannot therefore be either confirmed or refuted by any fact of experience' (Ayer, 1958:7). If they should be understood as such,

that makes them analytic judgments, a suggestion that we contest, basing on Kant's familiar definition of an analytic proposition as one in which '…the predicate B belongs to the subject A as something which is contained covertly in the conception of A' (2003:7). Put differently, in analytic propositions, the idea carried by the verb is organic to the conception of the noun, compared to the synthetic propositions in which the idea of the verb lies outside, though in connection with the conception of the subject.[28]

Thus, the nature of analytic judgements is such that they never state anything new – hence the common reference to their being tautological – but only decompose the subject into its constituent concepts.[29] Ayer's example of a typical analytic statement is 'every oculist is an eye doctor', similar to Kant's 'all bodies are extended'. When we look closely at Kant's example, it is clear that the predicate of 'extension' can be directly obtained from the concept of 'body'. The same goes for a statement like, 'a bachelor is an unmarried man', in which, once one is equipped with the knowledge of what a bachelor is, it becomes unnecessary to resort to experience or observation to confirm what the predicate is stating. This has serious implications for the acceptability normative statements of any sort. When normative theorists and other rationalists assert that their methods are opposed to empiricism; and that their propositions are not empirical, they are at the same time suggesting that, in the epistemological sense their judgments and statements are *a priori*, and by implication, analytic. However, as outlined above, the derivation and structure of normative statements as we commonly encounter them is quite unlike that of analytic propositions. As already shown, analytic propositions require no resort to the testimony of empirical validation or to matters of fact for their verification. If we establish that normative statements are non-

---

[28] For obvious reasons, Kant also calls analytic and synthetic statements 'explicative' and 'argumentative' respectively.

[29] We are using 'tautology' not as it is commonly used as a pejorative term referring to self-repetition, but in the sense in which it is employed in logic, to refer to a statement that will turn out to be true in every circumstance, i.e., a necessary truth.

analytic – and by simple implication, synthetic – then we shall be left with no other option than to conclude that there exist no epistemological grounds for uttering such statements. To illustrate this point, one can refer to Frost's 'settled norms' in international relations (and in International Relations) given that they are held to be based on a firm anti-empiricist argument;[30] but more importantly, that they stand out as one of the most elaborate presentation of the case for normative theorising that one can encounter in the literature.

On closer examination, most of Frost's 'settled norms' appear not to be norms at all, but rather, devices for enforcing conformity to certain norms, outcomes of compliance to certain norms, or even ideals from which certain guiding principles are derivable. For example International Law 'norm' of economic sanctions stands out as a device for enforcing compliance to specified norms and international laws. Sanctions are '[p]unitive diplomatic, economic and social actions taken by the international community against a state that has violated international law' (McLean and MacMillan, 1996). In so far as laws are essentially codifications of prevailing norms, it is within the body of international laws that we would search for norms, but not from sanctions that have been imposed on violators. But our main question relates to the epistemological status of 'settled norms' especially given that they are being presented as the culmination of an elaborate anti-empiricist argument. Each of the statements expressing norms as goods is in the first place (and by being a good) a clear reflection of the '…supposed final end at which action must aim…'.(Blackburn, 1994). In our view, an 'aim' is nothing but a purely empirical matter. Moreover, the statements sum up desires that have not obtained in all time and do not obtain in all places, but have been moulded by certain historically specific empirical factors. Indeed, it is unlikely that such key terms in the 'settled norms' as 'sovereignty' defined in the Westphalian (or in any other sense), or 'patriotism' will remain unchanged by the ever accelerating globalisation, assuming that they can be accurately characterised

[30] See especially Frost (1996), p.106-112.

as norms, and not as values, probably a more apt term. Taking a phenomenon like patriotism to be a norm of international relations raises other questions related to the extent to which a purely intrastate and personal sentiment would be classified as an interstate norm, probably giving credence to Carr's point that, '…writers on international morality are not agreed among themselves – and are not always clear in their own minds – whether the morality which they wish to discuss is the morality of the states or the morality of individuals' (1964:146). In the most general sense, 'norms' are standards that govern behaviour defined in terms of rights and obligations and there is nothing supra-empirical or transcendental about the meaning and content of the latter two terms. Even when looked at in those basic conceptions, it is clear that norm setting is an activity that sits squarely within the empirical world of social systems, structured by '…the effects of properties of the system on the constraints or orientations of actors; the actions of actors who are within the system; and the combination or interaction of those actions, bringing about system behaviour' (Coleman, 1990:27).

But even if one discounted all those misgivings and insisted that 'Patriotism is a good' as Frost makes it to be, a statement such as that one would still be devoid of any logical equivalence with what would be considered as a typical tautology, or analytical statement in the sense of 'All bodies are extended',[31] as the archetypal construction of an *a priori* or analytic statement would be expected to stand. The concept of 'a good' is not automatically implied in the mere act of thinking about patriotism, particularly when one reflects on the findings of the Correlates of War Project which demonstrate a clear link between the propensity for war and patriotism. Clearly, normative propositions are not a priori or analytic statements. What we are left to establish is whether, contrary to their exponents' assertions, they are not empirical statements and what that implies for the whole project of normative theorising.

---

[31] Cited in Ayer, 1928, p.77.

2.7.2. ***Normative theorising: Metaphysics or positivism via the backdoor?***

What we therefore understand by the foregoing is, that if so-called normative statements and prescriptions are to continue to subsist as literally significant propositions, their exponents have to acknowledge once for all that their utterances are nothing but synthetic, or empirical judgments. By the very nature of synthetic propositions, the idea of the predicate lies outside the conception of the subject, as in Kant's example of 'all bodies are heavy', therefore making them a *posteriori*, or judgements of experience. If it be denied that normative claims are empirical, and yet also as we have demonstrated, they cannot possibly be a priori, then our only resort is to class them (normative claims) as metaphysical utterances and with that, we would have dealt with them conclusively by classing them as nonsense. Normative claims – in as far as they are portrayed by their exponents as antithetical to matters of fact and empirical truths – are metaphysical statements. By being metaphysical, they suffer from the failings of any claim to the effect that that philosophy can ever possibly afford us knowledge of a reality transcending the world of science and common sense (Ayer, 1925:33).

2.7.3. ***Normativity, ontophobia and the principle of induction***

Thus far, we can confidently affirm that normative claims cannot be *a priori* propositions in any sense of the term, the status that their anti-empiricist exponents would wish to ascribe to them probably to imbue them with a halo of sanctity and veneration that would enhance their acceptability and probably also immunise them against the strict requirement of verifiability. If they are not a priori then we are only left to deduce that they are empirical facts, an unhelpful alternative for the normative cause particularly in the face of two challenges. The first challenge arises from the avowed anti-empiricism of normative thinking. The concession that normative claims are essentially positive propositions – if only to furnish them with a bit of mileage – would make normative theorists automatically

lose all credibility. Yet the challenge that rationalists in general will continue to face is directly related to the source of the raw material of their rationalist activity. When that question is finally settled, the predicament of rationalism will be even starker than ever, and will probably be summed up best by Wittgenstein observation that, '…in order to be able to draw a limit to thought, we should have to find both sides of the limit thinkable…' (1974:3), our preferred reference being to positivist thought. Ayer quotes Bradley as having noted that, the man who is ready to prove that metaphysics is impossible is a brother metaphysician with a rival theory of his own (1958:34). This equally applies to the normative theorist wishing to discount positivism. As the real content of normative claims demonstrates, the man who is ready to prove that positivism is impossible is a brother positivist with a rival theory of his own, but quietly handicapped by an antipathy for reality, what Ortega y Gasset aptly dubbed 'ontophobia'.

The second challenge to normative thinking arises from the principle of induction. This, in our view, is fatal to the credibility of much of what is presented as normative development theory, involving the direct transfer of the historically-contingent experiences of one culture to another as seems to be the common practice. Briefly stated, induction is the process of reasoning that moves from premises about certain observations of matters of fact or from certain instances, to an inference or conclusion which is stated as a general principle. Conclusions derived from that process of reasoning are essentially contingent truths, knowledge of which is attained a posteriori and that being the case, makes such truths only hypothetical. One can take the example of Max Weber's conclusions on the relationship between the development of capitalism and the existing spiritual order. Drawing on the historical experiences of England and Germany, Weber went on to conclude that capitalism had a chance in India where Hinduism was practiced but not in other parts of Asia that were Confucian. According to Weber, Asian religions did not provide 'the incorporation of the acquisitive drive in a this-worldly ethic of conduct.' Regarding Confucianism he thought that it is a 'this-worldly' religion, but not one which embodies ascetic values, compared to the

Calvinist ethic. According to Giddens' summary of Weber's view, Calvinism accounted for a kind of activism in the:

> [B]eliever's approach to worldly affairs, a drive to mastery in a quest for virtue in the eyes of God, that are altogether lacking in Confucianism. Confucian values do not promote such a rational instrumentalism, nor do they sanctify the transcendence of mundane affairs in the manner of Hinduism; instead they set as an ideal the harmonious adjustment of the individual to the established order of things. The religiously cultivated man is one who makes his behaviour coherent with the intrinsic harmony of the cosmos. An ethic which stresses rational adjustment to the world 'as it is' could not have generated a moral dynamism in economic activity comparable to that characteristic of the spirit of European capitalism (1992:xv).

Without knowledge of, or before the development experience of the Confucian countries of the Pacific rim, Weber's observations could easily pass as 'settled norms' and the development orthodoxy to be derived from that norm would probably have been 'protestantisation before capitalism'. But as Weber himself would have learnt today, no matter how frequently capitalism and Protestantism were found to be associated in the past, there could be no logical guarantee that in future cases of capitalist development, that association would continue to hold. Current realities in Hindu India compared with 'Confucian' China or South Korea stand out as an indictment against Weber's inductive propositions, even if one casts aside the less unfavourable assessment of Hinduism. What has to be noted, indeed is that, what we often encounter as normative principles are empirical lessons derived directly from a restricted segment of the historical experience particularly of the developed western countries, lessons that certain universalising activists are interested in promoting. To put it in the words that Mervyn Frost has attributed to the critics of so-called normative theory, 'Theories about the way the world ought to be are produced by the world as it is. They are epiphenomena of the way the world is. They cannot guide the world, but rather serve as post hoc rationalisations' (1996:42).

Even when normative are divested of their moralistic pretences and are acknowledged as plain empirical claims, the very act of employing lessons learnt from a particular historical experience to mechanically structure future experiences elsewhere in a different era is problematic. Of necessity, doing so turns those experiences into immutable laws and principles and bestows on them such logical necessity and certainty as they cannot possibly be possessed of as *a posteriori* claims. By their very nature, a posteriori claims can never be as easy to logically guarantee as the normative discourse may seem to imply. By being empirical claims, they have, ultimately to be subject to the test of actual experience. The reproduction of those experiences would require that the conditions under which they were observed are replicated, a requirement that is in fact never met. Yet, even if normativist pretences were abandoned and normative theories were acknowledged as plain empirical propositions, that would not be enough to guarantee their certainty, as has been conclusively demonstrated by a wide range of empiricists, notably Hume and Ayer. Ayer has noted that,

> [N]o general proposition whose validity is subject to the test of actual experience can ever be logically certain. No matter how often it is verified in practice, there still remains the possibility that it will be confuted on some future occasion. The fact that a law has been substantiated in n–1 cases affords no logical guarantee that it will be substantiated in the nth case also, no matter how large we take n to be. And this means that no general proposition referring to a matter of fact can ever be shown to be necessarily and universally true (1958:72).

It becomes easy to understand why neoliberal development practitioners have found it urgent to want to distance their dearly-held axioms from the domain of matters of fact with the hope of turning them into transcendental truths. That way, they would be shielded from the hazards of scepticism that is the bane of all hypotheses, including what may even be called truths of science. One can add also that, the anti-science stance taken by many rationalists can be partly

explained by the determined avoidance of the tough environment in which scientific hypothesizing operates, always having to endure stringent verification.

2.7.4. ***Normative claims: genuine propositions or naturalistic fallacies?***

A further epistemological challenge to rationalism and normative theorising generally arises from the problems associated with the ought-is or fact-value gap; and with it, the likelihood that once normative statements are shown conclusively not to be a priori propositions, then, their presumed utility in directing the conduct of human affairs is at best, tantamount to the commission of the naturalistic fallacy, and at worst, a case of uttering nonsense. The core of the problem of the 'Is-ought' gap remains that a prescriptive conclusion, that is, a conclusion containing an 'ought', cannot be deduced from premises not containing an 'is' and therefore stating knowledge of matters of fact or real existence. Hume in his popular passage, observed that,

> In every system of morality, which I have hitherto met with, I have always remarked, that the author proceeds for some time in the ordinary ways of reasoning, and establishes the being of a God, or makes observations concerning human affairs; when all of a sudden I am surprised to find, that instead of the usual copulations of propositions, *is*, and *is not*, I meet with no proposition that is not connected with an *ought*, or an *ought not*. This change is imperceptible; but is however, of the last consequence. For as this *ought*, or *ought not*, expresses some new relation or affirmation, 'tis necessary that it should be observed and explained; and at the same time that a reason should be given; for what seems altogether inconceivable, how this new relation can be a deduction from others, which are entirely different from it (1978:69).

Simply put, stating what the case is says, and should say absolutely nothing about how we ought to behave in relation to it. This is the point where the 'Is-ought' problem meets with the problem of induction, particularly regarding the status of statements on matters of fact, which, as pointed out already, are always

hypothetical. This, in our view, renders any attempt to derive normative claims from what are mere contingencies fallacious.

2.8 Non-Cognitivism and the Validity of Normative Claims

As noted already, normative statements express what is right or what is wrong, desirable or undesirable in a society. They are expressions of value judgments based on a particular political, cultural or moral perspective. As conveyors of moral judgments, normative statements are thought to be cognitivist by virtue of their being employed to express the view that moral judgments are capable of being objectively true and that there is objective moral knowledge. That view is objected to by non-cognitivists. According to non-cognitivism, normative claims have no cognitive status in that they cannot be known to be either true or false being so because they do not affirm or deny that something is the case: they are 'ought' statements. When an International Development Policy practitioner observes that '…an unreformed security sector represents a decisive obstacle to the promotion of sustainable development, democracy…' (Bryden *et al.*, 2008:7), he is not pegging any attribute or property of being reformed to the state of being democratic, neither does he even, in the most basic sense give any indication of what it is to be reformed or even unreformed. All that is being conveyed here is approval of reformism, and expressing an ethical judgment that security sectors, however defined, should facilitate 'sustainable development' and democracy, and probably inviting others to share a similar view, irrespective of whether reform will have democratic or developmental outcomes or both. Similarly, when it is observed that '…there will be the need to carry out professional training for the sector, including its oversight bodies, in order to ensure that it is responsible, accountable and transparent' (Jaye, 2008:182), if one responds by noting that transparency, however defined, is not needed, or is not good, he in fact does not contradict the initial statement but merely puts across his own moral evaluation on his understanding or his opinion on transparency. Disagreements between the International Development Practitioner and his interlocutor expressing their moral

stand end up being disagreements in attitude or belief, particularly when 'transparency' is presented in gross terms, as is the case with other evaluative terms employed in the SSR debate, and indeed are the terms in which most normative statements are couched.

Yet, in all their ubiquity, the status of normative claims as propositions has been put to question particularly by the proponents of emotivism. According to Ayer moral exhortations '….are not propositions at all, but ejaculations or commands which are designed to provoke the reader to action of a certain sort' (1958:103). He goes on to note that,

> [I]n saying that a certain type of action is right or wrong I am not making any factual statement, not even a statement about my own state of mind. I am merely expressing certain moral sentiments….If a sentence makes no statement at all, there is obviously no sense in asking whether what it says is true or false.[32]

The main argument of the emotivists is that, moral language is a tool used for manipulation of behaviour partly because, '…our fellow men are conditioned to respond to words as instruments of our will' (Reichenbach, 1951: 281). Moral judgments only express feelings, emotions, attitudes, or stances, or they may be attempts to influence the attitudes and behaviour of others. A leading advocate of normative theorising unguardedly gives away the real motivation of moralist thinking when he points at the ethical as being just a gloss. Frost has observed that, '...where actors assess their own actions and those of others, they are doing more than putting an ethical gloss on the proceedings: they are determining how the action will be interpreted and responded to' (2009:92). That way, Frost sums up the kernel of the non-cognitivist claims advanced of the emotivists. The point is that ethical admonitions only serve to express opinions that state the aversions, predilections, preferences, likes and dislikes or even commands that one may wish

[32] Ibid.

to give to others. As Bertrand Russell put it, '[e]thics is the art of recommending to others what they must do to get along with ourselves.'[33] (Mortimer, 1985: 118).

In as far as most neoliberal formulations for tackling underdevelopment continue to be expressions of mere feelings and desires of the 'development partners', they are foredoomed to remain sterile, not so much because a feeling or desire says nothing about the object of proposed change, but also because, as Beardsley and Beardsley have put it, 'Expressing a feeling is not to be confused with asserting that one has it.' (1965: 530). Second, '…moral theory is cognitively empty' (McCord, 1985: 85). This cognitive emptiness or non-cognitive status of moral claims probably stands out by far, as the weakest flank of the neoliberal initiatives that constitute peacebuilding and institutional reform in countries and regions afflicted with conflict.

2.8.1. ***Cognitivist attacks against non-cognitivism***

Any discussion on the basic position of non-cognitivism in relation to normative statements is incomplete if it makes no mention of the counterattack by the cognitivists. These counterattacks include the charges of irrationalism, relativism, immorality, nihilism or amoralism and even insanity, but we pay closer attention to the charges of irrationalism and insanity.

The charge of irrationalism is probably the commonest accusation levelled against the opponents of normative theorising. It entails the committing of the double fallacies of equivocation and argumentum ad hominem. Non-cognitivism stands in opposition to value cognitivism, particularly of the intuitionist variety and given that value cognitivists are known to be rationalists, taking a stand against their views always risks being labelled as irrationalism, an equivocation between rationalism (the epistemological theory that affirms that substantive knowledge can be gained without experience, and only by reasoning) and rationalism as the

[33] Cited in Mortimer, 1985, p. 118

practice of basing one's judgments on 'good reasons', or the theory that there are objective criteria for rational choice. However, the contrary of rationalism in the first – epistemological – sense empiricism, and by being opposed to the view that values are a matter of knowledge, non-cognitivists can only possibly be referred to as anti-rationalist. Because non-cognitivists abstain from providing guidance to ultimate standards such as those that normative theorists proclaim, they are at times dismissed as 'irrationalists', for shying away from an important question. On their part, the non-cognitivists have attempted to deflect the charge of irrationalism back to the normative theorists. In Oppenheim's view, '[i]f intrinsic value judgements are but expressions of subjective tastes, feelings and preferences, then the most crucial and consequential moral decisions can only be arbitrary, capricious, and irrational' (1968:169).

The charge of insanity has been advanced by Frost in his work on normative theory, in which he refers to Bernard Williams' (1972, 17-27) demonstration of how '…a consistent amoralist individual could hardly be considered a sane man, for a consistent amoralist may pursue his own whims but his philosophy precludes him from ever criticising the behaviour of others on moral grounds' (1996:45). It would have been instructive to explore how Williams defends the charge of insanity against the non-cognitivist, as referred to by Frost but for the absence of any reference by him to amoralism and insanity in parts of his work that are cited as carrying that claim.

2.9 Sources of Normativity in International Development Policy

We have already made note of the distinguishing feature of the policy prescriptions falling under the neoliberal development agenda: Their promoters continue to ascribe to them a normative status. Noticeably, it is never clear from related policy and scholarly literature whether allocation of that status is based on a detailed consideration of what it means when a prescription, proposition or claim is described as being 'normative', leaving the way open for some to even suggest

that the label may simply one of the popular clichés of development speak.[34] A feeling that development initiatives are nothing but mere dogma stands to devalue even those initiatives that may be potentially beneficial, an outcome that may have to be blamed less on those that have been driven to cynicism by what frequently sounds like dogma, and more on those described by John Stuart Mill as,

> [A] large proportion…who have laid claim to the character of philosophic politicians, have attempted, not to ascertain universal sequences, but to frame universal precepts…one form of government, or system of laws, to fit all cases; a pretension well meriting the ridicule with which it is treated by practitioners, and wholly unsupported by the analogy of the art to which, from the nature of its subject, that of politics must be the most nearly allied (1874:607).

While the supposed end of the 'forty years detour' (Smith, 1992) of positivism continues to be emphasized and fresh arguments in support of normative approaches in the social sciences keep emerging, advocates of the normative approach have not pronounced themselves clearly or consistently as to the foundations and philosophical basis of their framework. This poses potential problems for its usefulness in scholarly debate, as well as its application in policy formulation. Indeed, questions can be raised as to whether there can be justification for referring to normativist formulations as theory, particularly when the latter is understood as 'a systematically related set of statements, including some law-like generalizations, that is empirically testable' (Rudner, 1966:10). What cannot be doubted is evidence of an attempt by the proponents of rationalism to continuously rechristen that doctrine in response to criticism from the empiricists. It seems to be important – and indeed, so it should be – for the rationalist school to distance the sphere of its intellectual endeavour from the imperfections of innatism, as well as dissociating itself from the dilemmas of metaphysics in which it remains firmly steeped. Here, we are referring to

[34] Amongst these one also finds 'capacity building', 'mainstreaming', 'good governance', 'up-scaling' and increasingly, institutional reform.

metaphysics as Fullerton has described it, as the reflective activity that does not represent '…an analysis of experience, but a groping behind the veil of phenomena for some reality not given in experience' (Fullerton, 1920:249). Attempts by rationalists to disown their founding credentials seem only to add to the conceptual haziness of the schools of thought which owe their parentage to the innate principle. As would be expected, many of the leading writers on normative approaches make mention of how the dawn of the post-Cold War era marked the end of the 'positivist bias' in International Relations. Prominent among them are Brown (1992, 2001); Cochran (1999); Smith (1992, 1996); Hollis (1996); Frost (1983, 1996), Nardin (1983) and Brown, Nardin and Rengger (2002).

According to Brown normative theory refers to '…the body of work which addresses the moral dimension of international relations….At its most basic, it addresses the ethical nature of the relations between communities/states' (1992:3). Frost, on the other hand, does not offer a definition of normative theory in as succinct terms as Brown's, instead listing what appear to be questions of an empirical nature in regard to which he remarks that, they '…are all normative in that they require of us that we make judgements about what ought to be done', adding further that, '[n]ormative questions are not answered by pointing out the way things are in the world' (1996:2); a claim to which one can legitimately respond by inquiring whether normative questions are answered by pointing out how things are not in the world, or whether indeed, they are answered by pointing out how things are in another location other than the world. The near-celebratory tone of the declaration of the passing of positivism and the coming of age of normative theory would almost make it appear as if positivism was part of the armouries of the antagonists on either side of the Iron Curtain so much so, that now that the cold war is over, '[a]ll theory in International Relations (IR) is normative theory' (Cochran 1999:1).

As shown by Evans and Newnham, 'normative theory' as it is generally understood in International Relations 'is about norms, rules, values and standards in world politics…' (1997:382). It purports to addresses matters relating to

standards of behaviour, obligations, responsibilities, rights and duties as they pertain to individuals, states and the international state system. It is claimed to be particularly directed at issues such as the moral significance of states and borders, the ethics of war and peace, the nature of human rights, the case for intervention and the requirements of international distributive justice. What is to be noted is that almost all writers on normative approaches tend to claim that accounts of the theory of international relations are either empirical or normative. As we point out later this is a false juxtaposition. The incommensurability of the two notions simply means that turning them into each other's antonym is probably intended to serve as a distraction from the pitfalls of empiricism's actual antithesis, namely rationalism. That false controversy tends to follow along the same lines as arguments in favour of normative approaches that start with a critique of the fact/value distinction but gradually turn into a debate over facts and theories, as if values and theories were interchangeable terms.

In light of such gaps that a closer examination of the literature on normative theory reveals, it is in order that a critique of a social science or policy approach that is characterised as being 'normative' explores the common sources and bases of the normative impulse. We will therefore attempt to outline some of the trains of thinking that underpin normative claims with the hope that we can come up with an argument that can bring those that have accustomed themselves to employing the 'normative' label as a stamp of quality for their frameworks, to reconsider their strategy. Our focus is on intuitionism, religious insight, speculative idealism and power differentials as sources of normativity.

2.9.1. ***Intuitionism as a Putative Source Of Normativity***

Schools of thought that stem from the rationalist tradition regard intuition in the Platonist sense as the source of all knowledge, including ideas on social norms, justice and goodness. According to this thinking, propositions in a particular field can be arrived at by what Whewell has called 'imaginary looking' (1858:140),

'creative thinking' or 'direct obtaining of the truth' or direct apprehension with no mediated or sensory input; while others may become known through secondary intuition, or deduction from other intuitions that supposedly goes beyond demonstration by rational judgment or inference. In order to be able to do that, so it is supposed, select individuals or groups are endowed with a faculty of ethical 'inner tutoring' (hence intuition), which makes the discernment of the objective truth of certain moral principles, a priori. Oppenheim, in his critical exposition on the limits of moral thinking in political philosophy has summed up the ethical theorist's understanding of intuition as '…a moral sense which is as capable of apprehending moral qualities as the five senses are in perceiving physical properties' (Oppenheim, 1968:23).

In elucidation of what is meant above by knowledge that is not mediated, Locke notes that the mind may perceive of the agreement or disagreement of two ideas immediately by themselves without intervention of any other idea or ideas, in what he calls intuitive knowledge, upon which all certainty depends.[35] It has to be noted that according to Locke, an 'idea' is '…whatsoever is the object of the understanding when a man thinks…' (1961:5), which also raises the question of how minds come to be in possession of the 'object', thus taking us back to the debate on the long-standing controversy between positivism and idealism. It also now comes back to confront the intuitionists and to confirm that their doctrine is rationalism by the backdoor.

For those who derive their normative impulse from the supposed existence of a faculty of intuition, it is a gift '…available to a small minority, and to them only after arduous training' (Oppenheim, 56:1968), and most suitably, training of a moral nature. According to that view, values and norms are objective entities that are comprehensible through insight that is rooted in morality of a select few. To Carl Friedrich,

---

[35] This as opposed to demonstrative knowledge in which the agreement or disagreement between tow ideas can only be established by means of another intermediate or intervening ideas or a proof through the process of reasoning.

> The valuer's role is to discover the value not to create it…[values] are facts in the sense of being experienced as being there. In other words, the values exist, whether there is someone to recognise them or not…An act of moral goodness is good independently of any persons present to appreciate it (62-64).

Intuition, like religious insight and idealism is generally viewed suspiciously particularly by the empiricists as mere '…labelling of the place where the philosophical understanding of the source of knowledge stops' (Blackburn, 2005:190).

2.9.2. ***Utopianism and normativity***

More than any other driver of normative thinking, utopianism or political idealism[36] – as opposed to political realism – stands out probably as one of the leading sentiments responsible for inspiring some scholars, commentators and practitioners to dispense what in their view are norms. As an approach to political thought and action, utopianism emphasizes the primacy of morality, legality and harmony of interests in determining the standards of conduct. Carr has summed it up as '…the inclination to ignore what was and what is in contemplation of what should be', in contrast with its antithesis, realism, '…the inclination to deduce what should be from what was and what is…' (1964:11). In Albert Sorel's terms, utopianism partly symbolises the undying dispute '…between those who imagine the world to suit their policy, and those who arrange their policy to suit the realities of the world' (1885:474).[37] The words of Thomas More, a leading utopian have come to best sum up the utopian sentiment. Echoing Aristotle, More ended his book by noting that '…there are many things in the commonwealth of Utopia that I rather wish, than hope, to see followed in our governments'

---

[36] A distinction needs to be made between political idealism and epistemological idealism. While the former generally refers to the prioritisation of ideals, principles, values, and goals over concrete realities, the latter is the doctrine that all existence resides in the world of ideas, i.e., it is mental.

[37] Cited in Carr, 1964, p.11

(2009:175). Examples of this kind of thinking can be found in the works of some contemporary thinkers on normative theory, mostly those with slant towards ethics. Commenting on the content of normative theory, Hutchings has observed that it means:

> [E]xamining, assessing and defending judgments about what is morally right or wrong in our globalised world. You cannot assume that the implications of ethical judgment will necessarily be easily realizable or in accord with predominant political realities. When engaging in ethical argument, you need to step back from assumptions about what actually drives political decisions and focus on what ought to be the values and principles underlying human interaction (2010:9).

Hutchings argues further that, any attempts to link policy with reality have to be fully justified. 'To the extent that you think those values and principles are related to politics' she observes, 'you need to provide an argument for why that is, or should be the case….'[38]

Carr (1964) traces the origins of contemporary utopianism to the breakup of the philosophical and religious bulwark of the mediaeval system which persisted from the passing of classical pagan culture to the dawn of the Renaissance. The main presupposition of that system was a universal moral code and with it, a political system that was based on ecclesiastical or divine authority. By this time, as Strayer observes, 'The church already had many of the attributes of the state – for example, enduring institutions – and was developing others – for example, a theory of papal sovereignty (1970:15-16). Following from that development, in much of the expanse of Western Europe ecclesiastical authority of the Papacy became a universal reality, extending over Italy, France and Spain in the south; Germany, Scandinavia and Poland further north and across the channel in Great Britain and Ireland.

The realist spirit of the renaissance swept aside the assumptions of the mediaeval universal ethic and insisted on the primacy of politics while at the same

[38] Ibid.

time relegating ethics to being one of the many instruments of politics. Thus, state authority eclipsed divine authority as the deciding factor in contexts of all matters, moral ones inclusive. In response, and in order to stave off the prospect of being rendered totally irrelevant, utopianism sought to accommodate itself with the tide of progressive thought unleashed by the Renaissance, doing so by attempting to reposition itself on a higher plane than both its predecessor (mediaeval ecclesiasticism) and its nemesis (renaissance realism), opting for a secular ethical standard based on the law of nature and individual human reason.

Yet, utopianism should not be confined merely to the capacity of an agent to indulge in the act of reasoning or imagining. What makes utopianism stand out from other forms of reason is its irrationality. That is probably where Carr's exposition fails to lay out the fundamental failing of utopianism, particularly, its inability to reconcile desire with attainability. According to that measure, Oppenheimer describes utopianism as '…advocating or trying to pursue some goal which, on the basis of the available evidence, cannot be reached by whatever means…' (1968:29).

2.9.3. ***Speculative idealism and normativity***

We justify our choice of 'speculative idealism' as a term for characterising what we consider to be one of the major sources of the normative impulse on two grounds. First, it is necessary for us to constantly to re-emphasize the point of the complex journey positivist thinking has enabled the growth human knowledge to navigate from its theological beginnings through its midlife of the metaphysical and abstract, to the scientific or positive era. Secondly, it is to point out that with each of the transitions that human knowing has had to undergo some schools of thought have tended to hold out and to maintain a commitment to world views that closely link them to earlier phases of the evolution of human knowledge in the Comtean sense. So strong is that linkage that a close examination of some schools of social thought reveals those lingering residues even in the face of those

schools' constantly changing labels. Speculative idealism, one of the key pillars of normative theorising stands out in this regard. As seen from the works of Hegel – upon whom normative thinking has tended to draw extensively – it professes to be founded upon transcendentalism, intuitive or a priori insight, particularly insight into the nature of the Divine or what Hegel himself called the 'Absolute'.

Normative theory – particularly when, for that brief moment it places aside the 'settled norms' as its foundation – is akin to Hegelianism in deriving its conclusions on social reality from a category similar to 'die wirkliche Idee' or 'the very Idea', the justification and of all knowledge according to the Hegelian system. According to Hegel's logic, everything is the Idea or the Absolute, in its moment of fulfilment as 'actual mind' with the real world only playing the transitory role of being the finite phase in the process of the fulfilment of the ultimate 'Idea' or ultimate goal. The empirical reality is finite and the Idea is infinite and transcendent, and is the determinant and motive force of human history.

To Hegel and his followers, the task of the philosopher is fourfold. First, is to shed light on the essence of the Absolute; secondly, to demonstrate the means through which the Absolute becomes evident in nature and human history; thirdly, to clarify the teleological nature of the Idea or Absolute, highlighting the end or purpose toward which it is directed and fourthly, to lay out how agents should conduct their affairs in a manner that is in accord to the teleological manifestation of the Idea. Within Hegelian schematism, the Idea lies beyond the ordinary person's comprehension and is cognizable only by a chosen few, whether a race, class or some other category of individuals, destined to shepherd everybody else to that goal. Put it in Carr's terms, the normative project is the sphere of action of '…an enlightened despotism of philosophers who alone could be expected to have the necessary reasoning power to discover the good' (Carr, 1964:24).

In one sense, normative theory harks back to, and still retains its thrust and logic of Aristotelian speculation particularly the manner in which it accounts for human action, amongst other natural phenomena. According to that thinking, objects, process and phenomena are constantly 'asking' themselves about what

they *ought* to be in the same sense as Frost (1996, 1983) constantly poses the question in regard to ethical practice in international affairs. To Aristotelian science, the answer was always simple: Everything was constantly striving towards some particular end determined by its constituent elements which had to be fire, air, water or earth singly or in combination, an idea that Aristotle borrowed from the pre-Socratic thinker, Empedocles. The four elements have natural motions which they ought to follow to find their natural place. Those made of earth have a natural motion downwards, fire upwards and so on. The heavenly bodies are made up of the fifth element or essence (or the quint essence) and they follow circular motion which is supposed to bring them close to perfection. According to that thinking, the motion detected in everything and indeed, all natural phenomena and processes are supra-empirical and transcendental and are simply the way they are in accordance with how things ought to be according to some 'settled norm', to borrow from Frost.[39]

Idealism has additionally drawn significantly on the Plato's attempt to grapple with the longstanding philosophical problem of the nature of 'relations', as opposed to such other entities as physical objects, minds and sense data. To summarise the problem as it arose for Plato, one can use as an example some of the key notions or declared goals of neoliberal reform, such as accountability, transparency or efficiency. In asking oneself what each of those notions means and what their promotion is intended to achieve, one can proceed by looking at a collection of actions or policies with the view of identifying what they have in common in the context of those notions. For example, for a selection of acts that are 'transparent', they should be of such a common nature that what identifies them as transparent will be identified in them and no other act. The common nature that identifies them as transparent will be transparency, '…the pure essence the admixture of which with facts of ordinary life produces the multiplicity of [transparent] acts' (Russell, 1998:54). That would be the same case with

[39] Ibid

'efficiency', or 'accountability': they will be applicable to a number of other things by virtue of what joins them in their common nature or essence. The pure essence is what Plato refers to as the 'idea' or 'form'. As an 'idea', transparency (or efficiency) is not identical with anything that is transparent (or efficient). It is not a particular thing or act, though particular things or acts can partake of it; and not being particular, it cannot be thought as being extant in the sentient world, and it is not of a passing or changeable existence like sentient things: 'it is eternally itself, immutable and indestructible.' It is the ideal, or Hegel's absolute idea, a fitting object of aspiration. By way of that abstraction, Plato makes the transition to the transcendental, supra-sensible or supra-empirical or what is putatively the normative realm. As Russell describes that move, Plato and his emulators is made to pass into mysticism and to hope, by way of mystic illumination, to envision the ideas just like the sense objects are pictured. Plato creates a normative world and a world of ideals that is:

> [M]ore real than the common world of sense, the unchangeable world of ideas, which alone gives to the world of sense whatever pale reflection of reality may belong to it….for whatever we may attempt to say about things in the world of sense, we can only succeed in saying that they participate in such and such ideas, which, therefore, constitute all their character (Russell, 1998:53).

Plato seeks to make a distinction between the corporeal world, of concrete phenomena and that of the invisible and abstract forms or ideas or essences, with the latter being characterised by oneness and immutability, in the Permanidean sense of the eternal and timeless. As is true of the anti-empiricism that cuts across much of the writing on normative theory, to Plato, sense experience apprehends only appearances: Trusting sensation is inimical to authentic knowledge. Comparing the real and the 'forms', Plato notes that, the former '…are seen but are not thought, while the Forms are thought but are not seen' (1906:201[507]); also further stressing that, '…when anyone tries by dialectic through the discourse of reason unaided by any of the senses to attain to what

each reality is, and desists not until by sheer intelligence he apprehends the reality of good, then he stands at the real goal of the intelligible world…'[40]

2.9.4. ***Power differentials, exceptionalism and norm setting***

Even without putting in consideration Thrasymachus' doctrine that 'justice is nothing else than that which is advantageous to the stronger'[41], one never fails to notice that the inclination by certain groups to prescribe standards of conduct is in many ways – and one could argue, primarily – a product of power relations; power generally understood as the capacity to determine others' behaviour. Whether at the international or the subnational level, the ability to determine others' behaviour, and with it, the urge to establish and enforce absolute standards or norms presupposes the existence of '…a dominant group which identifies itself with the community as a whole, and which possesses facilities denied to subordinate groups or individuals for imposing its view of life on the community' (Carr, 1961:79). Political actors may go as far as holding the conviction that the interests, aspirations and moral values of their homelands as the universal interests of humanity; or considering their community to be providence's gift to the rest of the human race. It then becomes a short step from that the sense of being exceptional and preeminent, destined to set standards and adjudge all the rest. 'The greater part having chosen themselves, as at once, the judges and the models of what is excellent in their kind,'writes Ferguson, 'are first in their own opinion, and give to others consideration or eminence, so far only as they approach to their own condition (1783:341).

In the United States for example, one finds the notion of 'American exceptionalism' running through the country's statesmen from the founding days to the modern period and observers. McCrisken has described American

---

[40] Ibid, p. 227 [532].

[41] Plato, Republic, Book 1 (338).

exceptionalism as the belief that '…the United States is an extraordinary nation with a special role to play in human history; not only unique but also superior among nations' (2003:2). A similar sentiment is identifiable in the views of one of the leading Puritan pilgrims John Winthrop who in 1630 would declare his newly-established colony in biblical terms as a 'shining city upon the hill' for the rest of the world to emulate,[42] a phrase that was to become a punch line for many American presidents over the years (Viotti: 2008). Much later, Woodrow Wilson in his 1914 independence talked at length about America's duty to humanity emphasizing that '…her flag is the flag not only of America but of humanity', further observing that, 'I do not know that there will ever be a declaration of independence and of grievances for mankind, but I believe that if any such document is ever drawn it will be drawn in the spirit of the American Declaration of Independence.'[43] In concluding his January 22, 1917 address to the Senate, titled 'A World League for Peace', setting the United States' war aims before its entry into the World War I, Woodrow Wilson enmphasised that,

> These are American principles, American policies. We could stand for no others. And they are also the principles and policies of forward looking men and women everywhere, of every modem nation, of every enlightened community. They are the principles of mankind and must prevail.[44]

Similarly, George Bush, in his 2000 presidential campaign, would remark that, '[o]ur nation is chosen by God and commissioned by history to be a model to the world…'[45] The most stark expression of those sentiments, which can only be done justice by quoting it extensively is to be found in the words of Senator Beveridge who in his 9 January 1900 speech to Congress observed that,

---

[42] This was reference to Jesus' sermon on the mountain as cited in Matthew 5:14, (New International Version), 'You are the light of the world. A town built on a hill cannot be hidden'

[43] Hart (1918), Selected Addresses and Public Papers of Woodrow Wilson, p.44.

[44] Ibid, p. 179.

[45] Viotti, 2008, p.111

> God has not been preparing the English-speaking and Teutonic peoples for a thousand years for nothing but vain and idle self-contemplation and self-admiration. No! He has made us the master organizers of the world to establish system where chaos reigns. He has given it the spirit of progress to overwhelm the forces of reaction throughout the earth. He has made us adepts in government that we may administer government among savage and senile peoples. Were it not for such a force as this the world would relapse into barbarism and night. And of all our race He has marked the American people as His chosen nation to finally lead in the regeneration of the world. This is the divine mission of America... We are trustees of the world's progress, guardians of its righteous peace (1995:514).

Beveridge does more than merely exceed the benign words of a Woodrow Wilson, whose limited aim may have been just to appeal to his audience's patriotism. Beveridge veers off into the realm of casual racism in the same manner as Cecil Rhodes whose views on the matter, he left to his last will and testament. 'I contend that we are the first race in the world' noted Rhodes, 'and that the more of the world we inhabit the better it is for the human race.'[46] As contemporary an advocate of normative thinking as Chris Brown, echoing the thinking of those earlier commentators, finds it unsurprising that the sophistication of the seminal volume he edited should have no parallel in non-Western thought for the very reason that, '…for better or for worse, the modern world has been created by Western Europeans and their offspring, and thinkers of this part of the world have had a head start for the task of understanding their creation' (1992:13).

What appears to be the case then is that the core and ballast of what is passing as normative theory, or what has been dubbed as 'normative power'; and indeed the normative basis of neoliberal interventionism is the shifting sand of the relative pecking order of national and supranational entities in the global ranking. When reflected upon with caution and a sense of history, it would be hoped that the ranking would demonstrate the extent to which, '[i]n dealing with national characteristics it is important to recognize that comparative evaluations are never absolutes, that they always are made in terms of more or less (Lipset, 1996:32).

---

[46] In: Stead, 1902, p. 58.

Thus far the framing of the idealistic crusades of the post-Cold War era remains averse to Lipset's counsel.

2.9.5. ***Latter Day Mission Civilisatrice : Europe as a 'Normative Power'***

Some comments are necessary at this point on the linkage between the epistemological questions explored in the foregoing sections of the study and the real world practices. In doing so, we shall differ slightly from claims by some commentators and scholars regarding the existence of a chasm between knowledge and experience, and theory and practice particularly in contemporary statecraft and international relations. For example, scholar and former diplomat David Newsom probably overstates the case in his observation that

> [M]uch of today's scholarship [on foreign policy issues] is either irrelevant or inaccessible to policymakers. Some of the more theoretical communications are filtered through think tanks or research staffs of governments...much remains locked within the circle of esoteric scholarly expression (1996: 138).

In a similar tone, a serving Chief Inspector of the British diplomatic service is quoted as having stated that he was '…not sure what the academic discipline of IR—if indeed there be such a thing as an academic discipline of IR—has to contribute to the practical day-to-day work of making and managing foreign policy' (Wallace, 1994:158). What is apparent however is that there is a direct link between the foreign policy behavior of some countries and groups that directly derive from or are serviced by the philosophical claims that we seek critique. In particular, we focus on what has been termed as 'Normative Power' Europe which has been formulated as a conceptual rationalization or even euphemism of a particular approach to international relations practice that seems to be identifiable with a rapidly changing balance of global power.

As a characterization of the European Union's foreign policy, the term 'normative power' was coined and has been popularized primarily by Manners ,

with other analysts whose contribution to the debate followed from his pioneering article published in 2000. But even ahead of Manners, other scholars were already making hints on normative as opposed to empirical priorities, and the pursuit of the 'ideational'. In that publication Manners outlined, first, the characteristics of post-Cold War Europe as a 'norms entrepreneur' and a novel power pointing out that it privileges the spread of norms globally over geographical expansion and military hegemony. He emphasizes that point by spelling out the differences between the EU the United States which is portrayed as a typical non-normative power, singling out differences in threat perception and foreign policy orientation between the European Union and the United States, with the latter being generally viewed as a military power in the sense that it privileges non-civilian over the EU's preference, namely civilian policy instruments (2002). According to this view, the EU is a normative power in the sense that it focuses on promoting the globalization of the so-called universal norms.

The EU, he has observed, '….promotes a series of normative principles that are generally acknowledged, within the United Nations system, to be universally applicable' (2008:65). According to that thinking, the EU is '…neither military nor purely economic, but only seeks to work through ideas and opinions', and has as its principal capabilities the capacity '…to shape conceptions of the 'normal',[47] while seeking to determine what should be considered as appropriate behaviour by other actors and to shape their values (2002: 239). To some, that would probably akin to what Therborn has called 'Scandinavian Europe', constituting 'a nice, decent periphery of the world, with little power but some good ideas' (1997: 382), or 'Swissified Europe' (Telò, 2002), which is 'rich, selfish, boring and essentially trivial' (Moïsi, 2002)[48], among other characterizations.

As a 'normative' power, Europe, structured around the EU presents itself as being committed to the mission of 'civilizing' international relations as part of the

---

47 Ian Manners, 'Normative Power Europe: a Contradiction in Terms?', Journal of Common Market Studies 40, no. 2 (2002): 235-58.

48 Cited in Obie, 2006, p. 125.

wider aim of transforming global society (Hill, 1990; Duchene, 1972; Manners, 2002). This new, Post-Westphalian Europe is according to some, the harbinger of a Kantian *foedus pacificum* (Hyde-Price, 2006:217). As an analytical term, 'normative power' is an offshoot of 'civilian power' coined the 1970s by Duchêne (1972) and later put in clearer terms by Hans Maull who was to define it as:

> [A] state whose conception of its foreign policy role and behaviour is bound to particular aims, values, principles, as well as forms of influence and instruments of power in the name of a civilization of international relations.[49]

It may also be what Carr has referred to by drawing the distinction between economic power, military power and power over opinion (1962:108). Following from those earlier conceptions, the European Union now refers to itself as a normative power, seeking to '… to work with others in an interdependent world to spread the advantages of open markets, economic growth and a political system based on social responsibility and democracy' (EC, 2007:4).

Of the norms that Europe seeks to globalize, there are five major and four minor ones. The major norms are:

- the centrality of peace
- liberty
- democracy
- respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms
- the rule of law

The four minor norms are:

- social solidarity
- anti-discrimination
- sustainable development

[49] Cited from Diez (2005:616)

Normative claims altogether ignore the empirical realities of the collective foreign policy of the EU or its individual member states, let alone the instances where the two even clash. Beyond the flamboyant rhetoric of norms, in reality, '…foreign policy is invested with strategic calculations and that the material interests underpinning this calculus often trump the normative agenda…when the two clash' (Merlingen, 2007:437). The normative stance has also been criticised particularly by constructivists, for 'othering' non-European actors. By portraying itself as a normative power and the crusader of universal values, Europe adopts a strategy of constructing 'self' and 'other' in international politics (Diez, 2005: 628-629). The strategy includes among other approaches, what the Copenhagen School calls 'securitization' by which issues are framed as existential threats, presenting the self as the referent object of the threat and therefore legitimizing and justifying the employment of extraordinary measures including war. According to that thinking, the EU 'others' others through presenting them as inferior, the self is simply constructed as superior to the other. Diez gives the example of practices of Orientalism which involves the presentation of the 'other' as exotic, may be an object of condescending honour which masks an attitude of superiority and looking down upon those that are not part of the close community. Other actors may also be portrayed as violators of universal principles, hence the use of terms such as 'pariah states', 'rogue states', or its declared replacement, 'states of concern'; 'axis of evil', 'nuclear outlaws', 'outposts of tyranny', 'ungoverned spaces' and other epithets. This is a stronger variation of the second strategy. As Diez notes,

> 'Here, however, the standards of the self are not simply seen as superior, but of universal validity, with the consequence that the other should be convinced or otherwise brought to accept the principles of the self.'

The mere presentation of the other as *different* differs from the foregoing ones in that it does not place an obvious value-judgment on the other: the other is represented neither as inferior nor as a threat, but merely as different. While this is not an innocent practice (it still imposes identities on others), it is preferable to

the other three in that it reduces the possibility to legitimise harmful interference with the other.[50]

While the EU's distinct foreign policy orientation is deemed by some as a new kind of power in international politics, compared for example to the United States, it is also viewed by others as largely a reflection of the EU's deficiency in power capabilities and an attempt to find something with which it can preoccupy itself, at a time of searching questions about old Europe's future role in a world of emerging new powers. In pointing out the extent of the divergence between Europe and the United States on the major contemporary strategic and international questions, Kagan has observed that while the latter is from Mars, the former is from Venus. He illustrates this claim by referring to power noting that, with respect its efficacy, morality and desirability, Europe has withdrawn '…into a self-contained world of laws and rules and transnational negotiation and cooperation…a post-historical paradise of peace and relative prosperity, the realization of Kant's "perpetual peace"' (2003:3).

Claims about normative power may then be viewed as a case of Europe trying to '…make virtue out of weakness' (2003:13), a trait that took root in the two or so decades that followed the end of World War II, an era when America sought radically cut back the weight of its Transatlantic allies as a possible way of bringing about '...the retirement of Europe from world Politics' (Harper: 1996:79). According to other analysts, claims by scholars but more so, the hope by European statesmen that a continental organization such as the European Union can exercise 'normative' power globally may be based on a flawed conception of the dynamics power, particularly, its indivisibility, and the fact that power never seems to lend itself to compartmentalization. 'The laws of social dynamics are laws of which can only be stated in terms of power', so Russell has observed, but more importantly, 'not in terms of this or that form of power' (2004:4).

---

[50] Ibid.

Although classifications of 'types' of power abound, when looked at closely, they always seem to appear to be nothing more than its situational manifestations, or avenues for its exercise or even phases of escalation of the process of inducing compliance. This becomes clearer when one looks at some definitions of power from a selection of analysts. This point needs to be highlighted for the purpose of demonstrating the futility of the hope by some countries or alliances that, they can curve out a niche for themselves as specialists at determining the 'normal', or civilizing other countries and perform that role in isolation from other avenues of being influential. That misperception appears to be the basis of the notion of normative power.

In its most basic characterization, 'power' is all about an agent's ability to realize its wishes and to produce those effects that it (the agent) wants to produce. It is and always has been one of the many universal aspects of human experience, and probably the master of all aspects of human experience. Bertrand Russell (2004:23) in his definition of power as, '…the production of intended effects' sums up that characterization. That definition forms the core of many others that have come before and after him. To Thomas Hobbes, it is '…man's present means to any future apparent good' (1968:150). Max Weber views power not as ability but as a potential in his observation that it is '…the chance of a man or a number of men to realize their own will in a social action even against the resistance of others who are participating in the action (Weber, 1998; Wrong, 1995, p. 21).

Lukes' perspective comes closest to the notion of power advanced by normative theorists in general and more particularly by exponents of normative power. Using Dahl's notational form, Lukes notes that,

> A may exercise power over B by getting him to do what he does not want to do, but he also exercises power over him by influencing, shaping or determining his very wants. Indeed, is it not the supreme exercise of power to get another or others to have the desires you want them to have - that is, to secure their compliance by controlling their thoughts and desires? (1974:23)

Even if one used only those two characterizations of power, it is possible to identify its essential attribute as a relational phenomenon reliant on the means of an agent as they relate to the intended ends, the agent's relative capabilities viewed against those of rival agents let alone the amenability of the objects of power to be receptive of the agent's influence. Power then becomes the ability and capacity of an agent to influence the behavior of others, determine allocation of resources, shape outcomes and influence the trend of events.

Etzionni identifies three 'types' of power corresponding to the three kinds of means that can be used to induce compliance: coercive, remunerative and normative. Coercive power, according to that classification, is based on the use of or the possible application of physical sanctions and force. Remunerative power is based on the control over material resources and rewards through the distribution of alms, benefits or rewards; while normative power rests on the inducement of compliance through the allocation and manipulation of symbolic rewards, deprivations, esteem and prestige. Etzioni's tripartite typology bears parallels with Carr's three categories, namely military power, economic power and power over opinion. Carr notes that those categories are interdependent, with no one country existing in reality possessing on type in isolation from others.

What becomes clear from that cursory examination of power is its indivisibility. Indivisibility as a defining property of power seems to have been overlooked by the exponents of the notion of 'normative power' but crucially, its adoption as a strategy for influence on the global scene is bound to generate disillusion. It is a distraction from a hard and long examination of the real causes and consequences of decline, and whether that decline is absolute or whether it arises from being overshadowed by emerging actors. In the notion of 'normative power', what one sees is a strategy of adjusting to the dwindling (or the prospect of decline) of one's status as a power by seeking solace from either a disaggregation of or, an alternative conceptualization of power; yet an actor or agent can only be possessed of power in its entirety, or have none at all, for it

would seem, power is an 'either-all-or-none' phenomenon. In its essence', Carr has observed, 'power is an indivisible whole' (1962:108).

Therborn alludes to that indivisibility by pointing out the impotence and illusory nature of standalone normative power. '[W]ithout the backing of force and the willingness to use it', Therborn observes, '"Europe" is unlikely to become a normative power, telling other parts of the world what political, economic and social institutions they should have' (1997:380). Wood has pointed out the obstacles to the exercise of normative power and the blunting that the EU's 'community values' is destined to suffer in influencing the value systems of actors with strong bargaining tools.

In the face of energy-rich international actors such as Russia that Europe depends on, Wood notes that,

> 'The EU's mission civilisatrice is susceptible to a relatively straightforward if unpleasant realpolitik that can expose a rhetoric-behaviour gap…When faced with resistance to a (potentially) vigorous promotion of democracy and human rights…the EU appears a rather powerless normative power' (2009:218).

The pursuit of paternalistic initiatives particularly in the Global South derives more from fixation on a past when influence was assured than from a realistic assessment of the balances of force in an era of emerging powers whose arrival on the global scene is bound to reduce the leverage of the influential actors of a bygone era. It is upon such factors that the durability of the drive for such intrusive initiatives as Security Sector Reform shall depend.

Mixed Conceptions of Security in the Peacebuilding Discourse

3.1 Introduction

Mearsheimer has observed that, '[w]e may...wake up one day lamenting the loss of the order that the Cold War gave to the anarchy of international relations' (1990:35). 'Order' in International Relations theory sense has a dual meaning. It may be a social, political and economic system; or it may be a state of affairs in which things are more or less in their appropriate place or expected condition. It is the latter sense that Mearsheimer was highlighting and that is the sense that interests us here. We will call it ontological order: Certainty about 'what is', predictability of what is yet to be and the disciplining of collective actions and attitudes to guarantee that predictability. Other observers have expressed sentiments similar to Mearsheimer. 'Between October 1989 and August 1991', writes Chipman, 'the world lost an international system that served as an ordering principle of international relations, but it did not gain an international society with a universal culture' (1992:110).

This chapter seeks to explore 'the anarchy in international relations' and the dearth of 'a universal culture' focussing on the scholarly traditions that have been spawned by the end of the Cold War and how they feed into policy debates, particularly in the fields of peacekeeping, security and development. It outlines the point in post-Cold War international theory at which philosophical rationalism outlined in the previous chapter meets political idealism. It builds on the picture emerging from Chapter Two, of a meagre epistemological trellis on which the normative approaches informing dominant international development approaches have flourished. The chapter explores the varied practical interpretations of the notion of security that informs the SSR debate, many of them dating to the end of the Cold War.

3.2 Post-Cold War conceptual Turmoil and the Birth of Neo-Liberal Reformism

One thing that cannot escape notice is the extent to which security as an analytical and policy category had over the period of the Cold War come to be equated with threats, yet indeed there is a lot more to security than just threats. That fixation goes a long way to explain the framing of the post-Cold War debates on international security all of which remain fixated on threats even when they are referring to vulnerabilities. This is what one observes with the human security agenda, 'Securitisation Theory' and the debate on widening, narrowing and deepening, which, in many ways constitute the conceptual backbone of the peacebuilding agenda. The three approaches to security analysis are symptomatic of the persistent gap between scholarship and practice, as it has particularly become manifest in the post-Cold War era.

The absence of a 'clear and present danger' has brought about an intellectual ferment – and maybe even intellectual risk taking – that goes further to expose the extent to which even during the cold war, scholars may have lacked the intellectual initiative in the formation of coherent categories and concepts in the broader field of international security studies. It appears to remain the case that, practitioners tease out the parameters of policy and academics are invited to the table downstream to this process to provide an intellectualist sheen, even a dispensable one, to the needs of practical action. 'Purpose which should logically follow analysis', observes Carr, 'is required to give it both its initial impulse and its direction' (1964:2). Yet, when brought aboard, one would expect scholars to benefit their lot by capturing as much of the bigger picture as is perceivable to enable them to subsequently shape the trend of thinking. One can with justification doubt whether this ever happens, as evidenced by the direction that international security studies took following the end of the Cold War.

What has further complicated the situation is the meeting point of the levels of security analysis with the varieties of referent objects of security (Buzan, 1985). The idealist school of the Cold War era viewed the international system as the principal referent of security with a focus on systemic threats. With the ending of the Cold War and the relative subsidence of systemic threats at least for the time being, the idealists have found themselves without an agenda and this has caused them to suffer a crisis, with some of them insisting that the field of international security studies should be confined to '…anything that concerns the prevention of superpower nuclear war' (Lebow, 1988:508), even when it had become clear that such a prospect had become ever more remote. For both 'traditionalists' and 'idealists', this was a time of disorientation, but particularly so for the latter, whose agenda was exclusively system-centric, as opposed to the state-centric focus of the 'traditionalists'. The immediate aftermath of the end of the Cold War rendered the supra state or system level of security analysis and advocacy irrelevant, putting in question the status and even funding of the idealists. Self-re-invention was at this stage the only option the idealists were left with. This they did by switching their energies to the level of analysis below the state, in a move that amounted to operating behind the realists' lines. The result of this has been the emergence of what one may call the 'neoidealists', comprising the schools of thought associated with what is being called the 'human-centric' or society-centred security, the wideners/deepeners, and the securitisation theorists, proponents of feminist security studies and various strands of what is being called Critical Security Studies.

Figure 1: Post-Cold War Concepts of International Security

PERSPECTIVE	FOCUS	COUNTRY/REGION
Conventional constructivism	Stresses ideational factors (beliefs, norms, ideas, identity, culture) as opposed to material factors,	Mainly in the US
Critical Constructivism	Focuses on other collectivities other than the state, stresses military security, employs sociological post-positivist methodologies	US, Europe
The Copenhagen School (Securitization)	Constructivist counterpoint to realist approaches, proponent of the 'widening' agenda, promotes 'securitisation' theory	Scandinavia, Britain
Critical Security Studies	Related to Peace Research in its normative stance, and its emphasis on human security in preference to state security	Britain
Femininist Security Studies	Cuts across the non-realist approaches (post-structuralism, peace research, constructivism etc), women's advocacy in gender studies, identifies militarism and its sustenance with masculinity	Originated from the US and Britain, currently global
Human Security	Overlaps with Peace Research, seeks to merge security studies with Development Studies, emphasizes humans as the referent object of security, emphasizes poverty, underdevelopment, food insecurity, disease and human rights issues	Canada, Norway, Japan (and EU & UN)
Peace Research	Normative counterpoint to Strategic Studies	Scandinavia, Germany, Japan, Britain
Post-Colonial Security Studies	Critique of Western-centrism of security studies, seeks a platform for Third world state formations and the effects of their historical linkages to the First World	Western Europe, Sub - Saharan Africa
Poststructuralist Security Studies	Looks at discursive approaches (as opposed to the ideational), sovereignty and security are products of political practices,	Originated in North America, now strong in Europe
Strategic Studies	The military, covers war, nuclear proliferation, deterrence, arms and arms control	Britain, US, France
Realism	Power politics, polarity, with overlaps with the concerns of strategic studies	Mainly US, also in Euirope

Adapted from: Buzan and Hansen, 2009, pp. 35-37.

The emergence of the 'neo-idealists' and their attempt to create a new role for themselves has arguably been the primary cause of much of the conceptual haze that has engulfed the field of security analysis in the last two decades. There can be no doubt that for the duration of the Cold War, it was necessary to uphold the system-centric agenda: The spectre of a nuclear conflagration was a threat to the whole international system; not only just to the individual superpowers that were ranged against each other. A system-centric agenda was a necessary counterforce against, and an anti-thesis of state-centrism and the two were mutually dependent. Without one, the other is superfluous. That superfluity is currently highlighted by the turning of various issue areas at the intra-state or sub-state level either into threats or into referent objects of security by the idealists of yesterday in order to create a new agenda. Part of the problem has arisen from what we refer to as a category mistake elsewhere. As an example, it is fallacious to create such a category as 'societal security' in contradistinction to state security when in fact societies are one of the key defining futures of states. The same goes for 'human security' which is always opposed to state and even regime security, just as if the latter two are constituted by non-humans. Whatever the point some of these agendas are supposed to be making, thus far they have been unsuccessful. Part of the explanation for this may be failures to grasp the parameters of security particularly by non-practitioners who are invited to be part of analysis long after 'purpose' has been determined. A closer examination of the outline of the processes and practice of state-centric security management lays out those parameters. It is not surprising that initiatives such as SSR that are supposedly based on the new 'holistic' approach to security have found themselves reduced by the force of realism, to an interpretation of the 'security sector' exclusively in terms of instruments of coercion.

Within the realist tradition of security management, one finds four major variables namely: threats, interests, vulnerabilities and capabilities.

- Threats are the exogenous factors, actors, processes and phenomena whose impact on the referent object of security (at whatever level of analysis,

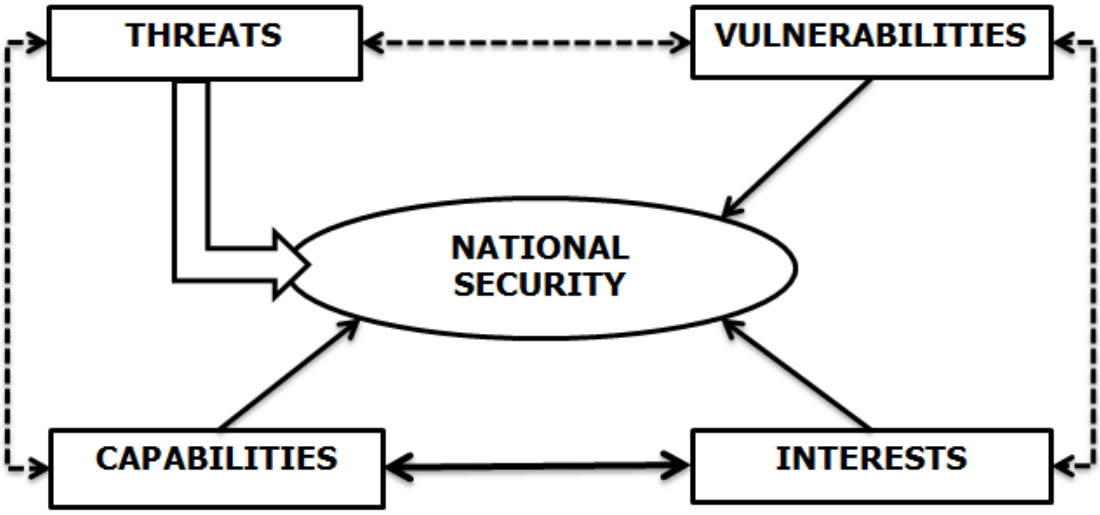
whether state, regional, international or systemic) may result in the impairment of the functioning of the physical base of the referent object, its damage or dismemberment. In this case, 'exogenous' is in relation to the referent object of security analysis. In case the referent object is the state, threats '…can result in the distortion or destruction of the institutions, and….can repress, subvert or obliterate the idea of the state' (Buzan, 1991:117). The most obvious threats are of a military nature, as those that preoccupied security actors during the Cold War.

- Interests are the core values and collective aspirations of the human community that constitutes the referent object of security, which that community would be willing to uphold at all costs, if necessary by resorting to armed action.

- Vulnerabilities are the endogenous weaknesses of the referent object of security which not only make it possible for the threats to have their negative impact, but will also render it difficult to mobilize the human and material resources needed to neutralise the threats and to overcome internal weaknesses. Under vulnerabilities, one would include such factors as weak distribution systems, deficient institutions and low policy capacity, low levels of socio-political cohesiveness and others that are looked at in later sections of the study as we propose an alternative framework for development-related security studies. Many of these are what are being called non-military threats.

- Capabilities are the tangible and intangible assets or instruments available to those charged with formulating and implementing public policy to enable them to neutralise external threats, overcome internal subversion and lessen vulnerabilities; and to take measures for further broadening the range of capabilities.

Figure 2: The Realist Framework of National Security Management



Much of the agenda of post-Cold War security activism is derived from the erroneous recasting of vulnerabilities as threats, as identified by the state-centric national security management model. Interpretation of societal vulnerabilities as threats is what is generally referred to as deepening and widening. While these are being referred to as new approaches to security studies, they still fall squarely within the ambit of the realist approach, albeit, by referring to societal vulnerabilities as threats, which in our view stands out as a major distortion. This distortion underpins some of the new approaches to security analysis that provide the conceptual basis for mainstream post-conflict and peacebuilding initiatives. We shall look in detail at three of them, namely human security, 'Securitisation Theory' and the widening/ deepening agenda.

3.3 Security Sector Reform and the Human Security Agenda

3.3.1. ***Origins and purpose of the Human Security framework***

As would be expected, Human Security has remained a central theme of the SSR debate right from the latter's inception in the late 1990s, as an approach to peacebuilding and a key goal for the reform of security institutions. It is, has remained as prominent as a reference point for peacebuilding indeed as it has been in most other frameworks that have gained prominence with the winding down of the Cold War. Linking the end of the SSR, 'Human Security' and the ending of the Cold War, a UK Government-linked network note that advocates for reform of security institutions notes that,

> Since the end of the Cold War concerns have changed and security challenges have become more complex…the security agenda has broadened to include the well-being of populations and human rights, SSR being part of the wider 'human security' framework (2007:7).

In one of their capstone publications on SSR, the OECD DAC note similarly that '[T]he concept of SSR was influenced by the broader "human security" agenda' with its focus on '…the protection of individuals', as well as ensuring that '…conditions required by people for their development are not limited to traditional matters like national defence and law and order, but rather incorporate broader political, economic and social issues that ensure a life free from risk and concern' (OECD DAC, 2005:57). According to the UN, Human security refers to '…first, safety from such chronic threats as hunger, disease and repression. And second, it means protection from sudden and hurtful disruptions in the patterns of daily life—whether in homes, in jobs or in communities' (1994:23).[51]

---

[51] To demonstrate the versatility and probably vagueness of the term of Human Security, The Global Development Research Centre (GDRC) has compiled a collection of its definition, available at http://www.gdrc.org/sustdev/husec/Definitions.pdf (accessed on 29 August 2011).

In the main, 'Human Security' gained currency as an analytical and policy tool in 1994 when the United Nations put it to use as a catchword for that year's edition of the Human Development Report, and a totally new way of thinking about security. To demonstrate the sense in which the substance of the report represented a fundamental shift in thinking about security, its authors linked its framework to the events of 1944 which, in Albert Einstein's opinion left '[E]verything changed'. Along those lines, the United Nations rated the new conception of security as nothing short of a paradigm shift that necessitated that, those concerned were going to '...require a substantially new manner of thinking if mankind is to survive.' Taking 1994 as a baseline, the United Nations employed Einstein's tone to demonstrate how '…five decades later, we need another profound transition in thinking from nuclear security to human security' (UNDP, 1994: 22), in a sense, turning the 'human' and the 'nuclear' elements into logical equivalents. The UNDP's enthusiasm for human security activism therefore stems directly from the euphoria over the end of the Cold War.

Not many years later, it was adapted and promoted by the Canadian and Norwegian governments '…as a new *leitmotif* in foreign policy' (Suhrke, 1999:265). Yet, to some, it is viewed as part of the effort to redirect the minds of actors and commentators on world affairs, away from the thinking that dominated the discourse on international relations throughout the Cold War Period. Those new directions may be what Chandler highlights in his remark regarding the inauguration of the 'Human Security'. He has noted that, it '…is often written in terms that pose the centrality of the struggle between traditional, state-based, interest-based approaches and new, deterritorialized, values-based approaches that focus on individual human needs (2008:427). But even that may not be new in International Relations debate. Paris has likened it to other frameworks before it, including 'common security', 'cooperative security', 'global security', and 'comprehensive security' to which one can add 'responsibility to protect', 'humanitarian intervention', or Bigo's 'globalization of insecurity' (2006: 389) and

Shaw's 'common-risk society' (2000); referring to such formulations as part of a series of neologisms '…that encourage policy makers and scholars to think about international security as something more than the military defence of state interests and national territory' (Paris, 2001:87).[52]

In spite of its apparent novelty, the general substance of the human security agenda as it relates to the Third World was initially enunciated even much earlier than the UN. In her 1987 publication, Caroline Thomas noted that,

> [S]ecurity in the context of the Third world does not simply refer to the military dimension as it is often assumed in Western discussions of the concept, but to the whole range of dimensions of a state's existence which are already taken care of in the more developed states, especially those of the West…[F]or example the search for internal security of the state through nation-building, secure systems of food, health money and trade as well as the search for security through nuclear weapons (1987:1).

In what has to be an explicit reinforcement of the concerns of scholars who suggest that the widening and broadening of the security agenda '…runs the risk of making the concept too elastic as to detract seriously from its utility as analytical tool' (Ayoob, 1991: 259), the UN report gives the major od human security '…how people live and breathe in a society' (1994:22). The UNDP gives a snapshot of a survey of people's understanding of the concept of human security that sums it up as unmanageably relativist and dependent '…very much on their [respondents'] immediate circumstances.' A sample of the notions of security that informs the UN human security agenda includes, the possession of friends, fear of foreign invasion; a case where '…security is only in the name of the Lord who has made heaven and earth…liberty to worship whom I like, how I like….', liberty to walk the streets at night without being raped; enough for the children to eat; immunity to robberies, for a girl to be married and have someone to depend on, for one's job

---

[52] Roland Paris (2001), 'Human Security Paradigm Shift or Hot Air?' International Security, Vol. 26, No. 2, pp. 87–102. Other neologisms include common security, global security, cooperative security and comprehensive security.

and position to be safe, faith in tomorrow, free education, greatness of god and his capacity to watch over people, among others.

On their part, the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty, chaired by Gareth Evans and Mohamed Sahnoun authored a report entitled The Responsibility to Protect. The report focused on the responsibilities states have for their citizenry. It refers to human security as,

> '…the security of people – their physical safety, their economic and social well-being, respect for their dignity and worth as human beings, and the protection of their human rights and fundamental freedoms' (2001)

3.3.2. ***Human Security as an aspect of 'state-centric' security***

An examination of the literature on human security reveals how nearly every challenge that an individual or group can face, is characterised as a 'threat'. They are all placed on the same laundry list '…as if the costs (immediate and long term) and probabilities (present and future) of each were the same' (Hampson, 2008: 238). Those 'threats' were summed up well by the UNDP:

> With the dark shadows of the cold war receding, one can now see that many conflicts are within nations rather than between nations. For most people, a feeling of insecurity arises more from worries about daily life than from the dread of a cataclysmic world event. Will they and their families have enough to eat? Will they lose their jobs? Will their streets and neighbourhoods be safe from crime? Will they be tortured by a repressive state? Will they become a victim of violence because of their gender? Will their religion or ethnic origin target them for persecution? In the final analysis, human security is a child who did not die, a disease that did not spread, a job that was not cut, an ethnic tension that did not explode in violence, a dissident who was not silenced. Human security is not a concern with weapons-it is a concern with human life and dignity (1994:22).

For purposes of this study, and as already stated, threats can best be understood in relation to a specific referent object of security, which, as it were, is being

threatened. As noted, threats are those factors, actors, processes and phenomena whose impact or action on the referent object of security is such as to significantly undermine the stable and sustainable existence of that object. According to that conception, threats are necessarily external to the referent object of security. A key distortion in the post-Cold War.

3.3.3. ***Limitations of the human security framework***

The human security debate, like much of the activism of the post-cold war era is influenced by the liberal assumption of the protection of individual rights to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness, and their protection by what has come to be called the international community (Lauren, 2011; Morsink, 1998). Within the field of security studies, the focus on the liberal doctrine of individualism is manifested by urge to shift the research, advocacy and policy focus from 'state-centric' to 'human-centric' security, both of them equally hazy in conceptual terms. This thinking finds succinct expression in the view expressed by Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy to the effect that,

> With human security [the individual 'qua person', rather than 'qua citizen'] becomes the ultimate actor taken into account. His/her security is the ultimate goal, to which all instruments and political actors are subordinated. Elevating the person as the ultimate end is made possible by defining this new actor in terms of his/her vulnerabilities on the one hand, and his/her capacity to affect change on the other (2007: 13).

That extreme expression of the liberal doctrine would make the whole notion of security an impossibility given the diverse security concerns of 'Individuals qua persons'. Standardisation and homogenisation of those security concerns is unattainable, so is the 'ultimate actor' to whom all 'instruments and political actors are subordinated', just as if the political actors themselves are ruled out as prospective 'ultimate actors' in their own right as individuals. It is that underlying circularity of liberal individualism that renders it essentially nonsensical, a point

recognised by those like Amartya Sen who in his Development as Freedom takes note of the fact that although he advocates for the 'human-centred' approach, the real world will always involve political processes of collective decision-making, choices and policy trade-offs (1999: 32–33).

Human security is an offshoot of that commonly talked about shift. One of its major consequences has been the problematic and unrealistic presentation of the individual as a referent object of security in contradistinction to the state. This is an obvious category mistake borne out of the tendency of liberal fundamentalism to overemphasis the individual even when the individual is logically subsumed by the categories that the liberal discourse attempts to run away from, that is, the state and the nation. Overemphasis of the individual in human security activism has taken criticism from Buzan who rightly observes that, '…individuals are not free standing but only take their meaning from the societies in which they operate: they are not some kind of bottom line to which all else can and should be reduced or subordinated' (2004: 369).

On the analytical robustness (or lack thereof) of human security, Newman notes that the term is '…a normatively attractive but analytically weak concept' (2004:359), in the same vein with Buzan who views it as a '…reductionist, idealistic notion that adds little analytical value' (2004:369). Suhrke has simply described it as a stalled initiative (2004:365), while according to Chandler it is '...the dog that didn't bark' (2008:428). Of broader concern, the term has been noted for its lack of a precise definition, in a manner that Paris has compared to another common neologism in development studies, 'sustainable development'. By encompassing an expansive assortment of issues, ranging from immunity to violent attack from whatever source, to sanity, the term has been rendered conceptually amorphous. As a result, '…it provides policy makers with little guidance in the prioritization of competing policy goals and academics little sense of what, exactly, is to be studied.' (Paris, 2001:88). Similarly, Suhrke notes that, '…the term permits many interpretations, and those who promote it are still struggling to formulate an

authoritative and consensual definition. Yet, as Paris goes on to show, this amorphousness is not accidental. The term is 'slippery by design' and strategically ambiguous, crafted as an expansible multi-hook rack capable of accommodating the diverse agendas of state actors, particularly the middle powers, single issue NGOs, and development agencies and advocacy of an idealist orientation, and with disinclination to engage issues on their own terms. By eschewing precision, the crafters of the human security framework have rendered it capable of accommodating diverse perspectives and varied objectives, albeit at the cost of its utility as a conceptual and policy guide.

The concept's vagueness seems to be allowing – at least for the time being – for diverse and convenient interpretations by commentators, advocacy groups and academics, so much so that its role and resonance is likely to endure in those circles because of, rather than in spite of, its rather imprecise conception. This may not easily apply to policy. 'Practitioners, hard-pressed to prevent the crises not already exploding on CNN, and to cope with crises under way,' writes Hampson, 'show understandable impatience with scholarship that renders any problem more complicated – or worse, that does not evidently address any problem at all (2008:243).

Quite like SSR, human security activism has also been unfavourably described as a bandwagon whose promoters '…see an opportunity to capture some of the more substantial political interest and superior financial resources…' that up to the end of the Cold War, were associated with more traditional, military conceptions of security, and now in a new era, were being redeployed to other purposes and new forms of campaigning. In effect, the proponents of the agenda are seen to be pursuing a political strategy of deploying or even appropriating the term 'security' in a what may amount to a manipulative manner, that conveys urgency, demands public attention, and commands governmental resources, very much akin to what the term 'National Security' achieved during the Cold War, or 'Homeland Security' in the wake of 9/11.

3.3.4. ***Human security and the limits of middle power diplomacy***

So appealing was the rhetorical power of the term that even the Group of Eight (G8) foreign ministers employed it in some of its declarations. In June of 1999 they affirmed that they were '…determined to fight the underlying causes of multiple threats to human security...',[53] but even in that case, this was the voice of a Middle Power representative. Human security activism has indeed remained a foreign policy tool for middle powers. Perhaps what stands out as one of its major irony is the promoters declared intent to promote 'human-centric' as opposed to 'state-centric' security, yet in reality, and in realist logic, it is a bandwagon at the service of particular states in their search for a niche on the world stage. What does not escape notice is the nature of the countries that have picked interest in the Human Security agenda as a foreign policy issue: They are mainly the middle and small powers. In attendance at the bilateral meeting that formally launched the drive in May 1998 were foreign ministers of Norway, Canada, Austria, Chile, Greece, Ireland, Jordan, the Netherlands, Slovenia, South Africa, Switzerland and Thailand, with the first two as champions of the process. Norway's and Canada's meeting of minds and their long-standing evocation of a foreign policy based on 'progressive values', has been the driver of the agenda. And this is not recent. From the 1960s, there was already Norwegian-Canadian co-operation on United Nations peacekeeping and the Oslo-Ottawa axis, while the 1970s saw the emergence of the so-called 'like-minded'[54] states of the Organization for Security and Co-operation in Europe (OSCE) that sought to compensate for their low rank in the international pecking order by asserting that for them, international power lies in the promotion of powerful ideas (Suhrke, 1999, p.266), and to be '…policy

---

53 Lloyd Axworthy, "An Address On Human Security," Minister Of Foreign Affairs, To The G-8 Foreign Ministers' Meeting, 9 June 1999.

54 The intersection between the promoters of the human security agenda like-minded states is therefore not surprising. The latter include Canada, Iceland, Liechtenstein, Norway, and Switzerland, all belonging to the Human Security Network.

entrepreneurs in pursuit of ethical outcomes in the international arena' (Ravenhill, 1998:309). As would be expected, they are united by '…a considerable overlap of interests in their foreign policies' (Kothbauer-Liechtenstein and Kongshem, 2005: 90).

In all this, the very future of human security activism (just like that of SSR with which it is linked by way of conceptual symbiosis) has to be doubted, particularly in light of the contingent factors that have contributed to its emergence. As an initial concern, countries that are instrumental in promoting the human security agenda are doing so principally because of their power ranking globally. It is conceivable that an agenda that is promoted on that basis could easily become an 'orphan' if the promoters' priorities change, such as would happen if their ranking radically improved, therefore necessitating that the promoters will subsequently be preoccupied with concerns that are commensurate with their new ranking. The same applies if the promoters suffer a slump in their global ranking, becoming lesser powers or to use Wight's terms, if they become either vassal-states or jackal-states (1979:169). It is not hard to imagine how many international agendas were smothered by the demise of the Former Soviet Union and with it, the Warsaw Pact; nor is it difficult to visualise how many of Beijing's pet international concerns will be jettisoned as China's global ranking soars. Elsewhere in the study, we point out the sustainability risks faced by initiatives such as SSR that were inaugurated as part of the euphoria over the end of the Cold War.

In the particular instance of human security, Canadian activism on matters of humanitarianism coincided with the country's election as a non-permanent member of the United Nations Security Council. As Suhrke has observed, idiosyncratic factors add to contingent factors to account for the ebb and tide of human security activism. Canadian Foreign Minister Axworthy was an early advocate of 'soft power' from his days as an academic, an approach that he pursued as a legislator by advocating for economic sanctions rather force to be in

the world's trouble spots, a view he backed up with demands for far-reaching defence cuts.

3.4 Securitization Theory

3.4.1. ***Debatable founding premises: security as non-politics***

'Securitization Theory' is a recent addition to security studies literature, having been formulated by a group of scholars focusing on a collective research agenda dubbed the 'Copenhagen School', based at the now-defunct Conflict and Peace Research Institute (COPRI) in Copenhagen. As noted by MacDonald, the Copenhagen School '…constitutes the most concerted attempt to develop a theory framework for the study of security in the constructivist tradition' (2008:68). Without explicitly acknowledging their constructivist roots, the proponents of Securitization Theory claim to have based it on linguistics, specifically referring to JL Austin's 'Speech Act Theory', a claim that raises many important questions as we demonstrate later. According to their questionable interpretation of 'Speech Act Theory', the Copenhagen School looks at security as a speech act. To the Copenhagen School, the elite require emergency powers and in order to get such powers, they employ certain 'speech acts' to convince their audience, partly or wholly constituting the group whose security is presented by the elite as being threatened. Threats and with them, insecurity, are subjective: '…the content of security is malleable….anything can potentially be viewed as a threat' (McDonald, 2008:71); all that is required is '…the designation of an existential threat requiring emergency action or special measures and the acceptance of that designation by a significant audience' (Buzan *et al.*, 1998:27).

While it would be considered natural and indeed, inescapable to situate security-related matters at the centre of politics and as would be expected, to conceptualise such matters as strictly political, the securitisation framework has in some way taken security a matter that is extra-political, or a breaker of rules of

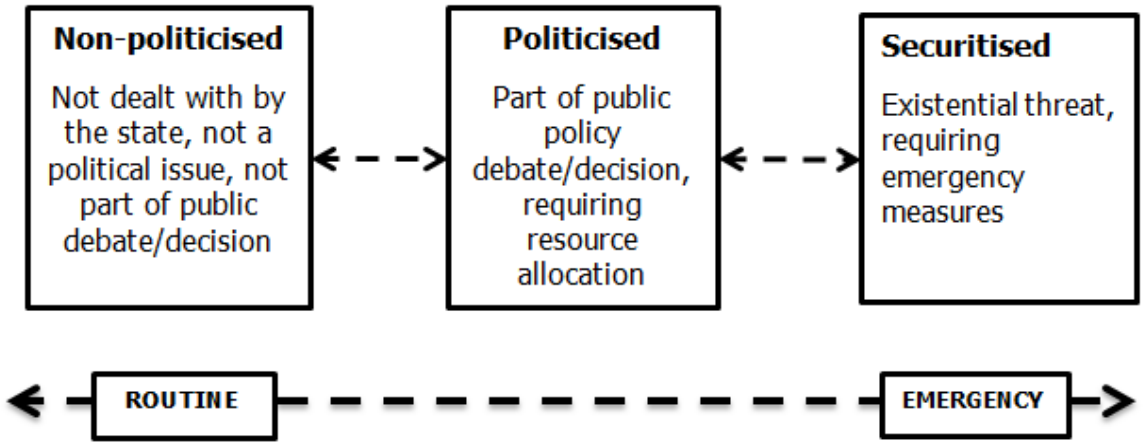
politics; and a 'move' that places issues above politics. According to the Copenhagen School, the ends of security policy seem to be the action of employing 'exceptional political measures': '[w]hen an issue is successfully presented as an existential threat, it legitimises the use of exceptional political measures' (Peoples and Vaughn-Williams, 2010:76) In a similar tone, Buzan *et al.* note that, '"Security"' is the move that takes politics beyond the established rules of the game and frames the issue either as a special kind of politics or as above politics' (1998:23). To sum up the process of securitization, they observe that

> [A]ny public issue can be located on the spectrum ranging from nonpoliticized (meaning the state does not deal with it and it is not in any other way made an issue of public debate and decision) through politicized (meaning the issue is part of public policy, requiring government decision and resource allocations or, more rarely, some other form of communal governance) to securitized (meaning the issue is presented as an existential threat, requiring emergency measures and justifying actions outside the normal bounds of political procedure).[55]

Such an interpretation leaves unanswered many important theoretical and practical questions on the broader relationship between politics and security. First, looked at in conjunction with the foregoing description of 'securitisation', that statement presents us with what is arguably a misleading continuum founded on a contestable assumption. According to Securitization Theory, it would seem that when an issue is given priority or urgency by decision makers, or when an issue is placed high on the political agenda, then it has been, or has become 'politicised' as Figure 3 (below) shows.

Figure 3: The Politicisation-Securitization 'Model'

55 Ibid



Even if we disregard what would otherwise be a valid objection to the use of the term 'politicisation', namely that, in its correct usage, it applies to the infusion of issues with emotive flavour, its general use in the securitization context is still disputable. Secondly, implied in that false continuum is a false categorisation that assumes the existence of two classes of public policy issues: those that are of political interest and those that are of security interest. As pointed out already, security lies squarely within the realm of politics and any attempt to set the two apart can only be fallacious. Underscoring security concerns is as much of politics as organising an election just as prioritization of a security policy emergency is as much of mainstream politics as paying attention to any other policy concern in other areas of public policy. To construe prioritization of a policy issue as politicisation, as is evident with the securitisation framework is above all else, misleading.

Moreover, reference to 'nonpoliticised' issues that are not of state interest and politicised issues that concern government or communal governance interest also raises questions regarding how securitisation theorists conceptualise the 'state' and 'government', especially given the understanding that government is a subset of the state. Since, as already noted elsewhere, the state encompasses a population, the territory occupied by that population and the government presiding over them, there can be no issue worth talking about that will not be of state

interest, unless we are to adopt the rather common error of conflating government with the state and to subsume all levels of state government under the central government. If the importance, urgency or scope of an issue is of such limited magnitude that it can be effectively handled by a local government, it does not exclude it from the list of issues handled by the government. Local government is just one level of government, as opposed to central government. By implication, all such issues as those handled government at whatever level are issues of state concern and just because they are handled by local government and not the central government, it does not make them non-political. This securitisation framework seems not to consider that point as important.

The framing of Securitization Theory would probably have benefitted from some consideration for the real-world setting in which policy issues are ranked in a hierarchy ranging from those that fall within the scope of what has been called 'low politics' to those that belong to 'high politics'. This, in our view, is superior to the 'politicised'/'non-politicised'/'securitised' sliding scale, which, in any case is logically incoherent. By 'high politics' we mean matters to do with the existence of the state, particularly, 'issues of state security and sovereignty' (Clemens, 1998:539), while 'low politics' involves issues that 'tend to be dealt with by the bureaucracy employing standard operating procedures' (Evan and Newnham, 1998:310).

3.4.2. ***Securitization or Threat Construction?***

Typical of all approaches to analysis that come under the rubric of constructivism, securitisation has also sought to stress the obvious that one would normally have expected to require no emphasis: that all social phenomena and all objects of consciousness develop in social contexts. As initially described by Waever in 1989,

> One can view 'security' as that which is in language theory called a speech act:…it is the utterance itself that is the act… By saying 'security' a state representative moves the particular case into a specific area; claiming a special right to use the means necessary to block this development (1989).[56]

He reiterates the same statement by noting that,

> The major premise of 'Securitisation Theory' is that security is a 'speech act'. Accordingly, the very uttering the word 'security' is tantamount to something being done. 'It is by labelling something a security issue that it becomes one' (2004: 13).

Wæver traces the emergence of the Copenhagen School to the debates of the 1970s and 1980s dwelling on the question of wide versus narrow conception of security in which the so-called traditionalists insisted that '…indiscriminate broadening of the definition of security threatens to make the concept so elastic as to render it useless as an analytical tool' (Ayoob, 1997:121; 1995:9-10). To counter that view, the would-be founders of the Copenhagen School argued that the conception of security lay in understanding what makes a security issue a security issue. Thus Wæver noted that, '[T]he real functions of the term, the powers of the concept, are found where it is employed in political practice….Language users implicitly follow rules for what is seen as meaningful statements' (Wæver, 2004). To understand what security is takes only '…analysing actual linguistic practices to see what regulates discourse', so he adds.

What we have in Securitization Theory is a typical case of the pitfalls of the postmodernist, who one can easily fit into Phillip Guedella's characterisation of Mahan innovative thinking on sea power: '…if Mahan discovered nothing in particular, he discovered it very well'.[57] As part of the postmodernist discourse and when looked at particularly in the context of its usefulness in shedding light on

---

[56] Cited in Buzan, 1991; p.17.

[57] Cited in Millis; 1981, p.162.

the challenges of the underdeveloped countries of the Global South, Securitisation Theory fits in well with David Simon's evaluation of Postmodernism as:

> [Y]et another fashionable Northern paradigm, which finds expression mainly in aesthetic/architectural terms, and as playful, leisured heterodoxes and new forms of consumption centred on individualism which can best be described as self-indulgence by the well-off. Such pre-occupations are seen as irrelevant to the Global South, if not actually harmful in terms of distracting attention from survival and 'development' agendas and the macro-processes which impact on them (2008: 121).

The Copenhagen School may only have managed to found an elaborate and quasi-intellectual expression for the cynicism with which politically engaged constituents the world over, hold the elite who commit countries for all sorts of reasons to costly ventures, including warfare, that may have little to do with protecting broad national interest or even countering any specific threat. A writer in the securitisation tradition has thus noted that, '…we think of something as a security issue because the elite, such as political leaders, have convinced us that it represents a threat to our very survival' (Collins, 2007:6). The question that should have been posed by members of the Copenhagen School is to do with what it is in the audiences of security elite that makes them sufficiently gullible as to be 'convinced'. There are many ways of accounting for this without having to resort to abstruse theorising. Partly, the reasons lie with the phenomenon that was summed up succinctly by Hermann Goering during the Nuremberg trials in his observation that,

> It is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it is a democracy, or a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communist dictatorship. Voice or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of their leaders. That is easy. All you have to tell them is that they

> are being attacked and denounce the peacemakers for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same in any country.[58]

Waever and the Copenhagen School, just like Goering are simply shedding light on the credulousness or even passivity of political constituents, or even plain abuse of power by those entrusted with the management of public affairs, by the use of manipulation and fabrication of illusions of imminent catastrophe in order to satisfy certain agendas that may have little to do with the collective good, akin to the '…insincerity in both domestic and foreign affairs which permeates not only avowed motives but also probably the conscious motives of the actors themselves' (Schumpeter, 1951:51). That is a timeless tendency as Schumpeter further notes in regard to the Roman Empire, in much the same way as he would if he observed the elite of any of the contemporary powers:

> There was no corner of the known world where some interest was not alleged to be in danger or under actual attack. If the interests were not Roman, they were those of Rome's allies; and if Rome had no allies, then allies would be invented. When it was utterly impossible to contrive such an interest—why, then it was the national honour that had been insulted. The fight was always invested with an aura of legality. Rome was always being attacked by evil-minded neighbours, always fighting for a breathing-space. The whole world was pervaded by a host of enemies, and it was manifestly Rome's duty to guard against their indubitably aggressive designs.[59]

It is according to that thinking that some have interpreted the ease with which, for example, the 'Soviet threat' of the Cold War era was very easily substituted for by the threat of 'Rogue states' following the former's demise, let alone the envisaging of an approaching 'clash of civilisations'. Similarly, such terms as 'the threat of peace' have been coined by critiques of militarism and the Military-Industrial Complex to reflect the intricacies of the processes of decision making in the arena of strategic security that 'Securitisation Theory' accounts for only secondarily and

---

58 Cited in Kennedy, 2008, p.158

59 ibid

even then, unintentionally. At the same time, the process of governmental decision making is probably never as offhand as it is portrayed by securitization theory.

3.4.3. ***Securitisation Theory as mutilation of the Austinian Speech Act***

Closer scrutiny of the basic outline of Securitization Theory reveals its exclusive (if contrived) link with Speech Act Theory (hereinafter SAT), from which it claims to derive its parentage. It may not be far-fetched to suggest that that the academics of the Copenhagen School coined what they considered to be a novel analytical approach but found themselves faced with the difficulty of formalising it and lending it a modicum of theoretical clout. The solution to that challenge seems to have been found in linking their new theory to an existing authority, preferably in linguistics, a field whose elasticity seems to serve the purposes of most theorists with connections to postmodernism. We argue that the gist and thrust of SAT has little to do with the relativity of constructivism; as well as the subjectivism that characterises postmodernism, as exemplified by Securitization Theory.

An examination of the underlying premises of SAT would enable one to establish whether its adoption to the purposes of the constructivism of the securitisation framework helps in any way to furnish it with a philosophical anchor; and whether indeed securitisation theorists have put SAT to legitimate use. With 'Securitisation Theory' in mind, it can be made as a general observation that the many schools of thought that come under the banner of constructivism will continue to face the insurmountable challenge of identifying an epistemological trellis on which to hang their theoretical formulations, a fact we can account for by pointing out the rationalist pedigree of constructivism and other approaches that lay claim to being ideational. Whether they are aware of it or not, the subscribers

to those schools are, by virtue of their rationalist and by implication,[60] their antipositivist roots, inherently eclectic, which condemns rationalism and all its offshoots, to clasping at any theoretical formulation in sight, that can provide a badly need conceptual bulwark, even when such a formulation may in fact be, *sensu stricto*, suited to a rival school of thought.

SAT was initially developed by JL Austin over the course of his brief career, intending it to be an improvement on positivist philosophy of language and this is where one already identifies the fundamental pitfall of any rationalist formulation that seeks to appropriate SAT. Austin's effort to formulate SAT was focused on enabling positivist linguistics to cover additional uses of language other than the mere making of truth-apt factual assertions. It was Austin's view that up to his time, the exclusive employment of language was for purposes of description, also called by him the 'communicative', 'declarative' or 'informative-reporting' function. To Austin, this was an underuse of language. He therefore set out to develop a theory that could account for other uses of language that fell outside the scope of communicative or informative reporting. His most important statement on SAT appeared in a posthumous publication, 'How to Do Things with Words', which as we show, has been abused in the development of 'Securitisation Theory'.

SAT was designed to cover utterances that were neither descriptive (constative), nor nonsensical, such as those one would encounter in most metaphysics. SAT covers utterances that '…have, as it happens, humdrum verbs in the first person singular present indicative active' (Austin, 1955:5); but whose utterance '…is, or is a part of, the doing of an action…'[61] It is important to note that Austin' underlines the verb as the figure of speech around which his theory was centred, a point that has been disregarded in its entirety by the Copenhagen

---

60 It should be noted that, by referring to rationalism here and elsewhere in the study we mean the view that '...the only necessary truths about the world which are known to us are known through thought and not through experience' (Ayer, 1958:73).

61 ibid

School. The examples employed by Austin emphasize that crucial point; but interestingly, Waever employs the same examples as he outlines the background to 'Securitisation Theory' but only stops at that. Waever, like Austin in his original statement on SAT uses such statements as 'I do', as uttered in the course of a marriage ceremony, 'I name this ship the Queen Elizabeth', 'I give and bequeath' in making a statement of inheritance, 'I bet', among other expressions. By making those utterances, it is recognised that the speaker is not describing anything or merely announcing what is being done, but is actually 'doing'. By the act of speech, an action is being performed (hence the 'Speech Act'); and just as well, since the very process of speech that interested Austin centres on an action symbol, or verb ('give', 'do', 'bet', 'bequeath') and no other figure of speech. It is that which makes Austin call such utterances collectively, performative utterances, or just 'performatives', '…in which to say something is to do something, or in saying something we do something…' [62] This is what Austin refers to as the illocutionary act, the building block of a speech act, to be distinguished from performing an act by saying or locution.

It is necessary to stress that distinction as a way of pointing out where the proponents of 'Securitisation Theory' start to misunderstand SAT. What has been taken to be the 'speech act' is the mere physical act of saying something or making an utterance, or as Austin has called it, making a full unit of speech. This is merely of interest for grammarians and phoneticians or even speech pathologists, but not in any way philosophers. Moreover, the securitisation theorists further diverge from the real nature of the illocutionary act by applying it to a term such as 'security' that happens to be an inappropriate figure of speech, given that it is a mass noun, and therefore does not refer to any action. As an example of the sense in which a speech act is misconstrued by securitisation theorists merely as the physical action of making an utterance, Waever writes that,

---

[62] Ibid, p.94

> In this usage, security is not of interest as a sign that refers to something more real; the utterance itself is the act. By saying it something is done (as in betting, giving a promise, naming a ship). By uttering 'security', a state representative moves a particular development into a specific area and thereby claims a special right to use whatever means are necessary to block it (1995:55).

Clearly, there is no logical equivalence between uttering the symbol 'security' and uttering a statement such as 'I bet' or I suggest'. It is important to highlight this point because by demonstrating the essential unseemliness of 'Securitisation Theory', it may be possible to eliminate it as a putative conceptual tool given that, just like the other constructivist approaches it only contributes to the cluttering of the field of security analysis.

What we see then is that, for all cases of illocutionary acts which interest the speech act theorist, '…the issuing of the utterance is the performing of an action -it is not normally thought of as just saying something.'[63] In line with that, Austin identifies two characteristics of utterances that fall under the category of performatives. First, as hinted at above, those utterances do not 'describe' or 'report' or constate anything at all and therefore, cannot be 'true or false'. Secondly, the uttering of the sentence is, or is a part of, the doing of an action, which again would not normally be described as merely saying something. Looked at in basic linguistic terms, those two attributes shed some light on the kernel of a speech act as an embodiment of an action, a state or an occurrence, in other words, a verb. In their urge to craft a sophisticated theory, the Copenhagen School have disregarded those two constitutive attributes of all speech acts.[64]

---

[63] Ibid, p. 7

[64] A later reformulation of SAT by John Searle, one of Austin's students further highlights the shortcomings of the securitisation framework. Searle furnishes a classification of illocutionary acts that literally eliminates the speech act as understood by the Copenhagen School. His classification consists of five clusters namely, assertives which commit a speaker to the truth of something as stated in a proposition such as reciting a creed; directives that require the hearer to take a particular action e.g., an order or a request; commissives, committing a speaker to a future action as would be the case with promises and oaths; expressives which carry the speaker's attitudes and

Given that SAT is not merely about playing around with words, but rather, about the effects on human behaviour of the deployment of certain verbs, 'How to do things with Verbs' would have probably been a more appropriate title for Austin's book, not least, because it would have immunised his important work against what has now become widespread misinterpretation.

In the process of extending the scope of SAT to make it cover the securitisation discourse, the Copenhagen School has in our view, erroneously assumed that Austin's attempt to give conceptual life to utterances that fall outside the fold of the description of objective reality implies that he was attempting to craft a theory that can be put to the service of the relativist and subjective doctrines that dominate constructivism. The Copenhagen School is not alone in holding this mistaken assumption but it even then it appears to have given rise to the most widespread gross misinterpretation of Austin's theory, and to that extent, it may have no role to play in buttressing frameworks such as SSR.

SSR as the New Variant of Civil-Military Relations

4.1 Introduction

Although SSR has been generally promoted as a novel field of policy and scholarship, even the most cursory examination of the issues that dominate its agenda reveals it to be a rebranded version of the civil-military relations (CMR) discourse of the two decades spanning from the 1950s, but without the sparse theory that the latter had managed to garner during its heyday. One can only speculate that practitioners and policy makers in the field of development seem to have wished to distance themselves from the many controversies and

---

emotions e.g. congratulations; and declaratives which have the impact changing the reality in accordance with the message declaration, e.g. christenings, solemnisations of marriages. None of these cases is an act of mere of utterance of just any figure of speech as would be suggested by the Copenhagen School.

incoherencies of CMR theory. However, the attempt by SSR promoters to distance themselves from CMR can only go so far, as evidenced by the similarity between the vision of standard SSR programmes and the goals that CMR was intended to achieve.

Mission statements of the multitude of SSR-related NGOs that have emerged in the last decade and a half demonstrate overlaps with the issues that preoccupied civil-military theorists. For example, the Geneva-based DCAF (Democratic Control of Armed Forces) one of the leading promoters of SSR lists among its areas of concern, civil society capacity building, intelligence governance, parliamentary oversight, defence reform and human rights and the rule of law among others. Similarly, the United Kingdom Department for International Development refers to '….helping to secure a security sector of appropriate scale that is properly accountable to democratic, civilian authorities.'[65] Such are the concerns that have lain at the heart of the civil military relations debate ever since it emerged as a field of policy and scholarship in the 1950s.

As Chuter (2006) has observed, SSR '…is the bastard child of Civil-Military Relations and Development Studies'. That parentage remains evident in much of the debate on SSR especially in its application to Sub-Saharan African countries that have been ravaged by long-term civil strife. There is no doubt as to the inception and mission of development studies; however, it is questionable whether the socio-political circumstances and pressures that led to the emergence civil-military relations as a field of policy and scholarship are ever put into consideration by those that continue calling upon its precepts and assumptions to fashion new frameworks in development policy. It is therefore necessary to give a brief background of the early beginnings of the CMR debate to establish whether there will be much to gain by its direct importation in whatever guise, into the security

65 Speech by Secretary of State for International Development, Clare Short at the Centre for Defence Studies, Kings College London: 'Security Sector Reform and the Elimination of Poverty', 9 March 1999·

and development debate; and whether indeed that may not further compound the extensive conceptual muddle of the discourse on security and development.

The civil–military relations debate made its initial appearance in the United States after World War II when political scientists started taking serious interest in the military institution. That interest was prompted by fears over the likely consequences of a sense of triumphalism and self-assertiveness by the American military in the wake of their successes in Europe and beyond, but more so, the anxieties caused by the assertiveness of individual generals. Closer to the American homeland, there was also the factor of the ubiquity of military regimes particularly in Latin America. Furthermore, the years that followed the end of WWI saw the emergence on the world scene of a set of newly independent, if highly unstable states in Asia and Africa which did not take long to fall under the charge of military juntas, as civilian governments succumbed to coups d'état. Under such circumstances, scholars and commentators grew curious over whether there was a global tendency for the military to aspire for political power. It is then that policy analysts, scholars and practitioners in the United States were prompted to speculate that the spectre of praetorianism was hovering over their motherland.[66] The questions and soul searching prompted scholars to carry systematic analysis of the nature of the relations between the armed forces and the civil authority and hence, the inception of CMR as a branch of scholarship and public policy.

From its birth, CMR has been saddled by major deficiencies, three of which need highlighting. First, as Huntington (1957: vii) has noted, '[t]he study of civil-military relations has suffered from too little theorizing.' This view is supported

---

66 In 1949, the first Hoover Commission noted that, one of the purposes for strengthening the 'means of exercising civilian control' over the defense establishment was to 'safeguard our democratic traditions against militarism', a tone that was reflected four years later by the warning sounded by the report of the Rockefeller Committee on defense organization in 1953. That committee noted that, while it was important to devise means of securing the country in a cost-effective way that had to be achieved 'without danger to our free institutions, based on the fundamental principle of civilian control of the Military Establishment.'

by Bland in his observation that, if CMR theory is to have universal appeal and utility, it:

> Should address the problems of civil-military relations within one model; be transferable to any state/political model – e.g., democracy or autocracy; explain changes in civil-military relations within states over time and those caused by specific circumstances and events. Finally the theory should be falsifiable (1999: 9).

The paradox of Huntington's observation though is that, it is him that has received most criticism over the deficiencies of his pioneering work on civil military relations which gave no coverage whatsoever for the reality in the countries whose historical experience was not in accord with that of the liberal democracies, most especially the United States, his major concern. For example, Allbright draws our attention to Huntington's 'sketchy' references to Japan. He notes that,

> The concrete data base from which Huntington generalized was essentially Western, and especially American, experience. Although he did talk about civil-military relations in Japan, he used the Japanese case simply to show the applicability of his theory to non-Western contexts; he did not employ Japanese experience either to derive his conceptualization or to test it (1980:557).

The same could be said of the coverage that Huntington gave to the communist states and others in the Third World (particularly states presided over by leftist guerrilla organisations) that got their inspiration from the ideals of Leninism and Maoism. Huntington's subsequent study of 1968 incisively addressed some of those initial deficiencies but that did not placate some of his determined critics. Odom (1973) and Colton (1979) went as far as suggesting alternative concepts to give coverage to the cases initially overlooked by Huntington. Odom proposed the institutional congruence approach to specifically address the Russian historical experience while Colton proposed the participatory model in which civilian authorities accord the military substantial say in political affairs to win military

support.[67] The point here is that, any meta-theory or policy that is largely or exclusively informed by Huntington's earlier notions of civil-military is destined to become a round peg in a square hole especially when it is applied to non-western contexts. This is indeed the prospect that confronts SSR.

Secondly, the CMR framework is largely informed by the notion of civilian supremacy over the military, a key principle of the Anglo-American system of government and an aspiration whose validity has been a subject of numerous questions both in the policy and scholarly domains in the Anglo-American world itself as will be demonstrated later. Furthermore, it is based on the problematic assumption that all there is to statecraft are two main actors: the military usurpers and the civilian politicians, both locked up in a mortal standoff in a zero sum game over which camp has to be at the helm of politics. Accordingly 'civilian control' is taken to be the norm, but also a conceptual substitute for civil supremacy while any contact that the military attempts to make with politics is relegated to the pathological.

Thirdly, there is also the assumption that civil-military relations are controlled by a dichotomous and adversarial relationship between soldiers and elected politicians, or the civil authority. This commonly-held view in does not reflect the actual dynamics in the real world, of the relations between the military and non-military bureaucrats, not least, the common purpose for which they exist, namely innovating and executing public policy. Even in the mature liberal democracies, '…civil-military relations exist as a type of anarchy where neither the civil authority nor the military can dominate the other' (Bland: 2000).[68] Decision-making about policy, defence management, the employment of forces, and in the

---

[67] Both cases are cited in Allbright, 1980.

[68] Rebecca Schiff (1995) has gone further to propose the 'Concordance theory' based on the idea of an emerging lack of distinctness between civilian and military institutions in the context of the United States. She has suggested that separation of civilian and military structures is theoretically flawed and gone beyond the common dichotomy between the civilian and the military sector by introducing the citizenry as the third pole of civil-military relations.

control of armed forces among other activities, is a joint undertaking. Current formulations of SSR have tended to disregard that reality and instead, portrayed the civil (or in their parlance, the 'civilian') and the military spheres as two opposing camps, or even political parties, relentlessly jostling for executive power. Chuter has summed up this assumption succinctly by observing that, the vision of old CMR

> [A]ssumes only two actors (the military, often in practice the Army, and civilian politicians), and it saw their relationship as adversarial, such that there is a constant battle by civilians to "control" the military. This in turn meant that the two played a zero-sum game, in which the essential premise for any system of civilian control is the minimisation of military power…It also assumed that there were only two possible states – civilian democracy or military rule (2009:4).

Such questionable assumptions have generally been put to great use in the conceptualisation of SSR as an approach to institutional change and have without doubt and have contributed significantly to its deficiencies both as a policy tool and as an analytical category.

4.2 Reflection on African Militaries: Analysis or Demonology

Undoubtedly, the SSR framework's conception of civil supremacy has been negatively influenced and probably, or even been distorted, by the history of prolonged military domination of politics especially in the less developed countries; yet that domination may not have much to do with either the strength of the military itself or the significance of the civil domain. Whatever the actual drivers of that perceived or supposed dominance of the military, most attempts to move away from the resulting legacies have generally been deemed to imply or even necessitate role reversal: Yesterday's master (if not monster) should be today's bondsman.

The frequency with which the armed forces of the underdeveloped world are characterised as detestable and beast-like partly reflects this trend as one

would notice from the captions of CMR analyses by Africanist scholars. Ngoma talks of 'Caging the Lions' (2004), Kieh and Agbese (2004) talk of 'The Military Albatross and Politics in Africa' just as Omoigui in the same pages refers to the military as 'the most perfidious institution ever created by humans' (2004:141). Other unflattering epithets come from Nwagwu who characterises the civil-military predicament in Nigeria as 'Taming the Tiger' (2002), echoing Luckham's 'Taming the Monster' (1998); while one colourful commentary on Nigerian politics makes references to how, '[A]cting as a mega-Godzilla edifice, the African military has become mainly transmogrified into a Frankenstein monster….' (Afigbo and Falola, 2004:44).

Such bleak assessments as those above may be the result of a misreading of the actual content of civil-military relations of the Western democracies which have had a formative influence on much of the debate on the relationship between the armed forces and the political authority. The point that is often missed is that, even in the West, the cradle of CMR theorising, there is no unanimity on the actual nature of the contours of that relationship particularly in regard to 'civilian control', one key element of the civil-military relations debate that has been assiduously elevated to the pedestal by the promoters of the SSR framework. Bland's remarks in that regard can shed some light. He has noted that, '…contrary to the expectations of academics and most citizens, the armed forces….are not so much "controlled" by the civil authority as they are accommodated' (Bland, 2000).

Even as the notion of 'control' in civil-military relations continues to be questioned (Bland, 1999; Burk, 2002; Feaver, 1996; Schiff, 1995; Kemp and Hudlin, 1997), SSR promoters are still tied to its negative and adversarial connotation which implies feuding, subjugation or even taming as recounted above. Any notion of civil-military relations that is couched in those terms can only be a source of deleterious pulling and hauling and turf wars between key sectors of the state which would at best create paralysis and at worst generate acrimony that would invite fresh rounds of even more determined praetorianism. That can only accentuate the insecurity that programmes such as SSR promise to stem.

Those contentions are not helped in any way by the underlying view within CMR theory that assumes, as already alluded to, the existence of two varieties of statecraft: civilian democracy and military dictatorship.

SSR has inherited wholesale those tensions and deficiencies from CMR. To fully appreciate their impact, one has to look closely at the principle of civil supremacy, particularly its corrupted re-interpretation that refers to 'civilian control'. As Kemp and Hudlin have observed, the principle of civil supremacy has two angles to it and these do not receive due to recognition within the SSR debate. First, the ends of government policy are to be set by the political authority with the military being limited to decisions about means (1992:8). According to that arrangement, the military are to be policy implementers and not policy makers. The second part reinforces the latter by emphasizing the role of the civilian leadership in deciding the boundary between ends and means, and hence the line between civilian and military responsibility. It is within that context that the essential premise for any system of civilian control has become the minimisation of military power, and since military power is assumed to be a function of personnel strength and the proportion of national wealth that is allocated to the military, then civilian power can be bolstered by slashing personnel numbers and diminishing defence budgets. As Chuter has pointed out,

> CMR theorists had, after all, seen the security sector as a threat, and once that threat was removed by making the military smaller and poorer the problem was essentially solved. Development theorists saw security expenditure as a drain on resources which could be better used elsewhere: that expenditure should be reduced or even eliminated. Neither group saw, except in the most abstract and theoretical of terms, any useful function for the security sector (2006:6).

The foregoing premises of the notion of civil supremacy have an inherent fallacy that requires spotlighting. In the first instance, ends and means referred to above are relative. As Kemp and Hudlin have observed, '[t]he only absolute end of any individual or group is that chief end (whether simple or compound) for the sake of

which every other action is chosen' (1992:9). As Kemp and Hudlin further argue, means and ends form an interminable chain of interconnectedness that could almost leave no room for boundary drawing. While raising a military force is an end relative to the means necessary to achieve it (levying taxes to finance it and recruiting personnel to man it) and a means to the ends for the sake of which an army is required, i.e., national defence. This provides enormous leeway for military officials to take actions and defend them by arguing that they were doing their bit while leaving decisions about ends of policy to the civilian leadership and whatever decision they took were decisions about the most effective means of implementing policy and not a violation of the principle of civil supremacy or civilian control.

4.3 SSR and CMR: Hide Bound Levelers or Normative Homogenizers?

4.3.1. ***Diversity of Military Culture***

As Burk has written, '… war fighting still determines the central beliefs, values and complex symbolic formations that define military culture' (1999). As would be fair to expect, '…elements of military culture derive from the purpose or tasks for which societies raise, support, and maintain modern militaries, for instance, waging war on behalf of the nation-state and, if needed, enforcing domestic order' (Snider, 1999:5). In that sense, war fighting and the associated functional commitment of armed forces the world over, namely the management of violence, lends to all such organizations a level of isomorphism (Born *et al.*, 2006: 243). However, that isomorphism together with the common cliché that 'a soldier is a soldier' has certain limits. There are still important grounds to discourage the temptation to put all militaries on a par with each other. This is what we see in the form of the SSR framework's broad statements on the character of military

organizations, their general taxonomy, organizational culture, discipline and relationship with other sectors of government.

The character of armed forces of every nation is dependent on a range of factors, including the political history of host countries, the strategic environment and the general level of social and economic development, as already demonstrated. On the question of history, Luckham cautions that,

> While borrowed categories may facilitate comparative analysis, they make it harder to understand African states and military formations in African terms. Moreover, they are symptomatic of the absence of a historical perspective in the work of the great majority of the social scientists (including the present author) who have analyzed contemporary African military establishments (1994:26).

For those and other reasons, one has to be circumspect with any paradigm or project that purports to furnish a universal template for military reform particularly in conflict-ridden countries. The very context of violent conflict or receding conflict that invites SSR amongst other 'post-conflict' interventions would require that the circumstances of target countries be looked at in their own specificity. Even the peacetime military forces of the most developed nations display marked disparities that would make it inadvisable to bundle them into common categories be it on conceptual or management grounds. For example, the traits of the militaries of countries that attained democracy over many centuries of political evolution and their relations with the civil authorities are distinguishable from those countries where political modernization has taken place over a short spell of time. Even when Russia attains the same levels of political liberalism as Britain, her recent history of revolutionary change will remain an enduring influence on that country's institutions and politics for many decades to come. The same applies with all other countries such as China whose path to modernity has been via the route of revolution.

Within Europe, there are significant differences between the institutional set up of countries that underwent catch up modernization, such as Germany and

Italy, and those like Britain and the Nordic states that modernized their institutions over a period of many centuries. Britain, France, Germany or Japan may share a common political heritage of liberalism but it does not follow that their civil and military institutions have common traits and it would be a misjudgment to bracket them in a single conceptual category. It is such distinctions between the cultures and doctrines of armed forces that underpin concerns on the limitations of interoperability in multinational operations. For similar reasons, placing the armed forces of several dozen African countries into a single category as is the case in the SSR debate and in civil-military relations literature makes gratuitous assumptions about the essential characteristics of those institutions and can only result in false inferences.

To illustrate that point further, it is necessary to take closer, but general look at African military forces with the view of highlighting the variations in their cultural attributes at national level. There are contrasts that arise from whether a particular country was colonized or not and for those that were, there are major dissimilarities that arise from which particular imperial power was the colonial master. Those two factors have had a significant impact on the institutional set up and political evolution more especially for those countries that owe their existence to imperial expansion of European powers. Within the armed forces, there are, as a result, country and regional variations in ideological orientation, post-colonial relations with the civil authorities, recruitment, training, combat techniques, organizational and operational doctrine and in some cases, their discipline. These factors form the context of reform and cannot be treated as irrelevancies by any reform initiative that is worth the value that may be ascribed to it by its promoters. Moreover, the colonial experience also varied. While some countries were 'protectorates', others were settler colonies; while some especially in Francophone Africa were provinces of the metropolitan authority. The point here is that, diversity of military forms and styles of civil military relations has arisen from the intensity of the colonization process, as much as it has, from the idiosyncrasies of the various colonial powers.

Regarding the intensity of the colonial enterprise and its implications for the future texture of civil-military relations, it has to be noted that while certain regions of Africa were preferred for settler colonialism particularly the semi temperate Mediterranean fringe and the Southern cone, others were simply referred to as protectorates. The process of decolonization in the latter countries was occasioned by broad mobilization of local forces and in some instances, an intense military struggle against entrenched propertied settler classes which in all cases had their own military organizations. That historical experience of armed national liberation has had a formative impact on the military institutions of countries such as Angola, Guinea Bissau, Mozambique, Namibia, Zimbabwe and South Africa in the South.[69] Most of the countries in the former category (i.e., former settler territories) have relatively stable civil-military relations especially if the latter is judged in terms of the military's disinclination to usurp political power. It can be stated that the military coup d'état is an anathema in the southern cone of the African mainland and this tends to make redundant any reformist discourse such as SSR that takes for granted the existence of real or assumed acrimony between the armed forces and the political authority.

On the other hand, much of East, West and Central Africa experienced protectorate or trustee-type of colonialism. Most of the countries experienced a peaceable decolonization process and '…inherited soldiers, equipment, and organizational structures from Europe' (Crocker, 1974:267). It is these regions of Africa that have exhibited the most crisis-ridden civil-military relations, the highest frequency of military intervention in politics and the most intractable forms of instability. These would probably be the regions from which to look for candidates for SSR. A section of Chapter Seven takes a more detailed look at the factors that determined the style of recruitment into the colonial military forces and its implications for post-colonial civil-military relations; and indirectly, how recruitment philosophies set the stage for the future relevance (or lack thereof) of future

[69] In North Africa, Algeria fits the same pattern.

reform as understood in peacebuilding. What is necessary at this stage is to lay out broadly a general typology of the armed forces on the African continent and point out generally what this implies for the external actors who wish to engage with those armed forces for whatever purpose, reform inclusive.

4.3.2. ***Overlooked Contrasts: Anglophone Vs Francophone Africa***

Depending on which colonial power exercised overrule over any one Sub-Saharan African country, national armed forces have taken on distinct cultures, some reflecting even if superficially, the traditions and values of the former colony. The historical and contemporary contrasts between the countries that were under British and French jurisdiction are a typical case. As Luckham has noted in regard to the military, their creation was '…part of an institutional transfer of western paradigms of governance, along with the Westminster model and Gaullist presidentialism' (Luckham, 1994:1). Those legacies have had a lasting influence on the variations in the political stability and patterns of civil military relations of the former colonies. The historical and empirical differences are, arguably, more-than-subtle yet they rarely receive sufficient attention in the debates and initiatives related to the shaping of the trajectory of the economic and political development of the countries in question. Commenting particularly on the armed forces, Crocker has observed that,

> [T]here are major and little-noted differences between the English- and the French-speaking African experience in the military….which have continuing implications, and….there is international significance in the background, nature, and functions of African armies (1974:266).

One of the major calculations of the French as they created African national armies in the territories under their control was to ensure that even after independence they would work closely with French units and effectively serve as branches of the French army overseas (Martin, 1995:13). Comparing the militaries of the former

British colonies in East and West Africa with those of the former French colonies, Gutteridge has observed, that, '[i]n the French-speaking Africa the situation was different. Many Africans recruited in the different territories had in effect joined the French Army and were French soldiers' (1969:41). In some cases, they were even considered to be French citizens as it turned out for the Guineans who were demobilized at the end of the Algerian emergency. Guinea refused to receive them and sent them back to France.[70] It would therefore be reasonable to assume that the reform of the military forces of those countries would have to first-and-foremost receive France's tacit approval and co-operation. The tone and spirit of current formulations of SSR does not seem to have been conceived with enough room to allow for that possibility.

But further still, SSR does not seem to have been crafted with sufficient flexibility to enable its promoters to contend with the reality that it might be a therapy for a malaise which may in reality not be universal, thus making it likely that the initiative may be unwelcome in certain quarters. Universalist and idealistic reform templates such as SSR have tended to disregard the impact, and enduring influence of diverse colonial experiences and how these have shaped prevailing institutional architectures. This renders any talk about 'context sensitivity' hollow; but more importantly the overemphasis of the immediate context at the expense of the historical factors that account for present realities can only lower the chances for success of reformist initiatives.

For those reasons, the contrasts between styles of colonialism need to receive due consideration. We emphasize Britain and France because the two were the preeminent (if not rival) colonial powers whose extensive presence on the continent provides enough scope for comparison. Bernard Porter (2006) has dubbed the British approach to colonialism and empire building as 'absent-minded imperialism', a term that mirrors Britain's policy of 'salutary neglect' towards her American colonies as described by Edmund Burke in his 1775 speech in the House

---

[70] Ibid, p.43

of Commons.[71] Much later, a key official of imperial Britain Lord Salisbury captured Burke's and Porter's characterizations of imperial Britain in his comparison of British and French approaches to Empire building in West Africa. He noted that,

> The colonial policy of Great Britain and France in West Africa has been widely different. France…has pursued steadily the aim of establishing herself on the upper Niger…by a large and constant expenditure, and by a succession of military expeditions. Great Britain, on the other hand, has followed a policy of advance by commercial enterprise. She has not attempted to compete with the military operations of her neighbour.[72]

To Crocker Britain focus was on the need to '…minimize the costs of imperial policing through limited integration and standardization of African colonial units at the regional level.'[73] France on the other hand pursued a policy of creating what has been dubbed in Parisian political circles as, '*le pre carre'* or 'our own backyard'.[74] To borrow once again from Crocker, compared to the French colonial forces, those in the British jurisdictions were

> [L]oose amalgams of local militia and constabulary forces were not seen as a reservoir of imperial defence manpower, but as the guardians of a self-policing peripheral zone. Integration with other colonial troops or with British forces was virtually non-existent.[75]

We stress the point of contrasting styles of colonialism because it had a far-reaching impact on the professionalism of the armed forces much later on in the post-colonial phase; let alone engendering anxieties that have inspired many SSR

---

[71] The Works, 1834, p. 186.

[72] Cited in Kanya-Forstner, 1971, p.409.

[73] Crocker, 1974, p.273.

[74] Prunier, 1975, p.103.

[75] Ibid.

initiatives. If reform initiatives are to have the desired impact, some of those historical factors will require to be examined closely. So far, that is not the case.

As already hinted above, the form taken by the processes and struggles that preceded independence has had a crucial bearing on post-colonial politics in general and the armed forces in particular especially in cases where independence was the outcome of armed confrontation between nationalist groups and the colonial military. The character of civil-military relations in the Lusophone countries, all of which experienced wars of liberation, differs sharply from countries where independence was attained through a peaceful transfer of power. An SSR programme in Mozambique would have to recognize the fundamental differences between that country's military traditions and the general institutional set up of a next-door neighbour like Malawi or South Africa. Similarly, one would have to recognize the vast differences between Angola and Democratic Republic of Congo. In addition to the former Portuguese colonies, this category also includes Zimbabwe, Namibia, Eritrea, and Southern Sudan. Perlmutter has categorized these countries as 'national liberation movement nation-states' in his classification of modern nation states and their military organizations (1977:29). These are states that are led by a party-military alliance that overthrew non-indigenous rule. They are not characterized by the instability and state fragility that is implicit to the assumptions of SSR and related frameworks. As Perlmutter notes, their regimes are fairly robust and are presided over by ideological movements whose elites straddle both the political and military arenas to the point of nullifying the Huntingtonian civil-military relations narrative on which the SSR framework is based. Huntington's earlier conception of civil military relations did not have in mind the party-military alliance that characterizes the regimes presided over by liberation movements. Allbright's indictment on Huntington with respect to communist states equally applies to post-liberation states. He notes that '…the experiences of these states simply do not accord with Huntington's conceptual notions' going on further to say that, such states '…cast grave doubt on the comparative validity of the prevailing view of civil-military relations' (1980:557).

That has a lot to say for SSR framework which owes its DNA to the notion of civil-military relations that dates back to the theory's initial launching.

Note has to be made at this point on the characteristics of the post liberation regime which arguably invalidate the liberalist notion of CMR as ingrained in the SSR framework. A principal feature of CMR theory is the supposed dichotomous and adversarial relationship between the military and civilians. As Allbright (1980:560) has observed, post-liberation regimes are characterized by '…a high degree of congruence in the political values of the military and party leaderships...', which directly implies an '…absence of clear-cut distinctions between military and civilian roles [and] also removed military professionalism as a source of conflict…'. Perlmutter and Leogrande have similarly characterized that arrangement as 'coalitional, symbiotic or fused' (1982:778). That reality pulls the rug from under the feet of a reformist narrative that has as its cherished goal the attainment or enforcement of civilian control over the military. Undoubtedly, donor-driven institutional reform initiatives, with their characteristic normative bias in favour of the rituals, and not the substance of liberal politics, and a disinclination to recognize the existence of other, albeit transitional political dispensations, are bound to encounter major challenges in states ruled by liberation movements as will be demonstrated later on in this study in reference to the United Kingdom's attempts to implement SSR in Uganda.

There is also the group of countries whose prolonged period of political turmoil resulted in the emergence of and ascendance to the political helm of mainly left wing guerrilla movements along the same lines as the national liberation movement. In this category of countries, the politico-military organizations deposed regimes presided over by indigenous governments. Ethiopia is one such country, but not a typical case given that it is not an ex-colony. Typical cases in this category inherited colonially constituted military forces that disintegrated after being defeated either through foreign invasion or by domestic insurgencies or both. Included in this category is Uganda and Rwanda.

In conclusion, it has to be noted that right from its inception, SSR has been an exercise in privileging values over facts. Indeed, many of the SSR promoters credit it as being a normative initiative aimed at entrenching the Western liberal norms of individual rights, 'good governance' and the rule of law. That approach is already being viewed with skepticism as has become clear within the SSR community. Hendrickson and Ball who deserve to be quoted extensively have observed that:

> [M]uch of what has been characterized as SSR 'research' has in fact been more influenced by a normative framework and a standard set of assumptions about how 'reforming' countries should organise and operate their security sectors. The strong emphasis on norms such as democratization, civilian control of the military, a clear division between internal and external security functions and a strong civil society role in management of security policy can detract from good (sic) empirical analysis of how security institutions actually function. As a consequence…has often been insufficiently sensitive to the complex institutional and political dynamics that affect reform processes.[76]

Conscientious regard for such complex institutional dynamics would ordinarily be one of the initial steps in conceptualizing initiatives such as SSR, a conceptual and policy framework that promises to transform the political and institutional set up of whole countries and regions. For its disregard of empirical realities and preoccupation with promoting preconceived values, SSR may have to either go back to the drawing board or await the epitaph of judgment of having been too ambitious.

---

[76] 2005, p.25.

4.3.3. ***Implications of Diversity of Military Cultures for SSR and CMR Theory and Practice***

Something else emerges from the foregoing discussion, and this relates to the general thrust and decontextualised nature of the debate on reforming the institutions of coercion and law-and-order as it is presented within the SSR framework. That debate is lacking in its appreciation of the variations in political culture and the profound sense in which the levels of political development of any polity shapes the character of the transactions between key sectors of the state, in this particular case, the relationship between the instruments of coercion on one hand and the executive, the judiciary, the legislature and the bureaucracy, on the other hand. The principal frailty of many of the reformist initiatives embodied by the liberal mould of CMR is to take for granted the intense country variations in regard to political culture, but more importantly, in regard to the different levels of attainment with respect to achievement of statehood. Most neoliberal reform initiatives, particularly those that have their origins in the global north are marketed as a one-size-fits-all that is generally insensitive or even blind to, the diverse reform contexts. In this particular case of SSR, the initiative's utility - and arguably, legitimacy - as a policy or as a conceptual tool is undermined by its own promoters, right from the start line.

Apart from the general presumption of homogeneity of political culture of states across space and time, scholarly analysis and policy intervention in military institutions tends to assume a uniform pattern of policing or military forces not just amongst the developed western countries that play a leading role in championing reform, but also amongst those countries in the south that are the targets of reform. In the case of the reform of police forces, it is not likely that even the key OECD/DAC partners would agree on a similar template for reform. Each of them would probably wish to impose a policing model that they are accustomed to, or the donor country taking the lead in a police reform programme in a particular

developing world would wish to impose its own model mirroring the values and doctrines of policing that it is accustomed to back home. As always happens, experts in form of police personnel from an individual donor country are dispatched to the country being targeted for reform to oversee the implementation of their own national policing traditions. The same approach is employed also in reform of the military institutions. At the end of such exercises, it is often assumed that such institutions have been fundamentally re-oriented and have therefore assumed the same monolithic stance as equivalent institutions in the country of origin of the reform consultants.

Like CMR before it, SSR is at times wont to hold that the military is '…a vast, fearsome, trained, disciplined body which acted so much as a unit', and accordingly, 'was seen to be a valid subject of study from which general conclusions could be drawn' (Chuter, 2006:6). This perception of monolithic and homogenous armed forces overlooks the reality of factionalism and fragmentation of the military forces of conflict-affected countries and the manner in which the armed forces closely mirror the horizontal cleavages within wider society. It is this wider society, under the label of civil society that, according to SSR, is destined to hold the military to account. That ill conceived perception of a monolithic 'security sector' ranged against a homogenous 'civil society' that is destined to keep it in check stands out as probably one of the weakest flanks of the SSR framework.

4.4 Military Involvement in Politics: Its Genesis and inevitability

4.4.1. ***The Futility of a Blanket Veto on Military Involvement in Politics***

As already pointed out, the frequency of the coup d'état and its far-reaching impact on the image and viability of the African polity has caused it to be singled out as the sole pathology of civil-military relations on the continent and leading political challenge. The staggering statistics of the overthrow of civilian

governments and their replacement either with outright military juntas or with civilian-military cliques partly explains the status that has been ascribed to the direct intervention by the military in politics. Tracing the phenomenon through the decades that followed independence, Decalo notes that:

> If during the I960s the coup d'état emerged as the most visible and recurrent characteristic of the African political experience, by the 1980s quasi-permanent military rule, of whatever ideological hue, had become the norm for much of the continent. At any moment in time, up to 65 per cent of all Africa's inhabitants and well over half its states are governed by military administrators. Civilian rule is but a distant memory in some countries. Few at some stage or another have not been run by an armed-forces junta, and fewer still have not been rocked at least once by an attempted coup, putsch, or military-sponsored plot… Rule by civilians is very much the statistical 'deviation' from the continental norm, as military leaders lay a permanent claim to the political throne in much of Africa (1989:547).

Similar sentiments have been echoed by McGowan (2005), Chazan *et al.,* (1999), Huntington (1968), Bienen (1968), Welch (1970), Jenkins and Kposowa (1990) among others, with Luckham (1994) highlighting the near-institutional role of coups d'état as the main mechanism of circulation of elites. As the incidence of military intromissions into politics continued to escalate, hypotheses of causes multiplied.[77] In the case of Africa, the commonly-held view of the political malaise turned the coup d'état into the be-all and end all of the continent's security and development challenges. According to one of the leaders in reform programmes, the Development Assistance council of the Organization of Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD/DAC),

> [I]n West Africa, an overriding concern has been how to end one of the most serious threats to democratic development in the sub-region: *coups d'état* and unlawful removal of elected authorities. This threat….further

[77] For a detailed explanation/taxonomy of coups d'état, see Luckham, 1994, pp. 28-31.

highlights the need to subject military institutions to democratic control (2005:50).[78]

However, a closer examination of the literature and of historical cases reveals that the phenomenon of military intervention is more complex than how it is being portrayed in the SSR framework, and indeed, there is a lot more to military intervention than merely the direct action by the armed forces to displace the sitting government. It is important to point out the gradations of military intervention and to weigh them against some of the standard goals that are set for reform programs, which implicitly and explicitly, tend to suggest that military professionalism as a product of reform, reduces the propensity for military intervention. Countries at all stages of development and with varying levels of military professionalism experience military intervention of one form or another. It would therefore be futile, as institutional reform programmes in the developing world tend to suggest, to attempt to initiate reforms that promise to permanently immunize a polity against military intervention.

4.4.2. ***Political Culture and Military Interventionism***

Finer identifies three determinants of the levels of political culture of a political system which in turn shape the style of military intervention in addition to influencing the propensity for intervention. What is questionable is whether reform initiatives such as SSR look beyond the superficial isomorphic jiggling of the organizational procedures and structures of the security institutions they reform, to reflect on the polity wide determinants of the character of key institutions such as the armed forces. First of the determinants of the style of military involvement in politics, is legitimacy, i.e., the level to which the prevailing political order and the

---

[78] The same publication however goes on to take a critical and almost self-contradicting view of African and Africanist political scientists whose writings have '…largely been within the old coup-driven civil-military relations paradigm (and now tends to be concerned with how the political power of the military might be curbed or contained)., pp 72-73.

public authority are accepted and acknowledged as the embodiment of the common will. The second determinant is political institutionalization, that is, the level of development of the structures and procedures that mediate and moderate the transactions between the diverse political forces that make up the polity.[79] Third is the degree of popular participation, or, the extent to which the wider public is involved through popularly recognized institutions, in the crafting of the key decisions that have a bearing on their daily lives and destiny, in addition to the level of attachment to the public institutions that modulate that participation.

Correspondingly, the operationalisation of those three determinants of political culture is mediated through a set of attributes against which the robustness of the political system assessed. The first attribute is widespread approval (or lack thereof) of the procedures of transfer of power whose upholding or violation decides the legitimacy of the public authority. Deriving from the latter is the second attribute, namely, the symbols or persons that are publicly recognized as the embodiment of popular sovereignty. The third attribute is the proportion of the population that can be considered as the 'political public', i.e., individuals and groups that are part of private associations, such as professional organizations, trade unions, guilds, pressure groups political parties, industrial associations and other organizations, normally called civil society, that are not part of the government. Basing on that classification of the parameters of political culture and the yard sticks for assessing each of those parameters, Finer, among other analysts of civil-military relations has classified country political systems into five clusters, each exhibiting a unique style through which the military may intervene or be involved in politics.

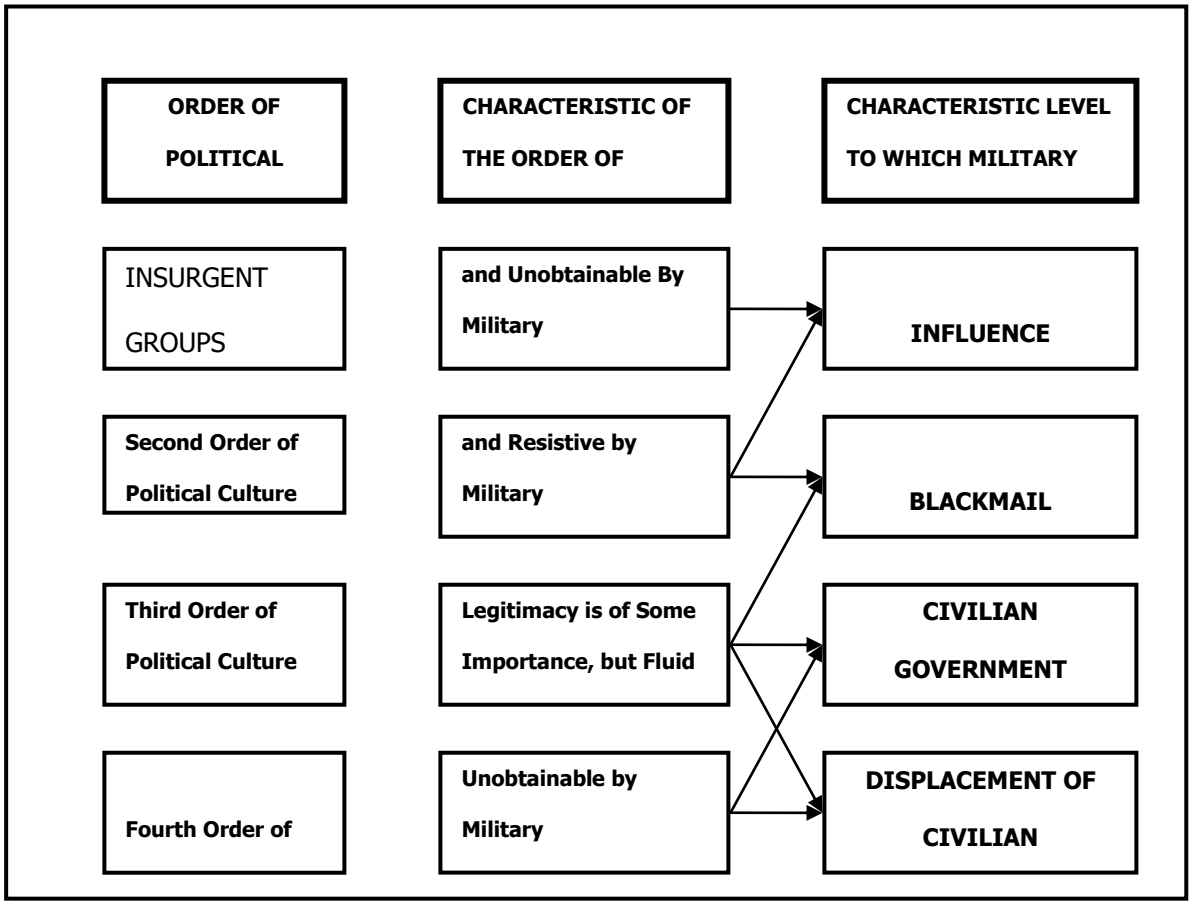
The figure below summarizes the levels of political culture as they are determined by the stage of socio-economic development, and the corresponding styles of the military's involvement in politics. Most countries in Sub-Saharan

---

[79] According to North (2009), institutions are '…the rules of the game in a society or, more formally, the humanly devised constraints that shape human interaction….they structure incentives in human exchange whether political, social or economic' (p.3).

Africa where most SSR programmes are concentrated belong to the fourth order of political culture, these being the countries where the political public is minimal.

Figure 4: Military Intervention and the Level of Political Development



From Finer, 1962, p.139

What is clear from the classification above is that, there is no stage of political development where the political system can be characterized as being free from any sort of military intervention whatsoever. Even if we are to adapt a teleological view of sociopolitical development and assume that all countries are destined for the highest level of political culture as laid out by Finer, it is clear that military intervention in politics is part of the normal functioning of political systems. Accordingly, there is need to question the authenticity of any form of idealistic reformism such as SSR that promises to expunge military intervention in politics.

1. There is a degree of military intervention in politics at all stages of political development and therefore, it is fallacious to premise reform programmes on the goal of expunging that phenomenon.
2. Military intervention in politics is not a taboo and that there are even certain forms of the phenomenon that are constitutional and legitimate.
3. Even where there are unconstitutional forms of military intervention, their drivers derive from factors related to the robustness or frailty of the wider political system and not from the makeup of the instruments of coercion in general and the military in particular.
4. This therefore calls for a paradigm of reform that looks at the political system in its entirety, and not on the institutions via which the symptoms of systemic malaise are exhibited.
5. Reforms such as SSR that focus exclusively on the instruments of coercion (or the so-called security sector) may therefore be inherently incapable of achieving the goals set for them and may be potentially counterproductive. As Huntington has aptly noted, such approaches to institutional engineering are bound to deepen insecurity in that they '…may help to aggravate the lack of balance between the input and output institutions of the political system' (1968:192).

4.4.3. ***Liberal Democratic CMR Vs the Party in Uniform***

Most of the questions raised thus far on the conceptual and practical wholesomeness of CMR theory are to do with the presumption that the political evolution of all societies has attained the equilibrium that ensures a clear differentiation between the military and the civil domains. If that presumption was to hold some validity, there would be a sound basis to speculate on the likely occurrence of a dichotomous/conflictual relationship between the two domains as happens in the popular version of CMR theory. But that clear differentiation between the military and other domains of the state as witnessed in the highly

developed political systems is not a universal phenomenon. It is for this reason that an accommodation has to be made for political systems where the pinnacle of the civil authority is occupied by the military commander, as was the case in earlier stages of development of the major democracies and as indeed the case is in many contemporary pre-liberal polities. It is inconceivable that a George Washington or Napoleon Bonaparte had to contend with the fractious bargains between civilians and military officials. Similarly, civil-military contests may not be the major concern for many politico-military regimes in the contemporary developing world because they simply never arise anyway. The same applies to the communist states where '…the military is an administrative arm of the party and not something separate from and competing with it.', as Odom (1973) has pointed out.[80]

The foregoing argument highlights a key weakness of CMR theory and other frameworks such as SSR that it has inspired: the prevailing conception of civil supremacy holds some promise only when the power of the military has been curbed but not where the military has been co-opted. Questions therefore must arise as to what solutions SSR has to offer in praetorian polities where the military wields enormous power, let alone in polities that are in the transition to liberalism, from whichever direction of political differentiation. Clearly, CMR theory is essentially normative, if not blinkered; and a normative epistemology is specifically suited for steady-state ontology. It is devoid of any consideration for the realities of ongoing social change and it is therefore essentially blind to the imperatives of development. Such is the parentage that CMR has bequeathed to SSR.

Following from the foregoing observation, it has to be noted that the evolution CMR theory was largely shaped by the experiences of the mature liberal democracies where structures are clearly differentiated and institutions have attained a relatively high level of functional specificity, autonomy and coherence. As Huntington (1957:32) has observed, CMR theorising arose from the emergence

---

80 Cited in Light, 1981, p.134.

of the military profession, which in turn was nurtured in tandem with the phenomenon of industrialism. Emphasizing the recent origins of CMR and explicitly discounting the armed revolt as the reason for its emergence, Huntington suggests that,

> [t]he fundamental transformation in the first part of the nineteenth century [in Western Europe] makes it relatively profitless to go back before that time in search of light on modern problems... the problem in the modern state is not armed revolt but the relation of the expert to the politician. The cleavage between the military and civilian spheres and the resulting tension between the two are phenomena of distinctly recent origin (1957:20).

This leaves us with only one conclusion to draw: the link between SSR and CMR as we see it in the literature appears to be contrived at least from the point of view of authoritative commentators on the former. What we see then is that, the founding premises of CMR (and by implication SSR), are '…too narrowly conceived and miss critical aspects of the problem, and they are too bound to the culture and national politics of their proponents' (Bland, 1999:8). Such are the uncertainties and contradictions that CMR has passed on to SSR, in addition to the shared trait of lack of interest by advocates of both in the purpose for which the 'security sector' exists.

4.4.4. ***The Desired End: 'Civilian Control' or Civil Supremacy?***

The leading concern for the SSR debate, just as the case was with first generation civil-military relations theory, is the age-old question of subordinating the armed forces to the control of the political authority, what Feaver has called the 'civil-military problematique', i.e., how the fear of others means that '…we create an institution of violence to protect us, but then we fear the very institution we created for protection…' (1996:150). As Kohn observes, subordination of the military to the political authority i.e., how a society controls those who possess the ultimate power of coercion or physical force is among the oldest problems of

human governance.[81] Indeed, it is not just a challenge for democratic regimes as the promoters of SSR normally imply, but too, it is a challenge for all other forms of government. Kohn further observes that,

> All forms of government, from the purest democracies to the most savage autocracies, whether they maintain order and gain compliance by consent or by coercion, must find the means to assure the obedience of their military -- both to the regime in power and to the overall system of government.

Mankind has long freed himself from the natural state where life was '…solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short'. 'Here', notes Feaver, 'the protector and the protectee are one and the same.' The bearing of arms was not the responsibility of designated individuals or groups and therefore, there was no civil-military dilemma. The result of collective evolution away from that primeval existence has brought forth a new challenge, namely, the relentless urge by sovereigns to found a stable balance not just with the ecclesiastical and judicial powers, but also - and most importantly - with the bearers of arms.

In earlier times, emperors of the Byzantium sought to maintain a grip on their *Strategos*, just as the mediaeval knight's relative latitude was moderated by the chivalric code in aid of the authority of the monarch or the prince. So also was the case with the Roman Praetorian guard. Much later, Clausewitz advanced one of the strongest justifications for civil control of the military. In his well-documented view, armed forces are created by states to engage in war and war itself is an instrument of policy. In accordance with that,

> The subordination of the political point of view to the military would be contrary to common sense, for policy has declared war; it is the intelligent faculty, war only the instrument and not the reverse. The subordination of

---

81 http://www.unc.edu/depts/diplomat/AD_Issues/amdipl_3/kohn.html

> the military point of view to the political is, therefore, the only thing, which is possible (1997:359).

In more modern times, political control of the military has been a concern in democracies such as the United States and Britain, just as it has been for Communist China; or as it was for the Soviet Union. Earlier in the twentieth Century, it was critical for fascist dictatorships in Germany and Italy and other states elsewhere in Africa, Asia, and Latin America all presenting with diverse political dispensations.

The point here is that, over time, space and diversity in terms of political regime there is a noticeable universality in humanity's urge to have their armed forces on a leash. What has remained a principal feature of the SSR framework is its specific focus on ideal forms, such as 'good governance', 'democratic control' and 'civilian control'. Arguably, by restricting its conception of control of armed forces to particular form of political regime, system of representation and type of executive authority, the SSR framework becomes a hostage of a normative epistemology and automatically renders itself incapable of making any headway in the polities that it is intended to target.

In its broadest sense, civil control means '…military responsiveness to the policies of politically responsible government' (Lyons, 1961:54). Much of the recent debate on rendering the armed forces as an instrument of policy has been narrowed down to ensuring 'civilian control' and as Williams has argued, the latter concept is '…a problematic, flawed and potentially divisive concept…'[82]

Not only does the SSR framework lose sight of the principle of civil oversight of institutions of the state, be it the judiciary, legislature, bureaucracy and even the executive, it also mixes up that principle with the civilian content of those institutions. Reducing the important question of the management of the armed forces as institutions of the state to an axiological contest between the military and

---

82 Schnabel, Albrecht and Hans-Georg Ehrhart , eds Security Sector Reform and Post-Conflict Peacebuilding, Tokyo: United Nations University Press, 2005…..p.49

civilians is a major disservice to policy and has contributed to the blunting the utility of SSR as an analytical tool. The concept of 'civilian control' glosses over key questions on the diversity of regimes. By turning the reflection on military regimes into an exercise in vilification, it obscures the reality of civilian autocracies that rely, just as military juntas, on armed repression and extensive surveillance by intelligence agencies (Luckham, 2003:3).

Even if civilian control was accepted as the principle, there would still be major obstacles to its implementation given the limited civilian expertise in defence and security issues in SSR target countries. Without the requisite civilian expertise to manage national security systems, attempts to control the military would only become a source of tension and in the long-term, of direct military intervention into political management.

Donor Approaches to reforming the Uganda Security Sector: A micro-study of the NRA/UPDF

5.1 Introduction

Using Uganda as a micro case study, Chapter Five examines the Implementation of SSR in Uganda in the context of ongoing conflict and against the background of the country's protracted instability. The historical evolution of Uganda's 'security sector' is outlined to highlight the principles and assumptions that underpinned its composition during the colonial phase of the country's history and the long-term effect of those principles on the country's security. The linkage between Disarmament, Demobilisation and Re-integration (DDR) and SSR programming is explored to identify potential synergies between the two in Uganda's specific circumstances. It is argued that the realisation of synergies between DDR and SSR is often rendered questionable by the lack of clarity on what DDR actually entails and whether indeed its sanguine depiction in the academic and policy literature accurately mirrors its implementation. The part of the study examines the case of Uganda, a country whose armed forces have supposedly undergone both DDR and SSR. Uganda's experience in managing armed groups in the immediate aftermath of major hostilities is explored to identify the key features of the process from 1986 onward, with a particular focus on the donor-supported mass discharge of the 1990s, with the view of identifying whether as the literature that we examine below suggests, that exercise was truly DDR and the implications of that for other follow-on initiatives.

It is particularly stressed that claims that Uganda undertook DDR cannot easily stand up to scrutiny. An analysis of the dynamics of the 'DDR' in Uganda is made to highlight the aspects of the exercise that laid the ground for unsuccessful implementation of any future SSR. Questions are raised on whether indeed the Ugandan process amounted to DDR in whatever sense DDR is understood. It is suggested that the country adopted a much more complex process of managing

armed factions than the linearly conceived model of DDR often encountered in the 'peace building' literature and that the logic of this process put in place major obstacles for any future reform process along the lines of SSR. The process of SSR as it was approached in Uganda is examined and an attempt is made to identify the unfavourable reception for the initiative within Uganda's institutional context. The imposition of SSR as an aid conditionality

5.2 Historical evolution of the state security apparatus

Most attempts at assessing the institutions and governments of underdeveloped, conflict-afflicted countries through the normative lens have, in the view of this study fallen short of capturing the reality of those countries and we have broadly accounted for that deficiency by stressing that, in eschewing the understanding of social reality through examining matters of fact, or, 'what is', and instead, privileging values, or 'what ought to be', the normative lens is inherently flawed.

Moreover, 'what is' has a dual character: It is as much a transitory culmination of 'what was' as it is the embodiment of the existing reality and the aggregate of historical development leading to that reality. By disregarding 'what is', normativity automatically discounts the historical evolution of countries and institutions in which interventions are sought, a point that is explored in deeper detail in Chapter Seven. For our present purposes, we shall use the Uganda military after 1986 to highlight the implications of normativity's insensitivity to historical change, and with it, the inherent incapacity to identify the symptoms of regression, or to acknowledge progress when it takes place, however modestly. That tendency, we argue, creates grounds for irresolvable tension between the external actor whose mind is set on a particular ideal; and the local actor who judges that his actions are yielding certain improvements that ought to be recognised.

Historically, institutional dysfunction of the military in Uganda, in the broader context of the country's political evolution, has been characterised by a very specific set of symptoms and traits whose persistence or recurrence should

constitute the benchmark for the evaluating improvement or lack thereof, or the efficacy of measures taken to effect transformative change.[83] What remains the challenge for observers of the Ugandan military as an organisation is identification of the appropriate yardstick for realistically assessing robustness and functionality over a period of time without capitulating to the easier option of passing moral judgment. It is this weakness that Berdal highlights in his general comments on observers and analysts who prioritize value judgement over the need to grasp local dynamics. 'All too often,' writes Berdal, 'the failure to grasp the underlying political economy of a conflict zone, relying instead on crude, value-laden and simplistic labelling of complex problems, has served to perpetuate and stimulate renewed violence (2010:8).

One would expect that any evaluation of the NRA/UPDF, or any opinion on whether there has been progress, stagnation or regression in the stature of the Ugandan military over the last five decades of the country's existence would have to be based on an assessment of the current force in relation to its predecessors, namely the Uganda Army under Milton Obote (1966-1971), the Uganda Army under Idi Amin (1971-1979) or the Uganda National Liberation Army, UNLA under Milton Obote/Tito Okello (1981-1986). This part of the study seeks to briefly trace the historical development of the Ugandan 'security sector' focussing on the military in order to highlight the factors that have shaped its character.

5.2.1. ***The Pre-colonial and Colonial back-drop***

The establishment of standing military forces in modern Uganda can be traced back to the beginnings of colonial rule in the early 1890s. However, large-scale military structures existed in the pre-colonial societies particularly Bunyoro and Buganda, the two large centralized states in the South of the future country.

---

[83] A standard list of those traits would include corruption, incompetence, abuse of human rights, however defined, nepotism, propensity to depose governments, lack of respect of the territorial integrity of neighbours, disrespect for the law among others.

By the advent of colonialism, the two states commanded armed forces that had upgraded their armouries from spears, and bows and arrows to modern firearms (Doyle, 2006; Karugire, 1980; Reid, 2002 and 2007). The powerful *Omukama* Kabalega, King of Bunyoro from 1870 to 1899, commanded a large standing army that was fully equipped with a variety of relatively modern weapons that included Remington rifles, percussion muskets, breechloaders and a large collection of muzzleloaders (Omara Otunnu, 1987:2).[84] In the Kingdom of Buganda on the northern shores of Lake Victoria, Mutesa I, King from 1852 to 1884, also raised a standing army and a navy led by a general and several captains (Roscoe, 1911; Beachey, 1963:467). At its most powerful, Mutesa's military force consisted of several thousand warriors with more than 1,500 rifles (Ofcansky, 1992:196). By the close of the 20th century, those military structures had ceased to exist as part of the turbulent process of 'pacification' that saw British colonial rule taking firm hold.

In the smaller scale, non-centralised communities, military organisation took on a form that reflected the segmentary nature of the communities, their low level of vertical stratification and resulting egalitarianism. Unlike the more centralised societies, the smaller scale societies had no distinct military class (Reid, 2007:79). Defence and warfare in those societies – what Middleton and Tait have termed 'Tribes without rulers' (1967) – was the responsibility of every able-bodied adult male member of the community, a fact that has accounted for the debatable notion 'martial tribes',[85] upon which the military recruitment policy in the colonial period was based, with far-reaching implications for the country's future. The mainly pastoralist Nilo-Hamitic ethnic groups, the Iteso and Karamojong in the east and northeast of the country were marked by an absence of significant military

---

[84] Kabalega's military is reputed to have been more multiethnic (and Pan-Africanist) than the militaries that modern Uganda has had. Apart from the Banyoro, the ranks of his Kingdom's military included Egyptian deserters, Baganda, Bari, Acholi, Alur, Langi and Madi (Casati, 1891: 61-2, 80).

[85] Omara–Otunnu has equally debatably referred to those societies 'military democracies' (1987:4).

organisations. When the need for warfare arose, warrior groups were constituted on the basis of the age-set system (Bernardi, 1952). Driberg notes that the political organisation of the Lango before the establishment of colonial rule was 'essentially military' (1923:205), terms akin to those of Middleton and Tait in their characterisation of the traditional system of the Lugbara of West Nile for whom, it is claimed, '...relations between groups beyond immediate neighbours were in terms of fighting' (1958:219).

It is important that we flag the pre-colonial military military configuration because, as Omara-Otunnu (1987) argues, the colonial and early post-independence governments drew their recruits into the armed forces from the smaller, decentralised with far-reaching implications for both intra-military and civil-military relations.

5.2.2. ***The Colonial period***

Following the Berlin Conference and the partition of Africa by European powers in the mid-1880s those events, the British government appointed a chartered company of merchants, the British East African Company, later the Imperial British East Africa Company (IBEACo), to manage Uganda, its new possession, with the primary brief of ascertaining the resources that existed in the area. [86] The IBEACo in turn appointed Captain Frederick Lugard to manage its affairs in Uganda. The core of what was to become Uganda's military was the contingent of guards, the Swahili *askari*, part of the private army of the IBEACo in the company of Captain Lugard on his journey from the East African coast to the hinterland in 1890. Lugard expanded this core force by augmenting it with Sudanese Nubian soldiers,[87] remnants of Emin Pasha's military garrisons of

[86] A detailed account of the process can be found in Karugire (1980); Barber (1968) and Low and Pratt (1960).

[87] Some of the Nubian soldiers had seen combat in Mexico when the Khedive of Egypt had assigned them in aid of the French (Omara-Otunnu, 1987:14).

Egypt's Equatoria province. The Nubian soldiers had been cut off from Cairo by the 1881-1898 Mahdist uprising in the Sudan against Turco-Egyptian and British presence.[88] Captain Lugard considered the Nubian people of Sudan to constitute the best material for soldiery in Africa;[89] and it is them that enabled Lugard to defeat the monarchs of Bunyoro and Buganda, the largest states in Africa's interlacustrine region in the 1890s, and helped in the many 'pacification' and punitive expeditions the British carried out in the wider East African region up to the outbreak of the World War I.

In London, parliament passed the Uganda Rifles Ordinance of 1895 requiring the troops that Lugard had assembled to swear allegiance to the British Sovereign directly and secondarily, to the protectorate government (clause 13). Clause 58 of the ordinance included a provision for the Uganda Rifles to take military action, against not only outside powers, but also any local groups in the protectorate that engaged in active opposition to the administration (Omara-Otunnu, 1987:19). The suppression of political opinion disagreeable to the centre became the basic ethos of Uganda's 'security sector' even after the departure of the colonialists. It is not surprising that in March 1962 – six months before the formal declaration of independence – responsibility for the military was switched from the Ministry of Security and External Affairs to the Ministry of Internal Affairs in possible anticipation of the domestic role that awaited it (Omara-Otunnu, 1987:45-47).

The 1898 Military Force Ordinance, that followed the mutiny of the Nubian soldiers allowed for the incorporation an additional two non-indigenous groups, namely the Indian and Swahili troops (Moyse-Bartlett, 1956; Karugire, 1980, Omara-Otunnu, 1987). In appreciation of their role played by the Nubians in enabling him to consolidate his hold on the nascent Uganda protectorate, Lugard observed that,

---

[88] Egypt's Equatorial Province covered the present-day West Nile and Acholi regions of Uganda. By the time the Mahdists overrun Khartoum in January 1885 the Nubian soldiers were quartered at Wadelai in present-day West Nile region in north-western Uganda.

[89] Cited in Pain, 1987, p. 25.

> The importance of this reliable force of seasoned and disciplined soldiers can hardly be overrated, in view of the responsibility which devolves on the nation to maintain its hold on Uganda and the neighbouring districts (Bentley,1892:41).[90]

However, the view that the Nubians were 'seasoned and disciplined solders' was, not unanimous. The explorer and adventurer Henry Morton Stanley characterised them as 'evil men' that were '…fawning, crafty rogues who have made perfidy their profession' (1890:206); while Harry Johnston, Uganda's Protectorate Commissioner from 1889-1900 observed that, '...themselves ex-slaves, they had all the cruelty and unscrupulousness of the Arab Slave traders, whose names, principles and religion they had inherited' (Johnston, 1902: 238). Before Lugard enlisted the services of the Nubians, Samuel Baker, General Gordon and Emin Pasha had employed them to man forts in Acholi from the early 1870s t0 around 1890 in the service of the Khedive of Egypt (Lwanga-Lunyiigo, 1987:25). As Pain observes, their behaviour left a bitter folk memory among the Acholi.[91]

What becomes clear then is, that the core of the colonial military in what was to become Uganda was an alien and mercenary force and it is on the basis this that the post-independence governments constituted the armed forces of the new country. As many observers have noted, deployment of colonial troops was governed by the 'principle' that they should be of a race different from that of the people in the zone of assignment or from an ethnic group that is geographically remote to, and if possible, hostile to the inhabitants of the area of deployment (Gutteridge, 1969; Horowitz, 1985; Karugire, 1988; Kabwegyre, 1995). Regarding the Lugard's Nubian soldiers and their role in Uganda, Lwanga-Lunyiigo notes that, they were generally favoured '...because they were an entirely alien mercenary

---

[90] For details of the numbers of these soldiers and the phases of their incorporation into the IBEACo military force, see Lwanga-Lunyiigo (1989:25); Hansen (1991a&b) and Lugard (1893).

[91] Ibid.

element who did not have any sentimental attachment to Uganda and could be trusted to be brutal without any reserve or compunction' (1989:28).

Later attempts to indigenise and diversify the Uganda Rifles were in accordance with the principle of remoteness, to which was added the myth of 'martial tribes' which favoured the Nilotic and Sudanic; and the Nilohamitics ethnic groups of north and east of the country respectively. Accordingly, by 1914 Acholi region had become the recruiting ground for the armed forces. By 1961, one year before independence, the Uganda military consisted of 1,000 personnel commanded by 50 British officers centred on a battalion (Mudoola, 1989:119). The reality of the absence of indigenous officers in command positions was summed by a British Marshal of the Royal Air Force in his comparison between the evolution of East African militaries with those of the Far East: 'But in East Africa, we took it for granted for too long that the only possible officer material for African units was European' (Slessor, 1962: ix). In partly explaining the phenomenon, one of the British officers on the ground observed that:

> The policy of the Army during the 57 years of its existence had always been to enlist from Northern tribes…the entire cream of the force was composed of the most backward people of the country…we ourselves were prejudiced against the…educated' (Grahame, 1980:5).

In the event, on the eve of independence the need to turn this reality around through a process of 'Africanisation' arose but the authorities found it almost impossible to meet the requirements they had set. When in 1960, the Queen's commissions were made '...open to all persons of any race who are qualified by age and education, and who are of the necessary medical standard'[92], only two individuals qualified for the commission to the rank of Lieutenant, one of whom

[92] Instructions of the Chief of Staff, East African Command, 02 January 1960, cited in Omara-Otunnu, 1987, p.43.

was Idi Amin. On the eve of Uganda's independence, it was evident that the foundation of the 'security sector' was for seven decades, systematically put in place an atmosphere of anti-intellectualism, remoteness and ethnic bias, factors that have made a significant contribution to the instability that has become the hallmark of the country's post-independence history, to which we now turn our attention.

5.2.3. ***Post-independence period : The Obote 1 Government, 1962-71***

The first post-independence administration maintained the composition of the armed forces instituted during the formative years of the country for much the same reasons as the colonial government had done so but with additional urgency. The ethnicity of the first Prime Minister, Milton Obote, coincided with the ethnic groups favoured for recruitment into the colonial military force. Obote was a Nilotic, belonging to the Langi sub-ethnic group of Northern Uganda.[93] The character of the security forces reflected the tensions that obtained within Uganda's fractious political class, torn apart by ethnic and religious sectarianism. Obote sought to resolve those tensions by the use of force, and therefore set out on a path of nurturing a partisan 'security sector'.

As a first step, he consolidated the ethnic bias of the colonial military force by enlisting more personnel from the North of the country. Key members of his ruling UPC, among them legislators and government ministers seeking to justify a military recruitment policy that favoured the north of the country went on to give further credence to the 'martial tribes' principle enunciated by the British colonial authorities, what Mudoola (1989) has called the 'doctrine of ethno-functionalism'. This thinking was passionately defended by the mentioned elite of Northern Uganda and it is necessary to cite them in detail to enable us to appreciate the future implications for the functioning of Uganda as national entity.

---

[93] Together with the neighbouring Acholi and Alur, the Langi are part of the Luo speakers.

In his contribution to a debate in parliament on the January 1964 mutiny by the Ugandan military, Gasper Oda a Member of Parliament from West Nile region in the northwest of the country observed that:

> There is one thing which should be taken into consideration, that not all tribes, not only in this country but also throughout the world, are born warriors or warlike people. Some tribes are warlike people, and others are intellectuals, and are not prepared to face warlike people.[94]

Those sentiments were re-echoed by Felix Onama, the minister holding portfolio. At the risk of sounding hyperbolic in respect of the Third Reich's intentions in tropical Africa, he argued that:

> Thousands of northerners died in the two world wars to defend Uganda against Nazism and Fascism and if the young generation or their children who have grown up in the North would like to follow in the footsteps of their fathers, nobody is going to stop me recruiting them into the army…In the colonial times some tribes believed that the life of a soldier was a very low job unfit for people from certain tribes and that is why you find in the army the northerners….Because people think there is no war and these young men wear a very smart uniform, they want their weaklings from certain tribes also to wear this uniform.[95]

- On his part, the Minister of Public Service, E.Y. Lakidi, representing Acholi North constituency had this to note:

- Some people are born to be good traders, some are born to be very good civil servants, some are born to protect this country - The North has been heavily accused that the recruitment is all the time going to the North. I think many people should be grateful to the North, and particularly to my tribe Acholi. The Acholi have pledged themselves to

---

[94] Proceedings of the Uganda Parliament, Hansard 1963-64, Vol.35, pp. 3135-36.
[95] Ibid, p.3205.

> protect this country. I f they are in the army they have- got to be supported. If people are beginning to speak in this House to discredit them, their morale in the army, the police and prisons - would be lowered.[96]

With such thinking dominating the highest level of government, by 1969, seven years after the attainment of self-rule, 141 (88 per cent) of the 171 officers in the Uganda Army were from the Nilotic, Sudanic and Nilohamitic ethnic groups and while the population of the north was 19 per cent of the national total, 61 per cent of the military were from that region (Omara-Otunnu: 1988, 80-82).[97] Following the mutiny of 1964 a paramilitary force, the General Service Unit (GSU), manned by Israeli trained agents was set up and was headed by a close relative of the president. It was set up as a counterespionage agency on the administrative instructions of Prime Minister Obote and reported directly to him (Makubuya, 1987, 145-147).[98] Under the Prime Minister's office also was a paramilitary unit, the

---

96 Proceedings of the Uganda Parliament, Hansard 1963-64, Vol.23, pp. 959-960.

97 The pitfalls of that line of thinking were laid bare by the national tragedy that unfolded in the decade and a half that followed the 1964 which was being debated in parliament when the statements cited above were made. During that period, the regime presided over by the exponents those views was deposed by the military, headed by Idi Amin and the country endured a spell of unmitigated atrophy. However, those same views were to resurface in 1979, in the interim period after the fall of Amin as the transitional legislative body, the National Consultative Council (NCC) discussed the reconstitution of the Uganda armed forces. When a proposal to base enlistment of military personnel on proportional ethnic representation was tabled, an NCC member from the north of the country countered by observing that, 'There are tribes which are much, much bigger than others, so you could expect about half of the army coming from that tribe or the tribe which is more fortunate or tribes which are related and in Uganda – I stressed this when I contributed to this debate much earlier in May/June – that there are sections of the population who just cannot fight even if they are soldiers. And I will stress this that there is evidence to that effect. Even in the recent fighting there is evidence that some people could not stand fires (sic). This I am stressing because practice is different from theory' (cited in Mudoola, 1989, p.133).

98 The activities of the GSU featured prominently as one of the justifications of the *coup d'etat* against Milton Obote in 1971. In the statement that announced the takeover, the military spokesman noted that: 'The cabinet office, by training large numbers of people (largely from Akokoro County in Lango District the home of both Obote and Akena-Adoko, the Chief General

Special Force dominated by personnel from Obote's home district to supplement the GSU.

Mention has already been made in passing of the 1964 mutiny; but given its future impact on civil-military relations in Uganda, it is important that we shed further light on that event.[99] The 1964 mutiny affected all the three East African nations, Kenya, Uganda and Tanzania. 'Bound together by a common legacy of service in Britain's East African colonial army, the King's African Rifles (KAR)', writes Parsons, 'the soldiers demanded higher pay and the removal of expatriate British officers from the newly established national armies' (2007:51).

The handling of that crisis by the respective presidents reflected the internal politics and gave an indication of the future role of the military in each of the countries. Tanzania's Nyerere had the mutinying troops disarmed following which he disbanded the Tanganyika Rifles and rebuilt the military as the Tanzania Peoples' Defence Forces (TPDF) and introduced the system of national military service '...[t]o demystify the monopoly of use of arms'(Mudoola, 1989:122). The TPDF was manned it with a set of fresh recruits screened through the youth league of the ruling Tanzania African National Union (TANU). In Kenya Kenyatta accused the mutineers of undermining the trust of the Kenyan people and rejected any possibility of negotiating with them. The rig leaders were dismissed from service with disgrace.

In contrast to the firm manner in which the leadership in the other two countries dealt with the crisis, in Uganda Interior Minister Felix Onama (shortly of Defence) rushed to the mutinying garrison to initiate negotiations and was promptly put at gun point and locked up by the mutineers upon arrival. In the ensuing standoff, government granted the mutinous troops all their demands and increasing their pay depending on grade by 135 per cent to 300 per cent (Howe,

---

Service Officer) in armed warfare, has been turned into a second army. Uganda therefore has had two armies; one in cabinet, the other regular.' (cited in Makubuya, 1989, p. 147).

[99] Parsons (2003) gives a detailed account of the East African mutinies.

2001:47; Omara-Otunnu, 1988:61) in addition to elevating several officers and commissioning many non-commissioned officers to officer ranks. Of the 19 officer promotions, 13 were from the northern districts (Mudoola, 1989:121). Those measures had major budgetary implications: The allocation for the Ministry of Defence shot up to represent about 10.2 per cent of the budget, compared with 6.9 per cent for Kenya and 3.8 per cent for Tanzania (Brett, 1995:136). That increment represented 10 per cent more than the total defence budget of the two countries combined (Omara-Otunnu, 1987:79). Idi Amin, the future Army Commander and future coup maker saw himself being elevated from temporary Major (substantively a Captain) the rank he held in January 1964 to Colonel by September of the same year. Obote, the Prime Minister, summarily dismissed and then summarily reinstated 300 hundred personnel that had instigated the mutiny. The few that were locked up or dismissed were clandestinely re-instated by Idi Amin in the days that led to his coup in 1971.[100] 'Thus, in a sense the 1964 mutiny realised its goals' writes Decalo, further adding that, '...the army witnessed the government's timidity under pressure' (Decalo, 1990:159).

The following year in 1965, Prime Minister Obote used the now pampered military to carry out an internal coup in order to forestall a corruption investigation and a potential vote of no confidence that members of his cabinet were agitating for against him. A year later in 1966, Obote used the military again to overthrow the independence constitution and depose the ceremonial President of the country, the King of Buganda, *Kabaka* Edward Mutesa. Obote emerged from these crises as the President, with Major General Idi Amin as the Army Commander. General Amin was by now a card-bearing member of Obote's party, the Uganda Peoples' Congress (UPC). By 1971, the military and political class were deeply factionalised and a state of emergency had been declared in Buganda, the home of the capital following the deposition, exiling to Britain in 1966 and subsequent death in 1969 of the King of the Baganda and former president of Uganda. There was pending

[100] Omara-Otunnu, ibid, p.59.

disciplinary action against the Army Commander, Idi Amin on several accounts.[101] These included the allegations against him for his involvement in smuggling gold and ivory from neighbouring Congo (now DRC), misappropriation of money allocated to the military, collusion with Israel in providing logistics to anti-Khartoum insurgents in South Sudan and the murder of a prominent pro-Obote Acholi military officer and Amin's deputy, Brigadier Okoya, who had insisted on Amin being investigated over his likely involvement in the failed assassination attempt on Obote in December 1969. Factions of the military allied to Amin deposed Obote in January 1971 and proclaimed Amin as the next president.

5.2.4. ***The Amin years, 1971-79***

Immediately after the successful execution of his *coup d'etat* in 1971*,* Idi Amin embarked on a three-pronged programme to 'reform' the military to suit it to his own worldview and to his understanding of what it meant to be a head of state. First, launched a massive recruitment drive in what almost amounted to a mobilisation for war; second, he carried out a bloody purge of the rank and file of the Uganda Army by systematically killing off or exiling personnel from ethnic groups that he deemed to have been closely associated with the Obote regime and third, he disbanded the paramilitary structures that Obote set up and scrapped key offices in the military that had been set up to check his powers. The massacre of personnel from undesirable ethnicities was extended to all other institutions of the 'security sector' including the police and prisons and intelligence organisations.

Within three months of assuming presidency, Amin had implemented the equivalent of a mobilisation for war, more than doubling the strength of the military. This he did by recruiting close to 20,000 men in the first year of Amin's presidency.[102] The new recruits consisted of 4,000 ex-Anyanya fighters from

---

[101] For details, see Omara-Otunnu, op cit p.92.

[102] Omara-Otunnu gives a figure of 19,742 (op. cit. p.107).

Southern Sudan and some former Zairian Simba rebels (Mamdani, 1976:302; Omara-Otunnu, 1987:107-8). The presidential bodyguard was consisted of about 400 Palestinians.[103] By 1978 the strength of the military was about 25,000 with at least 75 per cent of them being foreigners, a factor that contributed to major difficulties in communication, training and discipline (Byrne, 1992). According to insider estimates, about half of the force were southern Sudanese and Nubians, 26 per cent were from Zaire, and 24 per cent were indigenous Ugandans mainly Amin's co-ethnics, the Kakwa, and members of other West Nile communities (Avirgan and Honey, 1983:7). With this pattern of recruitment, the mercenary soldier reclaimed the space that had been created for that category of military service during the colonial days.[104] The larger part of the remainder hailed from West Nile, Amin's own ethnic base with at least 40 per cent of them being Moslem (Mamdani, 1976:303).

The purge of the military had started within the first few days of Amin's rule and initially targeted the Acholi and Lango. Subsequently, the Lugbara of his native West Nile and the Itesot of the east of the country were to be targeted. Most of the killings took place in the main military installations around the country, with the highest incidence being recorded between 1971 and 1973 with a final purge being carried out in 1977. Lango and Acholi servicemen were killed by being herded into rooms where explosives were then hurled; several were bayoneted and thrown into River Nile.[105] Those who survived the massacres escaped with their military equipment, specifically small arms, to neighbouring Sudan and Tanzania to prepare to fight to reinstate Milton Obote. Writing in 1974, David Martin noted that, of the twenty-three officers of the rank of Lieutenant

---

[103] Legum C., ed., *Africa Contemporary Record,* 1974-75 p.B309.

[104] Amin's closest adviser was an English Mercenary, Bob Astles.

[105] In Obote's home district, Lango, Amin's soldiers burnt peasants in their huts and killed infants by placing them in mortars and ordering their mothers to pound them with pestles. After that, the parents would be executed ('One Day, Partyists will be Butchered' *The Monitor*, Kampala, November 10, 1997). Details of the methods used by Amin's agents to liquidate those targeted for elimination can be found in Martin (1974) and Kyemba (1977).

Colonel or above at the time of the coup, only four, including Amin, were still in service. Thirteen had been murdered, two had escaped into exile and four had been dismissed (1974:154). The murdered officers were replaced by men from West Nile who were hastily commissioned and given rapid promotions. Within six months of the coup, Collin Legum was to observe that, '[o]nly one of Amin's commanding officers has had previous experience of command. Not only have junior officers been made lieutenant colonels overnight, but similar high ranks have been given to warrant officers...'[106] Horowitz (1985:491) shows that soldiers from parts of West Nle were not spared the purging in the course of time. While the coup in 1971 may be viewed as an affair that involved conflict between the Sudanics of West Nile and the Luo of Lango and Acholi subsequent years saw the Sudanics turning against each other. In 1972 there were purges of the Madi and Alur by the Lugbara and the Kakwa, and the yeas from 1974 to the fall of Amin in 1979 were dominated by purges against the Lugbara by the Kakwa and Nubians.

On the international scene, sections of the British press endeavoured to bolster Amin's image and to urge governments to provide him with support in executing the changes he was undertaking in the military. In a lead article, 'Commonsense Uganda', *The Daily Telegraph* coverage of Amin's visit to the UK captured the sentiments of Fleet Street:

> President Amin now on a visit, has much to commend him to the British public and Government. He provides a welcome contrast to those African leaders who dedicate themselves to the elimination of white rule everywhere in the Continent but bring black rule into discredit in their own countries....Dr Obote who violates Uganda's independence constitution, and was justifiably ousted by Gen. Amin, was in that category...Gen. Amin, always a staunch friend of Britain's, has been quick to express this in his country's policy. His request for now for the purchase of equipment for the

106 *The Observer*, July 25 1971, 'Britain to discipline Amin's mutineers'

> rebuilding of Uganda's defences deserves the most sympathetic consideration from every point of view.[107]

In November 1971 Amin carried out further reform by disbanding the General Service Unit (GSU) set up by Obote and replacing it with two internal security forces - the State Research Bureau (SRB) and Public Safety Unit (PSU).[108] Apart from 'intelligence gathering' the SRB had no known functional brief, or code of conduct or financial support and had unlimited powers over the lives of any individual in Uganda. The Public Safety Unit (PSU) dealt with increased cases of burglary, highway robbery and general brigandage that resulted from the steady collapse of the economy.[109] Through its ever-changing directors, it was answerable only to the President and its personnel found their way into many government departments, public and private institutions, including foreign diplomatic missions in Uganda.

By 1979, 15,000 personnel staffed the three organisations of which 3,000 were permanent and the rest were informers (Byrnes, 1992; Khidu-Makubuya, 1989:148). The SRB and PSU were responsible for the murder of as many as 300,000 people (Rummel, 1994:94; Kasozi, 1994:4). Amin's reign ended in April 1979 at the climax of a military campaign by a combined force of Tanzanian troops and Uganda exiles that was launched in response to the Amin's invasion of Tanzania's Kagera Salient in October 1978. At least 10,000 soldiers of the defeated military retreated to Zaire and Sudan and many others who surrendered were taken prisoner and locked up in Tanzanian and Ugandan prisons.[110] Those that retreated northwards to West Nile, Sudan and Zaire formed themselves into insurgent groups, prominent among which were West Nile Bank Front (WNBF),

---

[107] Daily Telegraph, July 12th 1971.

[108] Omara-Otunnu, op. Cit. p. 110.

[109] The PSU replaced the para-military Special Force of the Obote days. It was at the expense of the civil police, the Uganda Police Force which suffered the same ravages as the Military in terms of purging personnel from undesirable ethnic groups.

[110] For details of the war that deposed Amin see Avirgan and Honey, op. cit.

Former Uganda National Army (FUNA) and Uganda National Rescue Front (UNRF) that continued to operate in West Nile region until they reached a final settlement with the Museveni government.

5.2.5. ***The immediate Post-Amin Era, 1979- 85***

The politics of the immediate aftermath of the fall of Idi Amin revolved around the praetorian logic that had had taken hold of the country right from its early founding, gaining further prominence through the very process of forceful deposition of Idi Amin. Real power lay in the hands of those that participated directly in dismantling Amin's military machine, namely, the Tanzanian government whose military did most of the fighting; and the Uganda National Liberation Army (UNLA) consisting mainly of the Obote-allied *Kikosi Maalum* or 'special force', and Museveni's Front for National Salvation (Fronasa). Then, as before, the military occupied the political centre-stage, and with even more decisiveness '…demonstrated that it still had the veto power to determine which political rulers it preferred' (Mudoola, 1988: 294). The lack of effective executive control over the military did not end with the overthrow of Idi Amin in April 1979. The first post-Amin president, Professor Yusuf Kironde Lule was deposed only after 68 days in office because of his difficult relationship with the military, or with individuals within Military Council of the National Executive Committee who, according to the realities of the day, welded *de facto* power and for all intents and purposes took precedence over the president by virtue of their leading role in the military campaign against Idi Amin.

President Lule's difficulties with the Military Commission stemmed largely from his attempts to institute reforms in the defence sector. This included giving instructions to Museveni, by then Defence Minister, requiring him to disband his (Museveni's) 9,000 strong Fronasa – one of the major contingencies of the anti-Amin UNLF – even as the war with the remnants of Idi Amin's military was still in progress (Museveni, 1997:110). Without consultation with the Military Council or

Minister of Defence, Lule further directed that he wanted to have what he called 'a small professional Army' of about 7,000. He further sought to implement a quota system for military recruitment entailing that the number of recruits from each ethnic group would be in direct proportion to their representation in the national population, a move that would have favoured his own ethnic group, the Baganda, at the expense of the ethnicities of the members of the Military Commission. When eventually Lule ordered that the Chairman of the Military Commission, Paulo Muwanga and his deputy, Yoweri Museveni be moved from the Ministries of Internal Affairs and Defence to Labour and Regional Co-operation, the president had, as events turned out, overstepped the mark causing him to promptly ousted and replaced within 68 days of assumption of office. The reversal of Lule's transfers of the Military Commission strongmen did not even wait for the replacement president to take over office (Otunnu, 1987:149).

The next President, Godfrey Binaisa, appointed in June, 1979 served for just under a year and was toppled as he attempted to limit the influence of military officers from Northern Uganda. This was followed by a national election that saw Obote returning to power in a fraudulent election. During the elections he kept taunting his opponents to show him their generals. Several rebel movements emerged instead to challenge the outcome of the poll. The main group was the NRM under Yoweri Museveni.[111] President Obote's government and the military, the Acholi and Langi dominated UNLA failed to suppress Museveni and his guerrillas and as a result of the strains placed on the relations between the Northern Uganda factions in the military, Obote was once again overthrown by his generals, who were themselves overthrown by Museveni's NRA. The government forces were ill-trained, poorly-clothed, irregularly paid and badly-led foot soldiers that lacked the discipline and endurance to execute a counterinsurgency campaign.

[111] Museveni's Front for National Salvation, Fronasa was part of the UNLF/A. He was a member of the military commission of the UNLF, the Minister of Defence and subsequently the Minister of Regional Co-operation in the transitional government. He contested and lost in the 1980 elections under his party, the Uganda Patriotic Movement (UPM). During the campaigns, he persistently and openly warned that he would 'go to the bush' if the elections were rigged.

5.3 Facilitating Vs False Starting SSR: The case of DDR in Uganda.[112]

5.3.1. *'DARRO' or 'DDR': Incompatibilities between the Uganda process and SSR*

The linkage between Disarmament, Demobilisation and Re-integration (DDR) and Security Sector Reform (SSR) is an obvious one and probably requires a lot less overstatement as tends to be apparent in the policy and academic literature: Both initiatives target the same institutions in countries emerging from violent conflict, or those drifting back and forth between peace and conflict. That '...the two issues are often best considered together as part of a comprehensive security and justice development programme' (OECD DAC, 2007: 105) is a straight forward fact that ought to go without being stated. After all, '[i]t can also be argued that DDR is SSR to the extent that demobilisation is a form of defence reform' (Bryden, 2007:6).

What remains unclear however is the actual extent to which SSR programming can to whatever degree, build on the outcome of DDR programmes in light of their chequered record. But more significantly, the actual sense in which synergies between DDR and SSR can be realised is rendered questionable by the lack of clarity on what is in fact meant by DDR even in countries that are commonly acclaimed to have implemented it with success.[113] This part of the study examines the case of Uganda, a country whose armed forces have undergone both DDR followed by SSR. Claims that Uganda undertook DDR are

---

[112] Based on Mutengesa (2013).

[113] For examples from the 1990s, detailed analysis of Sub-Saharan African cases can be found in Colletta, Kostner, and Wiederhofer (1996a and b).

examined to establish whether they can stand up to scrutiny and this we do by giving a rough sketch of the dynamics of the 'DDR' in Uganda to highlight in passing the aspects of the exercise which inevitably precluded the successful implementation of any future SSR. Uganda's experience in managing armed groups in the immediate aftermath of major hostilities is therefore explored to identify the key features of the process from 1986 onward, with a particular focus on the donor-supported mass discharge of the 1990s, and to identify whether as commonly suggested,[114] DDR can lay ground for meaningful SSR. Questions are raised on whether indeed the Ugandan process amounted to DDR in whatever sense it is understood. It is suggested that the country adopted a much more complex process of managing armed factions than the linearly conceived model of DDR often encountered in the 'peace building' literature and that the logic of this process put in place major obstacles for any future reform process along the lines of SSR.

A close examination of the DDR process implemented in Uganda from 1992 to 1997, described as Dissolution/disbandment, Amalgamation, Reconstitution, Regularisation and Out-processing (DARRO) reveals that, contrary to common assumptions about that country's post-1986 conflict management processes, the newly installed government deliberately eschewed the policy of demobilization and in the process, made disarmament unnecessary. It did this by resisting pressure from bilateral and multilateral donors to adopt policies that would effectively have subordinated the complexities of long-haul pacification to short-term fiscal considerations. The management of armed groups in Uganda since the 1990s reveals that it may have been premature to assume that that process was DDR and more premature even to hope that, the misunderstood process could have portended well for any future reform process such as the one initiated by the United Kingdom government in 1998.

[114] For example, Bryden (2007) and Bryden and Scherrer (2012).

5.3.2. ***Essence and Typology of DDR***

DDR has been variously presented as, 'a vital step in the transition from war to peace' (Hitchcock, 2002: 36), 'one of the key components of conversion' (Newman and Schnabel, 2002: 181), 'a process that builds institutions and norms that help sustain democratic governance', while helping to 'exchange military capacity for political benefits' (Stedman et al., 2002: 226). It has also been characterised as a process that creates '…an environment in which the overall peace process, political and social reconciliation and longer term development can take root' (Ball and de Goor, 2006:1). Much in the same tone, the United Nations has proclaimed that 'in the civil conflicts of the post-cold-war era, a process of disarmament, demobilization and reintegration has repeatedly proved to be vital to stabilizing a post-conflict situation' (United Nations, 2000: 1).

Elsewhere, Spear depicts DDR in similar terms, almost going so far as equating it with the absence of open hostilities. According to Spear, '[p]eace requires breaking the command and control structures operating over rebel fighters….thus making it more difficult for them to return to organized rebellion' (Spear, 1999: 141). This almost implies that the raison d'être for armed groups is the maintaining 'command and control structures' sufficiently employed, or that the dissolution of command and control structures results in the dissipation of the infrastructure of grievance and the incentive structure for rebellion.[115] What is clear however is the overlap between the aims of both SSR and DDR, as much as the extent to which the utility and efficacy of DDR of the latter is overstated, all at

[115] The evolution of the insurgency in Northern Uganda from 1986 illustrates the pitfalls of investing hope in the dissolution of command and control structures as a means of laying the foundation for DDR and subsequently, SSR. The military defeat of the armed groups that emerged between 1986 and 1992 was always followed by the dismantling of their command control structures and their incorporation into the government forces. This did not deter the emergence of new forces under different commanders with a new membership, from the Uganda People's Democratic Army (UPDA) led by officers of the defunct Uganda National Liberation Army (UNLA), to the Holy Spirit Mobile Force (HSMF) under Alice Lakwena, to Lord's Army, Uganda People's Democratic Christian Army (UPDCA) and eventually Joseph Kony's Lord's Resistance Army, LRA.

the risk of downplaying the real dynamics of protracted conflicts in less developed countries, in addition to oversimplifying the varied motivations of individuals and groups that resort to arms as a means of pursuing their goals. The disregard of those complex motivations can only generate unfounded optimism for the future success of closely allied or concurrent processes.

Attempting to classify DDR into distinct categories can be a bewildering undertaking given the level of overlap in the factors that justify its implementation, but more so, on account of the diverse political, social and economic contexts within which DDR is often deemed to be a feasible avenue for stemming violent conflict. Nevertheless, it is possible to single out familiar categorisations. The common ones are those that focus on the disposition of belligerents at the end of hostilities and those that prioritise the economic, political, and social benefits of conducting DDR. The classifications that easily come to mind are those advanced by Kingma (1994, 2000); Berdal (1996); Marley (1997) and Clark (2007).[116]

Kingma suggests seven factors that may determine DDR type, namely: the signing of a peace accord, the defeat of one fighting party, the perceived improvement in the security situation, a shortage of adequate funding, reduction in strength as a way of balancing military capability with security needs in accordance with a realistic threat assessment and as part of Security Sector Reform (SSR), perceived economic and development impact of conversion and changing military technologies and/or strategies (2000) while Marley classifies DDR programmes into what he calls 'conceptual categories', based on economic or political reasons and requirements for implementation of peace agreements (1997:138). Clark identifies two types of 'demobilization', first, where parties to a conflict have signed a peace accord with neither side achieving a military victory, second, when one party has won an outright military victory and demobilizes the losing party as in Ethiopia from 1991; or reduces the size of its own army as in Eritrea in 1997, and supposedly, in Uganda, from 1992 to 1995 (2007:2). Mahling-Clark's 'broad'

categories roughly relate to Berdal's in his delineation of three sets of circumstances of DDR implementation (1996: 10-11). The first involves the termination of conflict through stalemate, compelling the war-weary adversaries to agree to a negotiated settlement. The second involves the collapse of central state structures and the emergence of warring factions, none of which is strong enough to impose order, thus attracting the intervention of third parties to effect 'coercive disarmament'. Third are cases where one group or a coalition of several groups opposed to the government emerges victorious and installs a new government. Of all foregoing classifications, Berdal's third set of circumstances is most representative of the Uganda process after 1986 and then between 1992 and 1996 - the period most closely associated with DDR.

5.4 The Uganda DDR Process and Its Implications for Future SSR

It is generally understood that the 1986 respite in Uganda's history of civil conflict was immediately followed by a process in which the new government of the National Resistance Movement disarmed rival groups and some of its own forces, and demobilised them as part of a 'DDR' programme (Colletta et al., 1996a). Accordingly, the country was set onto a war-to-peace transition. However, this claim may be a misreading of the purely administrative nature of the steps taken by the Ugandan authorities between 1992 and 1995 to reduce the number of serving military personnel. The plainly administrative and instrumental nature of the Uganda 'DDR' was summarised by Museveni in his observation that,

> [I]f we were to maintain such a big force indefinitely, the welfare of everybody would deteriorate, and, at the same time, our combat effectiveness would decline because we would not be able to afford to buy new equipment (1997: 176).[117]

[117] Museveni is the current president of Uganda and was the founder and commander of the NRA guerrillas and Chairman of the National Resistance Movement (NRM) and the brain behind the insurgency that enabled the NRM to ascend to power in 1986. The NRA has since been renamed the Uganda Peoples' Defence Forces (UPDF).

That statement sums up the Government of Uganda's motivation to reduce the strength of the NRA and should have given the external actors a clear indication of what they should have realistically hope for in terms of coincidence between their wishes and Museveni's long term plans. This was to remain the case even in the SSR process that was initiated in 1998. What is often never put in consideration by most commentators on the Uganda's 'post-conflict' peace process however, are the measures taken between 1986, when the major civil war ended with the ascendance to power of the NRM, and 1992, when the supposed DDR was launched. Arguably, the significance of these measures in restoring the semblance of stability by far surpasses the benefits of the 1992-1995 'DDR' exercise, let alone the attempts especially by the UK Government to promote SSR. Those initiatives would not have been successful, for all that they achieved, had it not been for the actions taken in the late 1980s. But even then, it is more important to note the extent to which those earlier actions tended to diverge in important respects from the logic of DDR, if vital lessons are to be derived by practitioners of the 'peace building' industry from the Uganda DDR and SSR.

Emphasizing how the Uganda process of managing warring factions was a home-grown one, Museveni additionally observes that, '…some foreigners have begun to show interest in our methods and actions because ideas, not resources, seem to be the big problem in Africa'.[118] The reference to the process as having been a home-grown one is not far-fetched, and partly serves to highlight the sense in which other models are external impositions. With the exception of involving aid donors in funding the process, the Uganda process bore little resemblance to the three-step DDR that is typically associated with stalemated conflicts that tend to attract third-party intervention. Instead, Uganda employed what can be perceived in retrospect as a five-stage process that involved first, the dissolution of fighting groups and disbandment of the defeated government military; secondly, the

[118] Ibid.

amalgamation of the members of all those entities into the victorious NRA; thirdly, the gradual reconstitution of the national military; fourthly, the regularisation of the new military force and finally, the out-processing of the backlog of personnel that would normally have been retired as part of the personnel management routine, but were instead maintained on the rolls because it would not have been to discharge them earlier. Briefly, the process involved Dissolution/disbandment, Amalgamation, Reconstitution, Regularisation and Out-processing. It is important that these processes are looked at in detail to give an idea of the future obstacles to the donor-inspired SSR-related programmes that followed in 1998.

5.4.1. ***Dissolution and Amalgamation Vs Disbandment and 'Demobilisation'***

In the last quarter of 1986, the Museveni government reluctantly sought the assistance of the International Monetary Fund to stem the deteriorating economic situation. Inflation stood at 237% and was rising; there was a marked deterioration in the balance of payments as external payments accumulated and the deficit in the current account rose,[119] at the same time that insecurity in the north and east of the country escalated as former government forces regrouped and tried to make a comeback. Given this starting point, it seems clear that there was going to be lack of fit between the NRM's vision of rebuilding the country, reconstituting public institutions and maintaining internal stability, on the one hand and the values of the IMF and multilateral donors on the other hand.

Even at this early stage, there was already in existence, the typical ingredients of what the donor community calls 'lack of political' will and 'lack of ownership'. Regarding the timing and future programming of 'demobilisation', it is important to note that the donor community's preference for small government

[119] For details of the state of the economy in this period and the relationship between the NRM government and the IMF, see Mugenyi (1991).

and military downsizing was fundamentally at odds with the NRM's vision of building a broad-based government and constituting a nationally representative military force. Whereas donors favoured contraction at all costs, the Museveni government viewed expansion and inclusiveness as an indispensable undertaking. Expansion of the NRA through the integration of other armed groups was pursued with even more urgency than the co-optation of the political leaders of those groups, in part because of the pressing need to pacify the country. In any case, in the 1980s Uganda, the praetorian logic had escalated to such a point that every political outfit that had an interest in competing for state power possessed a military arm as part of its organisational setup. Possession of a military force, however nominal, was key tool in political bargaining. The willingness to submit one's fighters and their equipment to the command and control of the NRA was the most credible way of expressing one's commitment to being part of the new political order.

Additionally, for the politico-military groups jostling for power throughout the early 1980s, co-optation and integration of their military wings was the principal means of reassurance that the new government would take care of their interests. That approach has remained the NRM's primary avenue of managing armed groups. As can be anticipated, the delicate balance within the military forces resulting from such bargaining is, at the outset incapable of getting along with externally conceived reforms that may be deemed to be insensitive to the internal dynamics of the military forces and the compromises that may have attended to the process of patching them together.

Clearly, the government's expansionary policy precluded 'demobilisation'. What needs to stressed is that, in conditions of internal warfare, ill-timed attempts at 'demobilisation' are inherently inimical to long-term pacification. As it turned out, the NRM government viewed 'demobilisation' with suspicion and for six years, resisted donor pressure to implement such a programme, fearing that it would lead to the dispersal of former fighters throughout the countryside and beyond the reach of the nascent government. Thus, far from implementing donor-inspired

'demobilisation', the Museveni government instead converted the new national military force - the NRA - into a massive depot for groups and individuals that over the years of the country's instability had acquired combat skills and amassed undocumented instruments with which to exercise those skills. In the Uganda of 1986, the most logical means of 'reintegrating' fighters from various warring factions into society was by first upgrading them from being warriors and insurgents, and in some cases, social bandits living beyond the reach of civic control, to regular members of a unified national military force in a recuperating nation (Babiker and Ozerdem, 2003). The most appropriate place where individual members of such diverse groupings could 'decompress' and make the transition back to civic life was, initially, within a formal military setting, under the control of a Military Police and a military code of justice. Integration into a reconstituted national military force was thus a vital step in the transition towards 'reintegration into civic society'.[120] In a 2005 study on the status of former abductees in Acholi region, Allen and Schomerus report that, incorporation into the military is as strongly held in the 2000s as it was in the early days of the NRA. They conclude that, '[w]ithin the UPDF there is a strongly held view that recruiting former combatants into the UPDF and giving them proper training is one of the most effective mechanisms of "reintegration"' (2006:32). Despite the initial costs of such a process, its importance and benefits in the case of Uganda cannot be easily understood if it is perceived strictly through the lens of financial outlays on maintaining a military force that is larger than it would be under normal conditions.

The foregoing observation may sound straightforward but it runs counter to the mainstream development doctrine, according to which military expenditure

---

120 In conditions where civic order has virtually collapsed, it is counterproductive to emphasize 'reintegration into civilian life' as DDR policy and academic literature tends to do: a preoccupation with 'civilian life' when civic order has been eroded by decades of violence is a misplacement of priorities. When the urgent task is (re)establishment of civic institutions and minimum order and transforming insurgents into professional soldiers, the debate over what Colletta et al (1995) call 'unproductive (military) activities' or 'destructive investment' can indeed be misleading. Reference to demobilization and 'reintegration into civilian life' minimizes the importance of issues at stake in countries affected by protracted violent conflict and which may still lack a military force from which to demobilize.

adds little or nothing to the needs of wider society. The pressure to make short-term financial savings then makes it necessary to opt for a hastily conceived mass discharge of 'former combatants', even when such action may risk setting off new spirals of disorder and social breakdown. This does not come as a surprise given that most bilateral and multilateral aid organizations, especially those of the West, espouse a neo-classical economic doctrine according to which investment in productive capital is the engine for economic growth and development while military expenditure is a waste of investible resources (Malcolm et al., 1996; Davoodi et al., 2000). In his reflection on the four steps towards the 'tragedy of Uganda', Wrigley sums up the sentiments of many neoclassical economists not just on the military, but more broadly on the state in Africa, where such characterizations as 'fragile states', 'weak states', 'failed states', 'collapsed states' among others, are applied to the same entities that are supposed to be overgrown and powerful, hence needing to be rolled back. Wrigley writes that:

> The truth is that the soldiers are good at killing. They have no other competence and no useful role in present-day Africa. There will begin to be hope when they have retired, not just to their barracks, but to their villages. And the liquidation of the armies is just one, though the most urgent, aspect of a highly desirable development: the drastic reduction in the power, the cost and the pretension of the state (1988:34-35).

Such a perspective towards the military and the common tendency by commentators and analysts to conflate increased economic output with development partly inspires the pressure donors put on aid-dependent countries to 'demobilise' their armed forces even when the end result is 'reintegration into poverty' (Baare, 2001).[121] While it may be important to prioritise fiscal matters, and advisedly so in ideal situations, it would be counterintuitive for the authorities of a country emerging from years of anarchy to discharge all at once large numbers of former insurgents and defeated government soldiers that are

[121] A World Bank study has shown that discharged veterans in Uganda were not coping with 'civilian life', earning on average an income that was only about half that of the average Ugandan (Colletta et al, 1995, p.46).

unemployable, brutalised, disoriented and beyond the control and reach of the insubstantial civilian authorities. As Ball et al. put it, in Uganda's case, demobilised troops would have had '…little civilian experience, no savings, and limited vocational skills with which to facilitate their reintegration into everyday life' (1997:258).

Moreover, the actual composition of the 'former combatants' 'or ex-combatants' in civil wars often remains inadequately scrutinised. As already recognised by many commentators, the term 'ex-combatant', particularly in the context of civil wars is shorthand for a heterogeneous groups of individuals who differ from each other depending on rank, political ideology of their group, type of military organisation they belong(ed) to, age, gender, war-related disability, educational and professional attainment and experience (Giustozzi, 2009; McMullin, 2013). Even when serious attempts are made to study the composition of fighting groups, it often remains unclear whether detailed attention is paid to the wide range of needs of the diverse categories of former fighters, particularly their long-term future following discharge. For example, combatants in Uganda in 1986 included uprooted youths and minors, some of whom were total orphans, who in the course of conflict had sought refuge with the insurgents, either after being disconnected from their parents or losing them in crossfire or at the hands of government troops. As has been put succinctly by the 1996 UNICEF State of the World's Children report,

> When schools are closed and families fragmented, there are few influences that can compete with a warrior's life. Indeed, in these circumstances, a military unit can be something of a refuge—serving as a kind of surrogate family (UNICEF, 1996:17).

In the case of Uganda, Kayihura has reported that by the time the NRA overrun Kampala in January 1986, there were 300 underage fighters, the number rising to

1,580 in 1991 as anti-government fighting groups surrendered (2000, p. 14). [122] For that category of 'combatants' whose place in society would ordinarily have been an orphanage - none of which were functional - the victorious insurgency group was the only known family. For that group of combatants, 'reintegration' into economically productive life and a return to their homes was a clueless whistle in the wind, or worse still, a cynical gesture. On the part of the government, the hasty dispersal of such groups in the name of demobilisation would have amounted to dousing a smouldering fire with an explosive mixture, in addition to abandoning the vulnerable. Such 'demobilisation' was therefore never considered an option. The decision not to 'demobilise' was influenced by several factors, some purely military/operational and others political. Many of these factors demonstrate the extent to which external actors on the one hand, and local policy elites in the Third World on the other, view crucial questions of security and development through opposite ends of the same lens.

First, from the perspective of the NRM government, the decision to incorporate the fighters of other rebel groups and the soldiers of the defunct national military into the NRA was crucial for the attainment of short-term stability as well as for long-term pacification of the country (Museveni, 1997; Ondoga, 1998). As Babiker and Ozerdem, have observed, incorporation '…reduced the immediate danger posed by large numbers of armed men who had no source of livelihood other than their weapons in a devastated country'. In the short term, '…those with arms and grievances were not allowed back into society until the fruits of economic expansion became more available' (Adams, 2002:3). The negotiations between the NRA and the Acholi-based rebel Uganda People's Democratic Army (UPDA) – the latter consisting mainly of soldiers of the UNLA – demonstrated the urgency with which fighters that had been soldiers in the national military force desired to be restored to paid employment. Lamwaka

122 In that report, Kayihura also disputes the claim by UNICEF (1996) that the NRA had an estimated 3,000 children, including 500 girls.

reports that the first meeting of the NRA/UPDA peace talks on 17th March 1988 dwelt exclusively on jobs for the ex-rebel combatants, promotion and integration into the NRA (2002:30).

Secondly and significantly for future prospects for post-1986 'demobilisation', the NRM government generally converted the newly inaugurated national military force into a 'holding bay' for individuals that over the years had become insurgents or regular soldiers for reasons noted above. The orthodox DDR continuum was turned on its head with emphasis being placed on the need to 'reintegrate' the insurgents who had spent years on the fringes of civic life, into the national military force. Additionally, unlike what followed after the collapse of the Idi Amin government six years earlier, the new government steered clear of the 'policy' of 'Bremmerian' disbandment,[123] whereby the military personnel of the deposed government were literally dismissed just because their tenure of service coincided with a discredited political regime.[124]

Thirdly, at just about 14,000 strong in January 1986 (Mamdani, 2001:174), the NRA's manpower base was, according to the group's key leaders, not sufficient to minimally secure the whole country, a factor that automatically ruled out donor-driven 'demobilization', but instead called for the rapid expansion of the force. According to Museveni, the NRA '…needed trained manpower quickly and we decided to utilize the existing manpower to consolidate security in the country'. He further adds that, the military leadership 'took a positive decision to incorporate soldiers from other forces into the NRA' (1997: 174). This process of incorporating soldiers defecting from the government force and fighters of other insurgent groups began before the NRM gained full control of the government and climaxed

123 The term 'Bremmerian' is coined from the names of Paul Bremmer, the first US civilian administrator of post-Saddam Iraq under whose brief the Iraqi military was summarily disbanded in the name of 'debaathification' contributing to the unstable conditions that continue to obtain in that country.

124 In 1979, the joint Tanzania Peoples Defence Forces (TPDF)-Uganda National Liberation Front (UNLF) either summarily shot or, detained surrendering or captured Uganda Army (UA) soldiers and dispatched them to the maximum security prison within Uganda and other prisons in Tanzania.

in the second half of 1985, a period that coincided with the Nairobi Peace talks between the government and Museveni's NRA. Of the 18 combat battalions making up the NRA six months after the capture of power, seven were manned by personnel from other rebel groups that had crossed to the NRA or from soldiers of the deposed government.[125]

Fourth, the NRM sought to incorporate the soldiers and fighters of other groups as a confidence-building measure, an opportunity that would have been lost if demobilisation had been implemented much earlier. Confidence building was crucial for the new government, especially given the narrow geographical confines of the NRM/A's politico-military campaign prior to its ascendance to power. By 1986, the organisation's political base generally conformed to Uganda's geo-ethnic fault-lines, with the group's membership predominantly drawn from the central and western regions. Co-opting fighters from all parts of the country was viewed as a means of addressing that deficiency, and as key to boosting the new government's appeal among the populations in those regions from which the other group's fighters hailed, a point Museveni stresses when he observes that,

> [T]hese soldiers were already trained, and although they had been widely misused....we saw the problem as one of leadership, not the soldiers themselves. At the same time, we were aware that incorporating these young men into our new national army would help build confidence among the population in the regions that they came from. For those two reasons we decided to absorb them.[126]

Fifth, by 1986 Uganda's central state structures and much of the social and economic infrastructure had suffered almost two decades of unmitigated atrophy. The institutions of law and order – the police, prisons, courts system, and local government administration - had all virtually collapsed. All that was left of the civil police was a mere 6,000 demoralised personnel (Biddle et al., 1998:13), way below the 34,000 that the United Nations would have recommended for Uganda's population of 15 million in 1986. The country was under-policed to the tune of 467

125 Ibid, p. 175.
126 Ibid, p.174.

per cent. In addition, there existed no viable economic activity to absorb the veterans of the myriads fighting groups and the soldiers and auxiliaries of the defunct national military force, the UNLA.

Sixth and of major significance was the real meaning of the triumph of the largely southern NRA in terms of Uganda's historical trajectory. The NRA's victory upset Uganda's longstanding politico-military tradition that up to 1986 enabled the elites of the North of the country to exercise unchallenged political dominance in relation to the elites from other regions. Such a precedent had to provoke a vicious counterattack against the new government - much as it did, just six months after the NRA/M overthrew the government of the short-lived military junta that had succeeded Milton Obote's deposed UPC government. Under those circumstances, a drawdown in the strength of the NRA - as the aid donors were urging, purely on narrow pecuniary grounds - would have been self-defeating in the short to medium term, as events soon proved. Such pressing realities are often neglected as priorities by the 'development partners', as epitomised by Collier et al. in their observation that 'demobilization in Uganda ….was initially delayed for the wrong reasons' (2000:73).

From the foregoing, the donor community's drive for 'demobilisation' and the NRA/M's pressing urge to gain legitimacy and acceptance by the country's diverse communities, operated at cross-purposes. The DDR process and whatever else was to follow thereon was therefore fraught with the seeds of future admonitions of 'lack of political will' and denial of 'local ownership' on the part of Uganda government by aid donors, not so much because it lacked either of the two, but because it had its own ideas as to what direction the management of the country's affairs had to take. In the process, the NRA had within the first six years of its formalisation as the national military, swollen in personnel strength by at least 400 per cent, from 20,000 in 1986 (Museveni, 1997:174), to about 100,000 in 1991 (Hansen & Twaddle, 1991:14; Prunier, 94:71).

5.4.2. ***'Disarmament' by unconditional incorporation***

According to Kingma, '…in Uganda, the disarmament took place in the barrack, before the soldiers were taken to the demobilization centres' (Kingma, 1997: 161), with Colletta et al. (1996) and Mahling-Clark (2007) holding a similar view. However, there is limited evidence to show that the Ugandan authorities viewed the disarmament of the diverse armed groups as a viable option for pacification or even as a priority. Instead, the evidence suggests that the Ugandan government opted for a less direct approach to the problem of arms management involving the absorption of members of all armed groups into the NRA and regularising them as soldiers. Kutesa, one of the leading commanders in the NRA from its early days as a guerrilla force and currently in charge of the UPDF's department of doctrine has written that, after defeating the UNLA:

> The next task the new government faced was building a new national army. There were many groups of armed people who had to be absorbed into the army. The NRA policy was to incorporate anybody willing to cross, provided he did not have a criminal record and was fit for military service....The different had different backgrounds and ideologies. Most of them were semi-trained while some had undergone military courses at diverse colleges....These officers and men who had different training and cultural backgrounds had to be merged into one national army (2006:255).

For the last two decades, this has remained the prime method of dealing with and neutralising the insurgent groups that have kept emerging. The long-term merits of this approach may be subject to debate, but the practice needs to be recognised when seeking the correct lessons from the Uganda process. The NRA would have been the only actor at the time to have some aversion to unconditional incorporation, either to guard against infiltration and being subverted from within or to protect its well-established standards of discipline from being compromised. Kutesa further notes, '[t]his policy [of unconditional incorporation] might have seemed risky but we were in complete control of all the troops...' (2006:255). Ondoga, also a veteran of the guerrilla phase of NRA's existence has highlights the

implications for civil-military relations of the policy of unconditional incorporation in observing that:

> The indiscriminate incorporation into the NRA of these fighting forces and former armies was of course not without its problems. The population, for one thing, loathed most of these groups and would rather have them locked up and brought to book. There was thus the danger that by incorporating them into its ranks, the NRA risked alienating itself from the masses (Ondoga, 1998: 150).

Museveni (1997:175) and Kutesa stress the fact that, some of the groups were even left to deploy intact as units with their own commanders. 'At Frist', notes Kutesa, 'we had tried to distribute them among our existing formations but after some time, we just kept them as they came without even changing their commanders'.[127] The policy did not pass without problems. One of the battalions formed after the capture of Kampala was constituted out of the disbanded Uganda Freedom Movement (UFM) – an anti-Obote rebel outfit made up exclusively of Baganda – whose leader, Dr Andrew Kayiira had joined the Museveni government. The battalion, designated as 35 Battalion, was deployed in Kitgum where it immediately set out to carry out reprisals against the local Acholi because of the atrocities carried out in Buganda by their co-ethnics then manning the military of the deposed government of Obote and subsequently, Okello. It is that battalion's excesses that are questionably referred to as having sparked off the rebellion in Acholi in August 1986 by many including Behrend (1998) and Atkinson (2010). Upon receiving reports of the actions of that battalion Museveni ordered its disbandment and court-martials for many of its members followed by lengthy prison sentences.[128] Opio-Epelu in his book on the Teso war, 1986-1992 also refers to the indiscipline of 73 Battalion constituted from former rebels of UNRFI of General Moses Ali,[129] currently the First Deputy Prime Minister. Upon being

---

127 Ibid.

128 Ondoga, Ibid.

129 Gen Ali from Madi in West Nile also held the Finance portfolio in Idi Amin's government before the political and military elite of his Madi ethnic group fell out with Amin (see section 1.2.2). He

formed, that unit was deployed in Kumi, in Teso region where it is reported to have carried out revenge attacks on the local Itesot population because of the harassment they meted out on Nubians in 1979 when the Amin government fell (Opio-Epelu, 2009:43). That battalion faced the same fate as 35 Bn referred to above.

It would appear that the potential drawbacks of indiscriminate incorporation as the case of UFM's 35 and 73 Battalion shows have generally been considered less risky than the alternative. Even as the DFiD-funded SSR progressed, more fighters opposed to the Museveni government were still being incorporated into the UPDF. In December 2002, the Government of Uganda signed a peace deal with the Uganda National Rescue Front II (UNRF II) that had ever since the fall of Idi Amin operated from bases in Southern Sudan against successive governments. According to the peace deal, 700 UNRF II were incorporated in the UPDF.[130] The group was formed by soldiers who served under Idi Amin who were never resettled after their defeat in 1979 by the joint force of the Tanzanian military and Ugandan exiles. Similarly, in April 2004 surrendering LRA fighters were formed up into 105 Battalion and incorporated into the UPDF.[131]

The point that requires emphasis here is that, instead of simply focusing on controlling the weaponry of adversaries, the top priority of the Museveni government, as noted above, was confidence building, by managing the war-fighters themselves rather than their equipment. The rationale was that it would not have been feasible to elicit the co-operation of those who viewed their weapons as their life if their surrender had been made a pre-condition for

---

formed a rebel group to fight the immediate post-Amin governments due to their indiscriminate persecution of those thought to have been associated with Amin. He eventually made a settlement with Museveni in 1986.

130 BBC News, Dec 26, 2002, 'Uganda signs peace deal with rebels', at http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/africa/2607683.stm, accessed on 29 July 2014.

131 New Vision, Apr 30, 2004 'Ex-rebel battalion formed', http://www.newvision.co.ug/D/8/12/357238, accessed on 29 July 2014. There are also reports that a second battalion, 106th was fromed to accommodate the defecting LRA (International Crisis Group, 2010, p.6).

integration into the NRA. Without a demonstrated willingness for co-existence and (re)conciliation, disarmament, if not weapon confiscation can undermine confidence and increase a feeling of vulnerability among the disputants – creating the conditions for a 'security dilemma'. In any case, the withdrawal of weaponry, whether consensual or coercive, is not synonymous with pacification, especially when, as Berdal observes,

> [C]onditions on the ground are fluid, central authority is weak and country-wide security correspondingly lacking, the 'peace and reconciliation process' is highly vulnerable to changes in local allegiances, as well as to any shift in the external balance of external forces (1996:28).

Disarmament is based on the linear reasoning that confidence comes from knowing that one's adversary lacks the capacity to inflict harm. However, insurgents will in most cases have started off as unarmed civilians who after being drawn into rebel ranks acquired weapons by raiding government forces, or by purchasing them from licit or illicit arms traders. Even if such arms are confiscated or surrendered following the cessation of hostilities, hardened former insurgents will very easily replace them, especially if it becomes evident that they may still be needed, a reality that Spears highlights in pointing out that:

> When weapons are so widely available as they are in Sub Saharan Africa's conflict zones and when it is so difficult to verify their eradication, greater confidence may exist when each group knows the other is armed than in disarming and having to live with uncertainty over whether an adversary can still attack them (Spears, 2000: 36).

But quite apart from the futility of dogmatic disarmament in conditions of unlimited arms supply, it is also true that instruments of violence are mere implements, or in Possony's words 'nothing but a tool'; as he adds 'nobody has yet been able to prove that weapons cause war and to disprove that, on the contrary, it is war or the danger of war which produces the weapons' (1944:223). This makes the insistence on dispossessing former insurgents of their tools a diversionary, even

counterproductive undertaking, especially when it has no impact on supplies; and when it amounts to merely lowering the level of technology of violence.[132] What is being called into question here is the common view that 'disarmament removes the means by which civil wars have been prosecuted and thus prevents re-ignition of conflict, and helps in confidence-building' (Spear, 1999:2).

It should be noted that the NRM's bold decision not to compel fighters of other groups to surrender their weapons was made possible by the way in which the 1981-86 conflict ended. The NRA emerged as the single decisive victor and this factor shaped subsequent events. The world's relative disinterest in Uganda, it should also be noted, made it possible to 'give war a chance', thereby enabling a decisive winner to emerge without a stalemate. This outcome gave the victorious group enough confidence not to insist on weapon surrender by other groups. In some instances, whole units of former opposing groups were left intact and absorbed into the NRA, some under their own command. Once all the armed groups had the confidence that they would gain automatic membership to the new national military force, the rug had been pulled out from under the feet of the usual problems associated with disarmament. Subsequently, the management of arms became part of the broader and routine management of personnel bearing arms, including their assignment, training, promotion, disciplinary action and discharge. If a former member of a disbanded insurgent group is reassigned from one battalion to another, he turns in the weapon he may have acquired as an insurgent to the armoury of the unit he is departing, in addition to all other kit belonging to that unit. He then proceeds to his next unit where if necessary, he is rearmed and kitted up as required by his mission. If he becomes a motor vehicle operator, he is assigned a vehicle, if he becomes a clerk, he is assigned a word-processing machine, and as a rifleman he is assigned a rifle, and so on. In other

132 As the 1994 events in Uganda's South-western neighbour - Rwanda - clearly demonstrated, once the stage for irreconcilable dissension has been set, there can be no limits to imagination and innovativeness on what to employ as instruments of violence.

words, the weapon, which he may have acquired during his days as a guerrilla becomes the property of the institution.[133]

What becomes evident then is, that the unconditional amalgamation of armed groups into a unified national military force and their subsequent regularisation nullified the requirement for disarmament, and in fact provided a remedy to all the typical obstacles to disarmament. As Anton Baare – a former World Bank official closely associated with the Uganda 'DDR' – has noted the Uganda exercise targeted

> [S]oldiers in the national army who served under an effective and unified military command'; further emphasising that, 'Disarmament, a crucial issue in other DRPs [Demobilisation and Reintegration Programmes], was therefore never part of the Uganda exercise' (Baaré, 2001).

By the time the 'demobilisation' was initiated in 1992 six years after the NRA's victory over the UNLA there were no fighting groups to disarm.

5.4.3. ***Giving war a chance and nurturing a decisive winner***

The argument thus far may give the impression that by allowing fighters of other groups especially the former adversaries to keep their weapons, the NRA/M was taking a bold or even foolhardy policy position. However, disinterest in weapon confiscation was secondary to the decision to incorporate those forces into the NRA at all. That initial decision was made possible by the manner of termination of the 1981-86 conflict which saw the NRA emerging as the single decisive winner, enabling it to take charge of the talks – on its own terms and without third party intervention – with the many armed factions that had emerged on Uganda's political scene in the 1980s. The world's relative disinterest in Uganda made it possible to 'give war a chance' – to borrow from Luttwak's highly perceptive 1999

---

[133] Similarly, if such a soldier is due for discharge – like the NRA mass discharge that has been passed off as 'demobilisation' – he would be subjected to the out-processing routine that includes turning in non-personal military stores, weaponry inclusive. It may be a misrepresentation to portray this as a case of disarmament, as Kingma does when he refers to disarmament 'in the barracks' (Kingma, 1994:17).

article – allowing a decisive winner to emerge and force other groups to negotiate their surrender. This is the point that Baaz,and Verweijen tend to overlook in their examination of the obstacles to rebel integration in Forces Armées de la République Démocratique du Congo (FARDC, Armed Forces of the DRC) leading them to predictably conclude along the *post hoc* logic of rational choice theory, that '...failed military integration – like slow progress with SSR generally – is a result of the government cunningly masquerading as genuinely committed to reform, while consciously sabotaging it' (2013:577). In the very same paper, they correctly point out that '...government negotiated from a position of weakness...'[134] and go on further to substantiate by spelling out the predicament of the DRC state:

> [T]he CNDP was awarded an impressive number of important command positions within newly created operational structures. They also obtained privileged access to lucrative areas of deployment, like those rich in natural resources, important trade routes, and border crossings.

Ceding the monopoly of coercion and the power to extract resources to an armed faction is a symptom of a malaise within the DRC polity that by far, goes beyond the minutiae of integration or the cunningness by the DRC government to obstruct SSR. To that extent, the integration-related arguments by Baaz,and Verweijen are diversionary and emblematic of the title of this study.

To shed more light on the point that Baaz,and Verweijen are overlooking, we need to recapitulate the three common scenarios of civil war termination as they are implied by Berdal's classification of the sets of circumstances in which DDR takes place (1996:9-11). First, is termination of conflict through a stalemate necessitating a negotiated settlement; second, is termination of conflict following the collapse of central state structures and the intervention of third parties to impose peace; and third, is when one armed group or a coalition emerges victorious and installs a new government on its own terms. DRC oscillates between the first and second scenario while Uganda conforms to the third

134 Ibid p. 570.

scenario. Because of the way in which hostilities have tended to terminate in Uganda, none of the two dozen or so armed factions that were integrated in the NRA/UPDF have deserted to resume warfare against the government. Three Leaders of some of those factions who after joining the government contemplated, or were deemed to be contemplating subversion against the NRM from within were arrested and tried in courts of law; and when that happened, their armed followers – by then fully integrated into the NRA/UPDF – were never reported to have risen up in aid of their former leaders.[135] Their loyalties lay elsewhere. New armed movements may have emerged after 1986 (Appendix A), but there is no evidence to show that they were re-incarnations of any of those that had in the past been integrated into the NRA/UPDF. Museveni has maintained the approach of being a decisive victor and compelling his armed opponents to lose the will to fight before negotiating with them or integrating them into the military or having their political wings co-opted in government. He highlights this point in his paper on protracted war in which he observes that,

> [I]n the end, for the cause to win, you must fight conventional warfare. Unless, of course, you weaken the other side through guerrilla warfare and then the other side negotiates, and you get a political settlement. There is also that possibility, when the other side does not wait for the conclusion of the whole affair militarily (2008:7).

The negotiations the NRA/NRM undertakes are negotiations for the armed opponent to surrender when he has been weakened. If during the course of negotiations the adversary demonstrates that he has not yet lost the will to fight but is only buying time to rest, reconstitute and rearm, the tendency for Museveni has been to issue an ultimatum for surrender or to resume hostilities for as long as

---

[135] These were Dr. Andrew Kayiira of Uganda Freedom Movement (UFM), Dr. David Lwanga of Federal Democratic Movement (Fedemo) and Brigadier (now General) Moses Ali of UNRF. Moses Ali, at the time, minister of youth, culture and sport was arrested in April 1990 on treason charges. He remained in prison for twenty-six months until his acquittal in June 1992, when it was confirmed that the allegations against him were based on intrigue connected with the power struggles that had earlier led to the split of the UNRF into UNRF I and II. He was brought back in government and is currently a deputy Prime Minister (See HRW, 1999, Hostile to Democracy, http://www.hrw.org/reports/pdfs/u/uganda/ugan998.pdf, accessed on 20 September 2014).

it takes to exhaust the adversary. Even during the 'bush war', he only contemplated negotiations when the NRA started to demonstrate that it was strong enough to make the transition from guerrilla tactics to larger scale mobile warfare and to launch decisive attacks against major government military installations in broad day light. In his autobiography, *Sowing the Mustard Seed*, he observes that, '...towards the end of 1984...we started exploring the possibility of talks with some of Obote's commanders. It was becoming clear to us that Obote would soon be defeated...' (1996:160). Obote was to be deposed in July 1985.

That approach has been in evidence in talks with the LRA. Writing about the 1993/94 talks between the NRA and LRA, O'Kadameri refers to a point in the talks when Otti Lagony, the LRA negotiator started demanding for uniform 'since we are almost one', whereupon he was asked by one of the NRA representatives, Brigadier Joram Mugume: 'If you are negotiating a peace deal to come out of the bush, why do you need uniform?'. Mugume is reported to have further told the LRA negotiator that he (Mugume) 'thought you had come here to negotiate surrender' (2002: 40).

Even at the point in his career when he seemed most vulnerable, Museveni never sought to negotiate settlements with his military adversaries if such negotiations were not going to be on his own terms. Less than a month following the 25 July 1985 overthrow of Milton Obote, the instigators of the coup invited all armed groups that were fighting against the deposed government to sign an agreement to become part of the ruling Military Council. The groups that joined the post-Obote government were the Federal Democratic Movement (FEDEMO), Uganda Freedom Movement (UFM), Uganda National Rescue Front (UNRF) and Former Uganda National Army (FUNA).[136] Subsequently, the unsuccessful Nairobi Peace talks of September to December 1985 were initiated to find an accommodation with Museveni's NRA/M in a power sharing agreement. Both sides violated the agreement and in the event, the NRA advanced on Kampala and

[136] Otunnu, op cit. p.166.

deposed the military council and emerged as the decisive winner. Tandon sums up the fate of the Nairobi peace negotiations, and with it the government of the Okellos, by observing that:

> The negotiations lengthened into months until Museveni was strong enough in the south to call all the shots. By the time agreement was reached on power-sharing, it was already dead. The NRA simply marched over the ramshackle and internally divided armies of the "broad-based" government of Lutwa, took over power, and now, from a position of strength, began to negotiate with each of the other parties and "armies" separately to see how they could be "accommodated" in his "broadbased" government, and on his terms (1987:87).

Studies on the relationship between the manner of conflict termination and the likelihood of relapse consistently vindicate those that pursue the strategy of ensuring decisive victories, however long it may seem to take for observers. It is repeatedly observed in the literature that peace tends to be more stable and durable following decisive military victories than following armed conflicts that end in stalemates, whether in civil or in interstate conflicts (Maoz, 1984; Licklider, 1995; Stinnett and Diehl, 2001; Toft, 2006; Fortna, 2004). Toft found that wars ended by military victory were nearly twice as likely to remain settled than those ended by negotiated settlement following a ceasefire or stalemate. She finds that whereas only 12 percent of wars ending in military victories recurred, 29.2 percent of wars ending in negotiated settlements recurred and 33.3 percent of wars that ended in ceasefires or stalemates recurred. She sums up her findings by observing that, wars ended by negotiated settlement are three times more likely to re-ignite than those ended by military victory (2006:16). She is supported by Fortna's finding that the hazard for another war drops by 70-90% when war termination is by way of a decisive military outcome (2004:286).[137] Similarly Licklider reports a

[137] Toft further notes that indecisive military outcomes leave all sides capable of resuming the fight, and no one fully satisfied with the terms of the peace, a finding that is particularly consistent with the pattern one observes in Lusophone Africa. In Mozambique every so often, *Resistência*

strong statistical correlation between military victories and stable peace. He has observed that civil wars did not occur in 85 percent of the countries that experienced decisive military victories while there was a resumption of hostilities 50 percent of the conflicts settled by negotiated settlements (1995:685). Those patterns are overlooked by those like Baaz,and Verweijen (2013); Verweijn (2014) among many others who do not look for deeper empirical regularities but instead opt for turning correlation into causation, as evidenced by the attempt to directly link integration of rebel forces and reversion to hostilities; or even the *post hoc* inferences characteristic of rational actor model theorists in their analysis of the relationship between protracted warfare, such as that conducted by those who hold that decisive military victories, and such common human traits as corruption.

5.4.4. ***Regularisation as a requisite for regulation***

Upon assuming state power, the NRM faced the challenge of reconfiguring itself into a government and institutionalising its military arm, the NRA, into an organ that owed allegiance not merely to the NRM, but to the state. The pressure to adjust to the new role of being a national military force, the need to disentangle the dual or even multiple roles of key commanders, coupled with the rapid absorption of other fighting groups called for the process of regularisation, i.e., the standardisation of organisational and operational doctrine. Without an idea of how the armed forces - and indeed any other organisation - should be structured and resourced in relation to its current and anticipated missions, any attempt to make a definitive stand to alter the structure and personnel numbers of such an organisation could only have been conjectural, and thus essentially flawed. This stands out as the key weakness of public sector retrenchments (including military

---

Nacional Moçambicana (RENAMO) keeps threatening the government, part of which it is, with war; or with splitting up the country. RENAMO resumed armed hostilities in April 2013 and signed yet another deal with government in September 2014 (*BBC News* 'Mozambique rivals agree ceasefire ahead of elections', 25 August 2014; http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-28923524, accessed on 20 September 2014). Such a scenario is unlikely in Angola where MPLA won a decisive victory.

demobilisations) inspired by technocrats of the international financial institutions such as the World Bank. The insistence that Uganda needed to downsize its military is even more puzzling when looked at against the background of the events in the decade leading to 1986. That period saw two national Armies being overrun, one in 1979, by the military of neighbouring Tanzania and the other in 1986, by the NRA guerrillas. Donor insistence on downsizing of the NRA as early as 1986 would almost suggest that the previous two official militaries – Uganda Army (1971-1979) and Uganda National Liberation Army (1980-1986) – underperformed because they were oversized. It is equally curious that the donors never make recommendations for an increase in the size of the military forces of a Third World country even when there may be compelling reasons to do so. One can only conclude that downsizing is an arbitrary and dogmatic formulation with little or no bearing on the security interests of aid-dependent countries.

On the question of ranks, it is important to note that, throughout its existence as a guerrilla force, the NRA did not adopt conventional military ranks, principally, to avoid internal tensions and to maintain coherence and camaraderie amongst fighters. This continued to be the case throughout the first two years of the NRA as the government military force and the amalgamation of other armed groups. The formal rank structure was eventually introduced in 1988, two years into the life of the NRM government, the only exception being August 1986 when officers and men of disbanded government forces were allowed to revert to their officially gazetted ranks.[138] In the interim period, those holding command positions at all levels were simply addressed as 'commander', and only five ranks were used amongst officers to recognise seniority in command and length of service in the NRA and its predecessors.[139] Even for the seemingly simple matter of computing 'retrenchment' and 'reinsertion' packages, one has to clearly set out the ranks of personnel affected by discharge, given that military privileges and benefits are

---

138 Kutesa, Ibid.

139 The ranks were, Provisional Junior Officer, Junior Officer II, Junior Officer I, Senior Officer I and Member of the High Command.

pegged to rank. The process of screening and grading of NRA personnel before formal ranks were announced took two years (Kutesa, 1988:261; Mudoola, 1991:242).

There is also the question of the factors that prompted the 'demobilisation' exercise and the considerations that affected its timing. What remains questionable is the claim that the reduction in the size of the NRA was prompted by an alarm made by the World Bank to cut back on military spending. For example, Colletta et al. indicate that, '[f]ollowing a World Bank Public Expenditure Review, the government's attention was called to the fact that inordinate defence expenditures were seriously crowding out other sectoral development efforts, particularly in education and health' (Colletta et al., 1996b:220). But as already pointed out, the government's primary concern seems to have been the extent to which the military wage bill was crowding out capital expenditure on weaponry in particular, as well as the general welfare of the soldier. As Ball et al. have observed that immediate savings for re-allocation to the social sectors were never realised because, '...one of the aims of the demobilization program was to create a more professional standing army, which required raising the salaries of the soldiers who remained on active duty' (1997:258). It is important to draw attention to this point so as not to give the consultations with the World Bank undeserved importance. For the government and military leaders, the utmost priority was the reconstitution of the national military and this involved, among other things, the formulation of an organisational structure and the translation of that structure - particularly the armament component - into a budget. The new structure was basically an organisational model stating the minimum essential requirements for personnel and equipment needed for the accomplishment of unit missions. It also set out the wartime mission, capabilities, structure, and the basic operational requirements in personnel and equipment for all unit types.

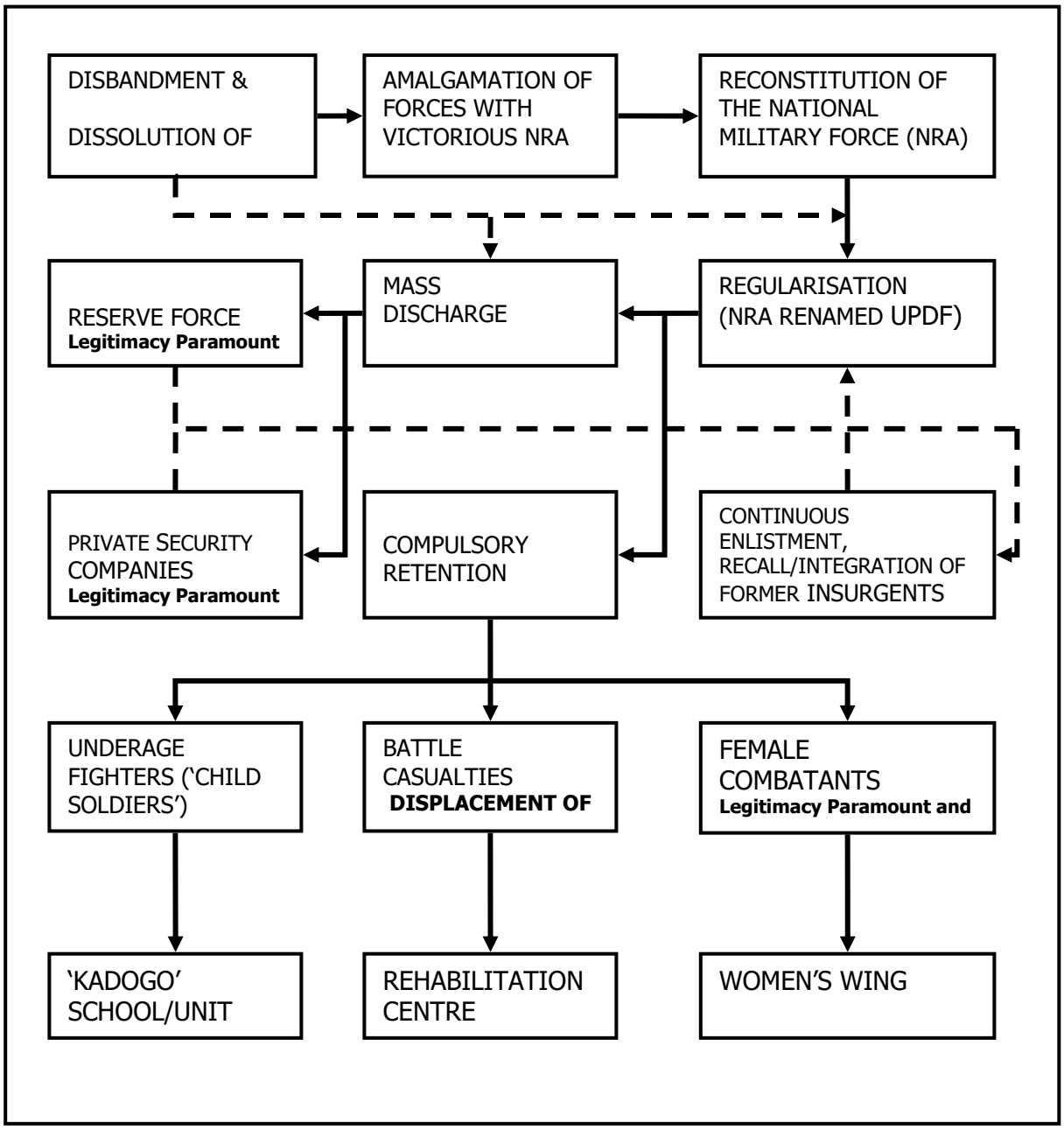
The process of crafting the NRA's organisational structure began in 1986 and lasted up to 1992, when the new structure or 'Army Establishment' was launched (Rwamirama, 1999). This is also the time when the government

supposedly approached the World Bank requesting technical and financial support to help 'demobilise' part of the military. Formulation of an organisational structure was carried out by a committee - the Establishment Committee - set up to study the organisational doctrines of the militaries of other countries with the view of developing the most appropriate format for the Ugandan armed forces. The committee also formulated the terms and conditions of service for the soldiers of the NRA and the duties of commanders and staff officers at all levels and appointments. The launch of the Establishment led to an extensive restructuring of the NRA following which it was decided that surplus personnel were to be discharged into the National Reserve. It was at this point that the so-called demobilisation was conceived. As one observer has noted,

> [T]he Museveni government made clever use of its good relations with the donors. One could even argue that the donors have assisted in modernizing Uganda's armed forces, by providing alternatives for many soldiers that were in any case not up to the quality required for a modernized force (Kingma, 2000:217).

That way, the Uganda government authorities forced the hand of bilateral and multilateral donors to fund what would otherwise have been a routine military activity, namely, continuous discharge of personnel that have requested to be retired on grounds of old age, ill health or in the hope of pursuing other career goals; in addition to those whose services may no longer be required and are discharged in the interest of the institution.

Figure 5: The Uganda 'DDR' Process



5.4.5. ***The Twin Myths Of Uganda's DDR: Retrenchment of Resources and Personnel***

In a 1991 address to the UN Economic and Social Council, the IMF Managing Director Michael Camdessus stressed the benefits of reducing what he called 'unproductive spending', emphasizing that countries running the fund's programs had to lower military expenditure to the 1988 average of 4.5 per cent of GDP, what has been dubbed as the 'Camdessus line.'[140] When Camdessus came up with what was clearly an arbitrary expenditure cap, IMF structural adjustment programmes had not yet been sufficiently discredited. Aid dependent countries in the global south were still required to cut back on public expenditure by retrenching public employees, among other measures. As already noted, the early 1990s witnessed a general drive by the donor countries of Western Europe to compel the aid dependent countries to shrink the size of their public sectors with the armed forces topping the list. The drastic change in the strategic environment in the developed donor countries in the 1990s allowed for steep decreases military expenditure which among other things encouraged the donor country development institutions to have the justification to push aid dependent countries to also reduce their military expenditure, particularly through downsizing.[141] It is necessary to reflect briefly on the success of aid donor pressure on reduction of expenditure in Uganda by means of supporting DDR and whether subsequent initiatives were destined to build on any such success.

The installation of the NRM government created the hope – particularly among the donors – that 1986 would mark the termination of widespread civil violence in the country. With the end of conflict, there would therefore be no

---

140 MacDonald, 1997, p. 185. Uganda has since had a defence expenditure cap of 2 per cent of GDP being slapped on it as a condition for international aid.

141 For example, between 1987 and 1996, OECD member countries reduced their military expenditure by almost 22 per cent, compared to developing countries, which as a group reduced theirs by only four per cent over the same period of time (Brzoska; 2003, p.7).

justification for defence expenditure to remain at the same level seen in the five years of the civil war. It may also have probably been assumed that there would be no future justification for it to exceed pre-1986 levels. The pre-NRM defence outlays, both capital and recurrent, averaged about 25 per cent of total government expenditure,[142] but in spite of donor optimism the first two years of the NRM government saw defence spending rising to 43 and then to 48 per cent of total government expenditure.[143] Recurrent expenditure increased from 28 per cent in 1986 to 43 per cent in 1988 and capital from 18 per cent to 38 per cent of the government's contribution to development expenditure.[144] Those increases alarmed the donors who responded by seeking to put pressure on the new government to restore military spending to its pre-1986 levels.[145] The 'demobilisation' initiated in 1992 was one of the measures devised to achieve this goal.

Following the initial phase of the exercise, defence expenditure as a proportion of total government expenditure dropped to 20 per cent and subsequently to 14.8 per cent, giving the donors the hope of a 'permanent reduction in defence expenditures' (Colletta et al., 1996:223). However, even the most detached examination of Uganda's history would have predicted the possibility of significant instability following the emergence of the NRM. Predictably, the 1990s decade was marked by episodes of internal violence in most regions of the country. First, in the Central North of the country, there was a marked upsurge in the levels of armed violence in the Acholi region, made easier by Khartoum's support to the LRA

142 By 1986, nearly 30% 0f the operating budget and 20% of the capital budget was allocated to the armed forces (Colletta et al, 1996, p.219)

143 Ibid.

144 Ibid.

145 Even without making a possible causal link between the meagre accomplishments of the defence sector in dealing with the high levels of insecurity in the early 1980s, with levels of spending on that sector, donors insisted on reducing the level expenditure to pre-1986 levels. During the first half of the 1980s, two regimes collapsed under the pressure of insurgency. In all likelihood, limited resources played a role in making it impossible for the government to muster sufficient capabilities to combat the insurgents. Therefore, spending levels of the period of failure cannot be realistically used as a standard for prudent resource management.

in form of logistics and rear bases and diplomatic support in retaliation for Uganda's tacit support to the Sudan Peoples' Liberation Movement and Army (SPLM/A). Second, there was a similar resurgence of rebellion in the Northwest due to increased activity by the Uganda National Rescue Front II (UNRFI) and West Nile Bank Front (WBNF). Like the LRA, the two groups received support from Khartoum. Third, in the West, part of the Southwest and Central regions, the Islamist Allied Democratic Front (ADF) rebel group, with bases in Eastern DRC, and, like the LRA, also receiving support from Khartoum stepped its campaign of urban terrorism and rural insurgency. From 1997, the gradual collapse of the government in neighbouring Zaire and the continuing use of rebel ADF of the country's eastern territory as a rear base gradually sucked Uganda into what was to become a long war that also led to the intervention by the militaries of at least five other countries African countries. In the central region, there was the short-lived rebellion by the Uganda national Democratic Alliance (UNDA) operating in Buganda region and in the North, the equally short-lived Citizen Army for Multiparty Politics (CAMP) led by the last Chief of Staff of the defunct UNLA.

Those factors dashed any hopes of reducing the government's military spending in line with bilateral and multilateral agency expectations. Figure 2 clearly demonstrates the surge in military expenditure following the 'DDR', and throughout the time when SSR was being implemented.

5.4.6. ***Incorporation of former fighting groups and the character of the NRA/UPDF***

Any seemingly commendatory assessment of the post-1986 attempts by the Ugandan authorities to reconstitute the military institution by incorporation of a multiplicity of fighting groups into the armed forces is likely to provoke observers of the events of the last two and a half decades to respond by cataloguing

accounts of NRA/UPDF's role in the events in Rwanda in the early 1990s,[146] its intervention in the Democratic Republic of Congo and Sudan from the late 1990s, reports of abuses and resource plunder in those countries,[147] reports of corruption by the military,[148] or even those of alleged abuse of populations in zones of operations.[149] Much as those reports may have received wide coverage in the media and in the writings of advocacy organisations and scholars, it is important for us to note that, by outlining the way the Uganda military has been managed post-1986, we are addressing a very specific concern: We were seeking to discount the claim that at the end of the NRA/UNLA war in early 1986 such a process as DDR took place as the literature we cite tends to suggest; and to stress that, by misconstruing what had happened earlier, external actors laid the ground for the difficulties faced by those that subsequently attempted to implement SSR, even if the latter initiative was not inherently encumbered with its own weaknesses related to the manner in which it was initially conceived. The task we set out for ourselves was to attempt to summarize the 'DDR' process as it took place, contrasting it with how the process is thought to have taken place: We were making a distinction between the empirical and the normative. The question of the value judgements that one may wish to make on the conduct of the military force that resulted from that process of reconstitution by incorporation is a separate one from the matter of clarifying whether the NRA underwent disarmament and demobilisation in 1986, or whether instead it underwent expansion. The view that the NRA/UPDF may subsequently have become abusive or turned into anything else whatsoever does not change the fact that, at the end of the 1981-1986 civil war it underwent expansion and not disarmament and demobilisation. It is the latter purely empirical question that we set out to address in addition to highlighting our view that, its disregard by the implementers of SSR

146 Adelman and Suhrke (1999), Keen (2012).
147 For example, International Court of Justice (2005), United Nations (2002).
148 Mwenda and Tangri (2001, 2003, 2013).
149 Dolan (2009).

had to result in the latter initiative's failure. We argue that the culprit of that failure is the dogmatism of normative thinking.

It is particularly necessary that the foregoing point is emphasized because none of the stated aims of reconstitution of the Uganda military by the method of incorporation were meant to be, or could even possibly have been an automatic, or logical guarantee that the composite force arising from the process would in future not invade other countries or be abusive locally and abroad, in whatever sense abuse is understood,[150] or on whatever standards military conduct is judged to be abusive. It does not even seem to be the case that incorporation of former adversaries by any one military force anywhere in the world is a standard or universal practice or doctrine with a set of guiding principles or moral purposes that one can cite as a reference point against which to judge the success or failure of the process. Countering the description of such an empirical process with normative questions is, in the epistemological sense that has partly preoccupied this study, an example of what Hatchett has called the 'fallacy of metaphysical questions', described as '…an attempt to resolve a non-empirical problem by empirical means' (1970:12). In its most ubiquitous format, the fallacy involves framing questions which cannot be resolved before the researcher settles some central metaphysical or normative conundrum such as our understanding of such value-related concerns as corruption, or the nature and meaning of human rights or their abuse and other matters that actually lie at the heart of our critique here. As Hatchet warns, '…these are questions which will not be resolved before the oceans freeze over'.[151]

On the question of the relationship between expansion of military forces by incorporating former adversaries and abusive behaviour, even within the narrow scope of Uganda's history, one finds that during the formative phase of country, the branch of the King's African Rifles (KAR) in the territory that was to constitute

---

[150] The question of abuses and how they are understood by a selection of those that have reported on them is explored in a separate chapter.

[151] Ibid.

Uganda was not put together by augmenting the Swahili levies of the IBEACo with the defeated forces of Kabarega of Bunyoro or those of Muwanga of Buganda in 1897 when the two monarchs finally surrendered: The early British administrators and military commanders either killed off the defeated indigenous forces or dispersed them into the countryside in what was to remain standard practice until 1985.[152] The fact that the KAR did not consider it necessary to incorporate elements of the forces it defeated did not prevent it (the KAR) from, concurrently and subsequently, carrying out actions that would be adjudged as abusive. As a matter of historical fact abusiveness was so central to the doctrine of the KAR that its dominant operational engagements were called 'punitive expeditions'.[153] The KAR's successor, the Uganda Army – the immediate post-independence force – consisted of two, later expanding to four ethnically-homogenous battalions (Omara-Otunnu, 1988:12; Stapleton, 2013:89). When that level of manning is looked at against the NRA's personnel strength in 1992 of more than 100 battalions, one can conclude that the early post-independence Uganda Army was 'unexpanded'. However, its order of battle as a miniscule organisation did not deter it from being abusive or predatory as demonstrated by the events in Buganda region of Uganda and in Congo, from 1964 to 1966.[154]

Later in the country's history, the reconstitution of the armed forces after the defeat of Idi Amin in 1979 never relied on expanding the Uganda National Liberation Army (UNLA) – the post-1979 military – by incorporating the forces that served under the outgoing regime. Many of those who served in the military and paramilitary forces from 1971 to 1979 were rounded up and shot, or were locked up locally in Uganda, or in prisons in Tanzania.[155] The incorporation of 'Amin's soldiers' in the post-1979 military remained out of the question. Those that were

---

[152] For details of the events Stapleton (2013), Colville (1895) and Moyse-Bartlett (1956) are good sources.

[153] Ibid.

[154] Details of these events are covered in Ibingira (1973), Sathyamurthy (1986), Mamdani (1976), Kirunda-Kivejinja (1995) and Mutiibwa (1992).

[155] For details of this process, see Avirgan and Honey (1982).

not captured escaped to neighbouring Sudan and then-Zaire together with much of the population of West Nile resulting in the situation that led to the creation of insurgency groups such as the WNBF I, WNBF II, UNRF I, UNRF II and FUNA. The fact that defeated forces were not integrated into the immediate post-1979 military, the UNLA, did not deter it from being abusive as was the case in Luwero Triangle between 1981 and 1985, where at least 300,000 people died (Kasozi, 1994:4); in West Nile and Karamoja during the same period and in the Southwest of the country especially in 1982.[156] As already noted, the seven years of the existence of the post-Amin military were marked by a brutal but unsuccessful campaign against six guerrilla groups in the centrally-located Buganda region and in West Nile region. There is no evidence to show that at any time, the Obote government sought to negotiate peace with any of those groups or too integrate them into the government armed forces as a pacification measure.[157] In September 1982 the UNLA overrun the forest camps of the UFM after the latter's failed assault on one of the Obote regime's largest military garrisons in Kampala. Several hundred of UFM guerrillas were captured and presented to the press and following the well-established pattern of dealing with defeated adversaries, they were locked up at the country's high security jail.[158] Those that did not die in jail were subsequently freed when the NRA overran Kampala in January 1986 with some being eventually integrated into the ranks of the NRA.[159] No correlation has

---

156 For an account of the abuses of the UNLA, see Kasozi (1994) and Minority Rights Group (1989).

157 An attempt by Museveni's NRA/M to respond to offers of a negotiated settlement by Baganda and Acholi elements of the Obote government ended with the murder of the NRA emissary in Kampala in November 1984 (Museveni, 1997: 160).

158 Minority Rights Group (1989) and Bwengye (1985) provide details of related events.

159 On the arrest and incarceration by the Obote government (1980-1985) of UFM fighters see Bwengye (1985:380). Among those that survived prison life is the former UFM Chief of Staff Captain Mark Kodili, currently a UPDF Colonel; then Chief of Operations of UFM, Major Hussein Adda, now a UPDF Brigadier, a sergeant Kasirye Gwanga, now a UPDF Brigadier and presidential advisor. One Captain Ndugute Stephen also joined the NRA and was among those who crossed over to Rwanda in 1990 to fight the Habyarimana regime. By the time of his death in 1997 he had risen to the rank of Colonel (The Observer, 08 July 2009 'Open Secrets: Museveni's untold role in RPF war'; Tarehe Sita (UPDF Journal), Volume 16, p. 47).

been observed between UNLA's policy of non-incorporation of adversaries and its human rights record; neither was the UNLA ever able to transform itself into a functional military force. Under sustained pressure from the NRA, the leaders of the UNLA seem to have been unable to keep in check the internal power struggles between the Acholi, Lango and Teso officers leading to factional fights that resulted in the crumbling of the force, the overthrow of Obote by his Acholi generals in July 1985 and the eventual overthrow of the remnants of the regime by the NRA six months later.[160]

The point is that, whatever demerits one may wish to ascribe to the policy of incorporation of defeated armed groups, it is the case that first, all pre-1986 Ugandan military forces did not pursue that policy; second, they were also not known for a high standard of observance of human rights; third, they are not known for having been functional particularly in the very basic sense of being able to subsist as coherent organisations with a unified command able to deliver on their basic mission of neutralising internal subversion and warding off external aggression. The NRA/UPDF has been the first military force in Uganda's history to be able to neutralise all its internal armed adversaries – at least two-dozen of them – and to effectively degrade their capability without suffering from internal strains that in the past caused mutinies and even overthrow of governments. In the context of Uganda's history, normativist judgments on functionality or the lack of it can carry sense if they are made (if they must be made at all) against that benchmark and indeed the problem we are faced with in respect of normativity and ethical judgments is related to the criteria for benchmark selection. The Uganda Army of 1962-1971 was faction-ridden and it is that factionalism that caused the coup d'état of 1971 that led to the emergence of Idi Amin. The reorganisation of Uganda Army by Idi Amin resulted in the massacre of scores of Acholi and Lango soldiers to give way to Amin's own kinsmen. The confrontation between Uganda Army under Amin and the Tanzanian military and a coalition of

---

[160] For an overview of factional infighting in the UNLA see Minority Rights Group, 1989, p.9.

Ugandan exiles following Amin's ordering of the occupation Tanzania's Kagera salient late in 1978 provoked a Tanzanian counterattack that resulted the total defeat of the Uganda military within six months. Therefore, if 1986 is to be used as the watershed for determining how functional or dysfunctional Ugandan militaries have been in the different eras of the country's 52 years history, consideration to be compulsorily made of the empirical record of the pre-1986 military forces as we try to do above, on the basis of which meaningful assessments can be made of the post-1986 military and the wider political system. In any case, 'post-1986' as a temporal marker for judging functionality or the lack of it logically implies comparison with 'pre-1986' local realities in Uganda. In seeking to judge the post-1986 military against the pre-1986 military in the context of the Ugandan polity, we would have to be guided by the words of Ogle *et al* that,

> Within a political system, any institution, practice, activity, or pattern of behaviour can be said to be functional if it helps to preserve the system. And if it has a tendency to undermine or destroy the system it can be said to be dysfunctional (Ogle *et al*, 1954:70).

Further to that, a closer examination of the Ugandan military in the second half of the 1990s when the UPDF started to get seriously involved in Eastern DRC and Southern Sudan shows that by then, it was no longer the expanded force of the late 1980s when, as already shown, the strength had shot up to 100,000 (Hansen & Twaddle, 1991:14; Prunier, 94:71). By the end of 1996, the strength had dropped to about 34% of the early 1990s levels to 34,142 regular personnel and 2,979 auxiliaries.[161] Just that fact invalidates linking abusiveness – in whatever sense it is understood – with expansion. While the relative size of military forces is assessed in terms of the indicators of social militarisation such as MacDonald's Spartan Index (SI) or the number of personnel per 1000 of the population (1997:21), much of the literature on SSR and DDR emphasizes such vague terms

[161] Annex E of Lavender et al (1997).

as 'bloated', 'over-established' or 'oversized' without stating the empirical standard against which such judgements are made. [162] To illustrate the point, with a population of 22 million in 1996 and a military strength of 34,142,[163] Uganda's Spartan Index of 1.66 was just over a half of MacDonald's computation of the mean of 3.20 for Sub-Saharan Africa for that year.[164] Data for 2012 basing on the International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS) annual publication, *The Military Balance* show that the mean SI for Sub-Saharan Africa has dropped to 2.72 from 3.20 of 1996 with Uganda's dropping to 1.4,[165] the median for the continent; and significantly lower than that for conflicted-impacted regional neighbours such as South Sudan (3.4),[166] Rwanda (3.1)[167] or Democratic Republic of Congo (2.1)[168]. Given that even with that relatively low SI Uganda maintains a peacekeeping contingent in Somalia, one in South Sudan with more than twice its SI; and an expeditionary force in Central African Republic, one would be justified to judge its military force as anything but dysfunctional.

---

162 See for example Bryden and Hänggi (2004) and Short (1999).

163 In 1996 Uganda has a population of about 22 million (Index Mundi: Uganda population, http://www.indexmundi.com/uganda/population.html , accessed on 20 November 2014). The military strength is based on the figure stated above.

164 Ibid, p. 190.

165 International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS), 2012, pp. 458–459.

166 Ibid. pp. 454–455.

167 Ibid. pp. 448–449

168 Ibid. pp. 301–302

5.5 The Future Rwanda Patriotic Army (RPA) and the Timing of 'Demobilization'

Any debate on the timing of the Uganda 'demobilization' remains incomplete if no mention is made of the presence of Rwandan citizens within the ranks of the NRA from its early beginnings until late 1990 when they 'deserted' en masse. From its early days as an insurgent force, the NRA attracted Rwandan youths mainly from refugee camps in the West of the country.[169] By January 1986, when the NRA overran much of the country and deposed the government in Kampala, there were at least 3,000 Rwandans in its ranks, with their number having increased to 4,000 by October 1990 when they left the NRA to launch their armed invasion of Rwanda as the RPA (Mamdani, 2001:174).[170] Of the 27 fighters who under the command of Museveni made the first attack on a government military installation in 1981 to set off the 5-year guerrilla war that brought the NRM government to power, at least five, including Paul Kagame, the current President of Rwanda and Fred Rwigyema, the first commander of the RPA were Rwandans (Ondoga, 1996:234-241).

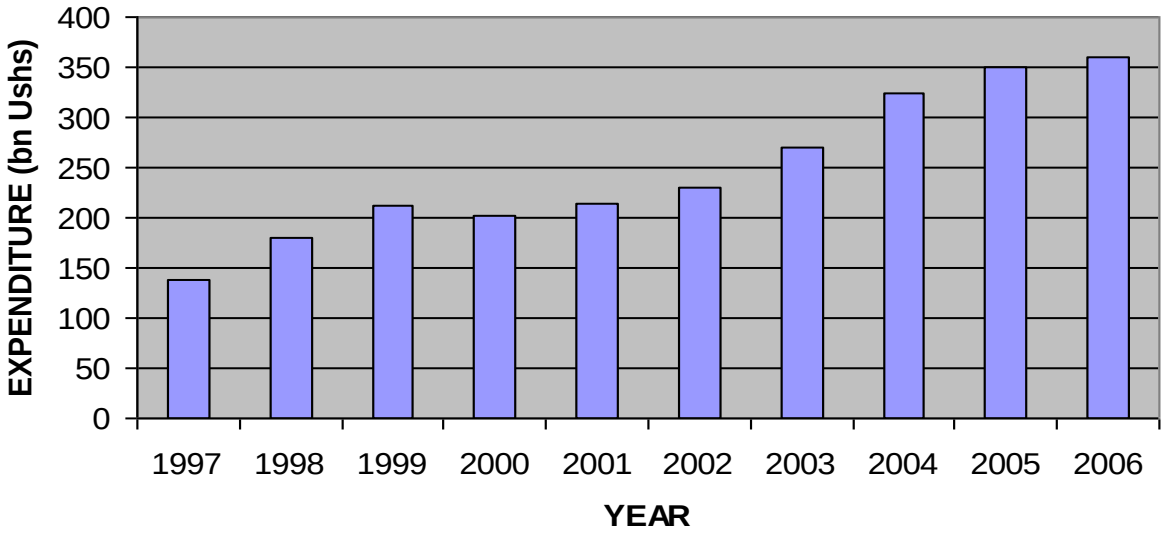
Because of the pressure the NRM government was facing from sections of the public on the prominence in high positions in government of non-citizens, particularly Rwandans, especially in the military and some public offices, 'demobilisation' of the military or any other far-reaching related reform would have disproportionately targeted Rwandans. The discharge of as many as two brigades of those personnel back into the UNHCR camps in parts of rural Uganda, where the majority had flocked from to join the NRA would have been a political time bomb for the NRM government. It was therefore always unlikely that the NRM government would have sought to initiate a massive discharge on the scale of the

169 For details of the factors that influenced the influx of Rwandan refugees into the NRA, see Mamdani (2001); Ondoga (1998) and Prunier (1995).

170 Prunier estimates that by 1990 the NRA had up to 8,000 Rwandans (1995, p. 71).

1992-96 'demobilisation' without first resolving the fate of Rwandan NRA soldiers. Contrary to Collier's assertion referred to earlier, that the demobilisation was initially delayed for the wrong reasons, it has to be noted that any mass discharge of NRA personnel as witnessed in the period under discussion had, of necessity, to wait for a viable outlet for Rwandan soldiers, both out of the NRA and out of the country.

Figure 6: Uganda Military Expenditure, 1997-2006



Data source: SIPRI Yearbook, 2007, p. 304

5.6 Discharge of Regulars and Upsurge of Irregulars

The donors premised their pledge to support the 'demobilisation' program on a set of conditionalities. First, the discharged soldiers were to represent a permanent strength reduction; second, reduction-in-force 'would not be offset in part, or in total, by additional recruitment' (Colletta et al., 1996:223); third, the government would not reabsorb the discharged soldiers into the public sector or the military's commercial activities. In light of the deterioration of the security situation as shown already, by the end of the last phase of the 'demobilisation' exercise -

sometime in 1996 – some of the personnel that were discharged in the earlier phases were already being remobilized, either directly into the UPDF or into the local defence units and Home Guards. This was especially the case in the Acholi region where up to 8,000 Home Guards were enlisted.[171] Some personnel are known to have marched straight from the discharge centres of the World Bank-supported 'demobilisation' process to the UPDF mobilisation centres.

Earlier on, in 1989 a National Reserve Force had been established as the home of retired personnel. The reserves additionally consisted of paramilitary forces financed by the Ministry of Internal Affairs, the majority of them having proliferated in the wake of the World Bank-supported 'demobilisation'. They included the Vigilantes of Karamoja region, Home Guards in Acholi region, Anti-stock Theft Unit, Arrow Boys, Special Police Constables, Local Administration Police and Local Defence Forces. These developments did not escape the attention of the donors who, at the appraisal of phase III of the demobilisation exercise raised concern about how recently demobilised soldiers were either being directly reenlisted or getting employed by government in paramilitary roles. At about the same time, a number of analysts allied to the donor community observed that,

> [T]here is concern among donors including the World Bank that some Ugandan military veterans are training militia or local defense units in the use of arms against remaining rebel groups. Some of these veterans are paid by district governments and act as civilian police forces, causing donors to suspect that the Ugandan government is merely replacing some official military spending in the 1980s with unofficial spending on covert military activity in the 1990s (Ball et al., 1997:259).

The government insisted that it had 'the right to take temporary and localized measures in the interest of national security' (Colletta et al., 1996:225). With such divergences in the perspectives and analysis of the key issues, the donors remained constrained in terms of what they could achieve in stopping the Government of Uganda from doing what it thought it was obliged to do in the face

[171] Ibid, p. 224.

of a festering security situation, especially in the north of the country. Viewed against its impact on military spending (Figure 6), the demobilisation exercise may not be judged to have achieved its stated goal. From the foregoing examination of the management of the 'security sector' by Uganda government since the political changes of early 1986, there may be good grounds for external actors to keep their idealism within bounds. Calls for realism are already emerging from some sections of the international development and peacekeeping established as one reads from the Multi-Country Demobilization and Reintegration Program (MDRP) in the position paper on the nexus between DDR and SSR:

> In some cases, a growth of the security sector may be vital to absorb categories of armed personnel that would otherwise constitute a significant threat to security and stability....The temporary absorption of larger numbers of personnel will lead to significant pressure on the national budget, as salaries will need to paid to all soldiers for the duration of their service in the armed forces. At the same time, an early demobilization of large numbers of soldiers may put a strain on resources available for that purpose. It is therefore important that SSR and DDR decisions be made bearing in mind any financial constraints that may exist for both undertakings (2003:4-5).

5.7 Management of the 'security sector': Background legislative and statutory processes.

One point that has not received close attention from outside actors and commentators is the significance of the specific context in which 'post-conflict' policy reform interventions take place. In Section 1.2, reference was made to Berdal's delineation of the three sets of circumstances in which DDR takes place. Sensitivity on the part of outside actors as to the exact set of circumstances in which reforms are being are being attempted will determine the level of receptivity by local actors and will shape the chances of success of the intervention. For example, major difficulties are bound to arise if external actors approach reforms in a country in which the termination of a major civil war was associated with the emergence of a decisive winner as they would approach a country where civil war

ended in a stalemate, and third party imposition of peace. Rwanda, Ethiopa or Uganda as well as Liberia and Sierra Leone may all be Sub-Saharan African countries but they cannot be bracketed together in terms of how their governments might be approached by outside actors seeking to impose or implement reform. In a Saferworld paper on DDR in Uganda, Finnegan and Flew point out that, the interventions are:

> [T]aking place within a country with a strong and powerful army, in contrast to many DDR contexts where the army, and other national institutions, have suffered serious erosions of capacity, strength and/or authority. These factors appear to have reduced the incentives or imperatives for the GoU to undertake substantive defence reform, and as such integration between demobilisation of reporters and reform of the military has not been possible (2008:12).

The measures that we have discussed thus far were taken within the broader framework of prior and ongoing attempts by the GoU, and more particularly the military authorities, to streamline on their own initiative, the structure and management of defence and security establishment. Some of the legislative and statutory measures taken to put the 'security sector' on a legal and regularised footing include:

- Enactment of Legal Notice No. 1 of January 1986 which formalised the NRA as the national military force following the defeat of the UNLA and the deposition of the short-lived government of General Tito Okello.
- Enactment of the Security Organisations Act 1987 providing the framework for the establishment of security organisations,[172] their constitution, management and functions;

[172] The 'Security Organisations' meant by this act are the Internal Security Organisation (ISO) and external Security Organisation (ESO) established as Government departments for collecting, receiving and processing internal and external intelligence data on the country's security.

- Enactment of the 1992 NRA Statute providing for the establishment, organisation and regulation of the military;

- Drawing up and implementation of the NRA Establishment, 1992 prescribing the organizational structure, staffing and equipping of the military's constituent commands, units and formations;

- The Police Statute, 1994 providing for the structure, organisation and functions of the police force, a police disciplinary code of conduct, a police welfare fund and a police tender board;

- Promulgation of the Uganda Constitution 1995 providing the framework for governing the armed forces including the military;

- Enactment of the 2000 National Security Council Act,[173] in line with the constitutional requirement for a body to advise the presidency on matters relating to national security;

- Enactment of the Amnesty Act 2000 a conflict resolution device aimed at encouraging members of armed groups in opposition to

[173] The National Security Council Act 2000 was established in accordance with article 219 of the Constitution, to advise the President on all matters relating to national security.

government to give up rebellion and be re-integrated into their communities free from prosecution.[174]

Much earlier, in December 1981 with the NRA in existence for hardly a year, Museveni had drafted and issued to all units of the rebel force two sets of codes, namely, the Code of Conduct and the Operational Code (Museveni, 1997:146-147). The codes dwelt on, among other things, the relationship between members of the NRA and members of the public, the relationship between individual fighters, especially that between officers and other ranks, the command structure of the rebel force, disciplinary and justice structures including offences and punishments.[175] The UPDF continues to use the same set of codes.

Together with those legislative measures, the 1990s were marked by the launching of policy initiatives of an administrative nature in the management of the armed forces, particularly the military and the Ministry of Defence. The major initial phases of the Reduction in Force and the reorganisation of the military through the implementation of the new organisational structure were followed closely by the Logistics and Accounting Reform Programme (LARP) conceived in 1994 and commissioned in January 1995 with an initial study of the civilian component of the Ministry of Defence and its relationship with the military. This was the second home-grown reform initiative instituted and financed by the Government of Uganda with assistance of International Development Agency (IDA) of the World Bank. The programme had two aims; 1) to resolve tensions between, on the one hand, officers in the military chain of command and on the other hand, the career civilian executives of the Ministry of Defence; and 2) to introduce

---

[174] The Amnesty Commission indicates that as of May 2012, 26,288 rebels from 29 different rebel groups had received amnesty and of these, 12,971 formerly belonged to the Lord's Resistance Army (See: Agger K (2000), The End of Amnesty in Uganda: Implications for LRA Defections at http://www.enoughproject.org/files/GuluDispatch.pdf, accessed on 29 May 2014).

[175] For the full text of the Code of Conduct, see Ondoga, 1998 (pp.246-251).

mechanisms and structures for tightening the ministry's budgetary, accounting and other financial controls (Rwamirama, 1999:17).[176]

5.7.1. ***Donor-driven 'Pro forma' Reform, 1998-2006: The politics of SSR***

Direct external actor involvement in the post-DDR phases of the reconfiguration of the Ugandan military and the Ministry of Defence started in 1997 in the form of an arrangement Museveni made with the UK's Secretary for International Development for a study of the budgeting and programming process Ministry of Defence to identify ways '…to maximise the efficiency of defence expenditures and to identify economies in resource use and to establish the scope for redeploying resources at the margin for priority civil expenditures necessary for development.'[177] Among the 'civil expenditures' for which savings were being sought was improvement of health service delivery, primary school enrolment and upgrading rural roads and the main network, the 'donor-favoured' sectors. The study was initially conceived of as the Uganda Defence Expenditure Efficiency Savings Study (UDEESS) but later vaguely renamed as the Uganda Defence Efficiency Study (UDES). What should be clear at the outset is the instrumental nature of the intended reform. Their primary focus was the realisation of savings for redeployment to the 'favoured sectors'. Any improvements in the 'security sector' appear to have been largely secondary.

In broad outline, the task set out for the UDES as one of the first steps in the reform process was to remain at the heart of the minimalist approach of the

---

176 The programme was managed by a team of two consultants; a financial management analyst and a computer systems analyst supported by a four-member task force consisting of two UPDF Officers, One Senior Officer from Tanzania People's Defence Forces (TPDF) and a senior auditor from the Auditor General's Office.

177 Uganda Defence Efficiency Study (UDES)—Main Study, July 1998, Annex A, Terms of Reference. Although the TORs of the exercise called it the 'Uganda Defence Expenditure Efficiency Savings Study' (UDEESS) demonstrating the purely pecuniary and non-holistic focus and motivation of 'security' reforms, it was later renamed as the title of the report shows as the Defence Efficiency Study.

UK government's policy interventionism in Uganda's 'security sector', even as the normative reform crusade of the early 2000s gathered momentum under the auspices of outfits such as the Global Facilitation Network for SSR (GFN/SSR), African Security Sector Network (ASSN), African Security Dialogue and Research (ASDR), Democratic Control of Armed Forces (DCAF) among others. For those organisations like others that rely on funding from the UK government to advance the cause of reform, the concerns they are required to address have been summed up in the DFiD issue paper outlining the UK government's basic guidelines on SSR, listing four 'defects' that SSR is envisaged to address:

- Government unable or unwilling to control the military and other security actors;
- Government unable or unwilling to control military expenditure and defence procurement;
- Governments enact repressive internal security measures for narrow political gain;
- Defence strategy based on unreal or inflated estimate of threats;

As can be seen from the UDES Terms of Reference, the focus of the intervention in Uganda became military expenditure, defence procurement and threat assessment. As a major donor of development assistance, the UK government was thus laying the ground to tie aid to Uganda to control or even reduction of military expenditure, reinforcing the notion of the 'defence conditionality' (McNamara, I992). According to the 1993 OECD 'Development Cooperation 1993 Report', donor understanding of good governance implied 'encouraging the reduction of excessive military expenditures by helping to ensure transparency and proper control of military budgeting, to develop effective and efficient security strategies and to implement reductions in the size of military forces' (OECD, 1994:30). In Uganda, the process of realigning the defence sector to realise OECD thinking was

based on the initial findings hinging on 69 recommendations for guiding the reform exercise. The recommendations were clustered around six issues areas:

- Defence Policy, Organisation and Roles (13 recommendations)
- Defence budget and controls (9 recommendations)
- Procurement and purchasing (14 recommendations)
- Personnel and Pay (13 recommendations)
- Logistics (11 recommendations)
- The way forward for reforms (9 recommendations)

On the timing of the UDES initiative, it most likely aimed at enabling GoU to ward off aid donor objections to increased military spending in the budgets proposals in the short and medium term. By opening up the accounts and processes of the defence ministry for external scrutiny by donor-appointed agents, it is unlikely that the donors would object to increases in defence spending until at least they received the feedback from their consultants. Indeed, for the period that the UDES team had set itself up in the finance and defence Ministries, the donors agreed with GoU to increase defence expenditure by 26 percent in the 1998/99 budget.[178] This process of buying time is well recognised in the literature. In the case of Uganda, Mwenda characterised it as 'playing the game of cat and mouse' (2003), while The Economist (1995) has dubbed it as the 'dance'.[179] To assure the donors that the 1998/99 increase was a one-off, in the lead up to the reading of

178 'Defence Spending Increases'; *The New Vision, June* 12th 1998.

179 Cited in Kanbur, 2003, p.323. The Economist article cited by Kanbur describes five steps of the donor-recipient dance using Kenya as a case in point: step one, Kenya wins its yearly pledges of foreign aid. Two, the government begins to misbehave, backtracking on reform and behaving in an authoritarian manner. Three, a new meeting of donor countries looms with exasperated foreign governments preparing their sharp rebukes. Four, Kenya pulls a placatory rabbit out of the hat. Five, the donors are mollified and the aid is pledged. The whole dance starts again. Such is the cycle of acrimony and approbation that has characterised the relations between the donors and Museveni's Uganda with concessions for reform serving as the 'placatory rabbit out of the hat'.

the 1999/2000 FY budget the Minister of Finance announced government plans to cut defence spending by 22 per cent to fund education, health and poverty alleviation, the principal priorities of the donor community.[180] Earlier on in FY 2000/01 a decision had been taken to slash the Defence budget by 22% but in the subsequent year, cabinet took the decision to slash the budgets of other departments by 23% to supplement the Defence budget, in effect reversing the widely publicised cuts in defence spending. For 2002/2003 FY defence spending was increased by 13%, from UGX 231bn to 261bn. Uganda Government placated the donors into living with the increment by committing to implement one of recommendations of the UDES study and taking the first steps of the defence review.

At the reading of FY 2003/04 budget estimates the defence review was still in progress and since its initiation had been the previous year's 'placatory rabbit out of the hat' to enable an increase in spending, a new device had to be sought to justify increases for the subsequent budget year. A long standing source of acrimony between government and donors remained the question of auditing classified expenditure on security by the country's Auditor General and GoU concessions on this sticking point had to come in to mollify the donor community. Accordingly, the offer to disclose classified expenditure became the bargaining point for increases in defence spending for 2003/04 FY. The Prime Minister pledged that with effect from 2003/04 FY government was going to put in place 'a special, efficient and effective mechanism'[181] to enable the Auditor General to audit classified security expenditures for the first time ever. To give credibility to this commitment, a new statutory instrument, 'The Public Finance and Accountability (Classified Expenditure) Regulations, 2003' [182] was passed in August

---

180 *The New Vision, May* 16th 1999, 'Defence Spending to be Cut by 20%'.

181 *The New Vision, May 2*1st 2003; 'Donors Back Sh330b for Defence Spending'; '*The East African,* April 21st 2003 'Uganda to Audit Classified Accounts.'

182 Available at http://www.ulii.org/ug/legislation/statutory-instrument/72, accessed on 24 June 2014. The objects of the regulations are stated in its text. They are: to provide for the control and

2003, but deemed to have come in force on 1st July 2003, the first day of the financial year in question. This underscored the fact that the promulgation of the regulation may have been more of a result of conditionality and the beating of deadlines, than the ostensible purpose of enhancing accountability. The manoeuvring by the GoU is testimony to the reality that aid recipients are fully aware of donor preferences:

> Aid bureaucracies prefer to support changes that can be instituted rapidly and be easily used as benchmarks for dispersing funds and assessing outcomes. This emphasis on swift and measurable results creates a bias among aid staff towards pro forma rather than de facto change. De facto change is often slow and sustainability can only be measured after the project is ended, if at all (Shirley, 2008:62).

The process that followed UDES study (mentioned in Section 1.6.1) and its recommendations culminated in the formulation of the Uganda Defence Reform Programme (UDRP). Phase 1 was comprehensive Defence Review on the basis of which the framework for defence reform was to be formulated. To manage this process, a Defence Reform Unit was formed in the Ministry of Defence, later to be renamed as the Defence Reform Secretariat. Technical assistance for the Review was provided by the UK's Defence Advisory Team (DAT), a researcher from from King's College London and Makerere University in Kampala and some local consultants. The purpose of the Defence Review,[183] as outlined in the Project Document, was:

> [T]o re-assess Uganda's central security interests and to consider how the roles, missions, and capabilities of the armed forces should be adjusted to meet them. The aim is to make the UPDF and their supporting structures

---

management of classified expenditure; to ensure transparency in the system of classified expenditure, while limiting accessibility to the information and reporting in order to preserve the secrecy requirements inherent in classified expenditure; to provide for the handling and reporting on classified expenditure by the Auditor General; and to provide for the consideration by Parliament of the report of the Auditor General concerning classified expenditure.

[183] For further information, see 'The Uganda Defence Review: Learning from Experience', published by King's College London and Makerere University, September 2007 (available from the Conflict, Security and Development Group, King's College London).

> modern, professional, accountable and efficient. They also have to be affordable within a medium-term economic framework'[184]

The Security Policy Framework (SPF) and the Defence White Paper were the key outputs of Phase 1 of the Defence Review. They were intended to provide the basis for development of framework from broad articulation of key policy areas of domestic, defence and foreign relations into a national security strategy.

5.7.2. ***Never-ending studies and reform fatigue***

Apart from the foregoing measures, between 1986 – when the Museveni government came to power – and 1998 the beginning of deeper donor involvement in the 'security sector', four other studies of the government procurement system, or lack thereof, had been carried out by a range of external consultants.[185]

The first such study was in 1988 and was financed by the same World Bank's IDA that funded the 1997 LARP study to which we have already made reference.[186] That first IDA-sponsored study was carried out by the International Development Business Consultants of New York in 1988 and resulted in the establishment of The Central Purchasing Corporation (CPC). The second study started a year later in 1989 and was undertaken by the UK Crown Agents. The objective of this 3-year consultancy completed in 1992 was strengthening the operations of and developing new guidelines and regulations for the Central Tender Board (CTB) and the CPC also covering the Military Tender Board. The third study came two years later in 1994 and was undertaken by the United

---

[184] Uganda Defence Review: Project Document, April 2002.

[185] These four studies are explored in detail in World Bank (1998b).

[186] To highlight the level of reform fatigue discussed in Chapter Seven, Matt and Bategeka (2013) have examined externally-driven reforms in Uganda and their limits and in the study they explore the history of project engagements with the World Bank, one out of several 'development partners' since 1990. They shows that, Uganda has partnered with the Bank on at least 20 projects focused on administrative and civil service reform, 14 projects addressing public financial management reform, 15 aimed to foster decentralization, and seven targeting improvements in tax policy and administration.

Nations Conference on Trade and Development (UNCTAD) International Trade Center (ITC). It centred on government procurement and the logistics of import operations and it made recommendations for streamlining the operations of CTB and CPC. The fourth study was financed by Switzerland the and GoU contracted the UNCTAD/ITC to review the current procurement systems and propose reforms to promote economy, efficiency, and transparency. The ITC issued a draft report on August 22, 1998, which is being reviewed by a government task force.

It has to be noted that many of these consultancies run concurrently and duplicated each other's aims and made limited reference to each other. The Swiss-sponsored consultancy sought to promote economy, efficiency and transparency in public sector procurement, aims that coincided with those of the UDES study, which as noted, sought to maximise the efficiency of defence expenditures and to identify economies in the use of resources.[187] The reports of those particular projects were submitted within a week and a half of each other (on the 12th of August 1998 for the UK-sponsored UDES study and on the 22nd August 1998 for the Swiss-sponsored consultancy). The question as to what it is that necessitates this never-ending reform activity continues to exercise the minds of scholars and academics. In regard to the integrity of public financial management which is central to SSR, the recent comments made by Roberto Ridolfi, the Head of the European Union Delegation to Uganda sum up the reality of those that continue to be the purveyors of reform initiatives: 'Uganda has the best Constitution and some of the best procurement laws, a robust public finance management system and institutions capable of administering sanction. Why are all these not working?'[188]

---

[187] As Lavender e al (1998) and World Bank (1998b) show, the reports of the two projects were submitted with a week and a half of each other (on the 12th of August 1998 for the UK-sponsored UDES study and on the 22nd August 1998 for the Swiss-sponsored consultancy).

[188] *The East African*, May 11 2013 'Donors: Uganda Reforms 'not good enough', http://www.theeastafrican.co.ke/news/-/2558/1849514/-/ka7942z/-/index.html, accessed on 11 July 2014.

5.7.3. ***UK-GoU divergent visions on Reform***

From the start of the process, donors – particularly the United Kingdom – and the Government of Uganda held divergent views on what 'reform' was supposed to entail. For the donors, it meant 'transparency' and 'accountability' in how defence resources are used, but for GoU reform was about modernising the military, primarily through the purchase of new military hardware to increase the military's operational capability particularly in the counterinsurgency campaign in the North of the country. Ugandan officials perceived the modernisation of the UPDF in the same terms as other countries such as the United States and the United Kingdom itself, in terms of building capabilities basing on periodic assessment of threats and capabilities.

Museveni's 2001 election manifesto highlighted the theme of modernisation of the UPDF and referred to equipping the army and '...addressing inadequate training through recruitment and systematic training to transform the UPDF from a guerrilla army into a professional army' (2001:106). Similar pledges were made in 2006 with the 2011 manifesto giving the most explicit indication of future capital development plans and potential for disagreement with aid donors particularly in respect of the budgetary implications of the implementation of the Defense Strategic Infrastructural Investment Plan' (2011:25). Museveni's ministers made public pronouncements reflecting his vision of modernisation. In his address to a gathering of diplomats, local dignitaries and military personnel on the UPDF's 21st Anniversary on 6th February 2002, the Minister of Defence commented on the ongoing Uganda Defence Review by stating its purpose as the re-assessment of Uganda's security interests and to professionalise the Uganda Peoples Defence Forces and other armed forces. He noted that '[t]he rationale is to re-assess Uganda's central security interests and how the roles, missions and capabilities of

the armed forces should be adjusted to meet them.'[189] Later in the year, a junior minister in the defence ministry observed that the reform programme in the Ministry of Defence partly aimed at producing what she called an 'aggressive' and 'security-driven foreign policy' that would see the country's military carrying out more hot pursuit operations into the territory of neighbouring countries that were seen to be dissident sanctuaries.

Media reports quoted the minister as stating that the reforms were to oversee the creation of specialised units such as a special mountain brigade, air force, marines and mechanised units and a command and control system along American lines.[190] Similar reports were carried by the Paris-based Indian Ocean Newsletter edition of July 23, 2005 which quoted a leaked military strategy document as stating that in addition to restructuring the military command and reviewing the military doctrine, implementation of the donor-supported Defence Reform Programme (DRP) would include a major expenditure of Uganda Shs 353 billion for the creation of six mechanised battalions with a view to setting up a mechanised brigade.[191] The items to purchase include tanks, computer-guided amphibious combat vehicles and armoured personnel carriers.

Predictably, the first national budget to be drawn following the completion of the defence review fully reflected the monetary implications of the re-equipped and re-configured military as was being portrayed by defence officials. In the proposed budget of 2004/05 budget the Government requested a 30% increase in defence spending. The donor country representatives' response summed up the purely monetary motivation underlying the pressure on the GoU to reform the military and the fact that such reform was a precondition for continued budget support. Representatives of donor countries issued a joint statement unanimously

---

189 'Uganda: Museveni to Launch Plan on UPDF' *The New Vision,* 11 February 2002. The theme of the celebrations for that year was "Rebirth Of The UPDF: Retracing Our Steps as We Professionalise."

190 'Uganda Seeks Military Interventionist Policy', *Pambazuka News,* Issue 67, June 6, 2002.

191 The Indian Ocean Newsletter N°1144, July 23, 2005: 'Uganda: Massive military expenditure'.

rejecting the budget on grounds that '...though there was a defence review, we aren't convinced that the budget really reflected it', further adding that,

> We are not yet convinced that these large increases in proposed defence spending are sufficiently justified, or that the relevant management changes identified under the Defence Review will be in place to effectively manage such an increase...We want credible assurances that reforms are on the way.[192]

By this point it had become clear that the pro forma reforms carried out as a way of 'playing cat and mouse' was inherently self-limiting. When government officials at ministerial level run out of means of soothing the donor community on the eve of each budget reading, they were only left with the option of calling in the presidency to directly engage the donor community. In response, to donor objections particularly to the escalation of defense spending, Museveni insisted that only the parliament of Uganda could reject the budget, noting that the budget was not for donors to approve or disapprove. He pointed out that:

> We get support from them. If they don't agree, the only thing that they can do is to withdraw their support but our budget will go on. In the event that we don't agree, we will stand on our own resources. We can stand on our own if necessary because that is what we have done in the past when we had serious problems...what you call donors are in fact people who are bringing back some of the resources that they have been taking out of Africa for a long time. In fact Uganda has been the real donor. We lose more money through unfair trade than we get from aid.[193]

---

192 '*Donors Reject Proposed Budget on Grounds of Defence Spending*': United Nations Integrated Regional Information Networks, IRIN; May 14, 2004, http://www.irinnews.org/report/49877/uganda-donors-reject-proposed-budget-on-grounds-of-defence-spending , accessed on 14 April 2014.

193 'Donors Cannot Reject Budget, Says Museveni': *The New Vision;* May 15, 2004.

5.8 The Politics of Uganda's 'security sector' reform

5.8.1. ***The limits of SSR as a conditionality***

As demonstrated above, SSR has been attempted in Uganda as the so-called 'defence conditionality,'[194] and this may only have served to expose donor inconsistencies especially regarding the 'security first' rhetoric, the '…recognition that a secure environment is a necessary foundation for sustainable development' (CSDG, 1999:1). The donor community, particularly the UK Government in the case of Uganda, sought to enforce SSR as a pre-condition for the disbursement of loans and grants, a self-defeating conditionality which has not differed radically from the punitive or negative conditionality of the era of structural adjustment. What makes the punitive intent of the 'positive conditionality' futile is that it amounts only to flogging a dead horse. 'Good polices cannot be bought', Stiglitz notes, adding further that in the past, 'while conditionality did engender resentment, it did not succeed in engendering development' (2003:46). With no strong commitment to these reforms as there certainly shall not be with security related reforms which aid supplicants often perceive as unduly intrusive, they can - and likely will- be reversed at the end of the program (World Bank, 1998: 51). Even where there may be acquiescence to donor reform pressures, it may only be because it is the only insurance by aid recipients to meet their short-term aim of mollifying their external backers. In spite of the potential advantages of acceding to reform, some governments may consider acquiescence to be inimical to their autonomy or even unworkable and may therefore be unwilling to 'own' them without major modifications as we have seen in the case has been with the Museveni government, particularly in response to reform proposals affecting the more sensitive institutions of state. As we see in the process described above, the Uganda government has been keen to express its own stand or in Oliver's words,

[194] McNamara (1992), Murshed and Sen (1995).

to 'balance, pacify, or bargain' and generally seek to compromise with their outside backers (2997:153). Moreover, it is not also the case that aid recipients such as Uganda have no room for manoeuvre. Whitfield and Fraser outline what they call the 'structural conditions' that affect donor-recipient bargains, referring to those conditions as '...the ever-changing global and national economic, political, ideological, and institutional contexts within which donors and recipients define their preferences and select their strategies'(2010:346). The changing global balance of power as evidenced for example, by the increasing prominence of the so-called non-traditional donors has obvious implications for the kind of conditionalities that 'traditional' donors can set in the face of availability of alternative backers some of whom offer untied aid. The opening up of the donor ranks also creates room for dependent parties to play donors off against each other. In a manner similar what has been observed in studies of institutional conformity and convergence, a broad range of institutional constituents impose a variety demands, expectations and conditionalities resulting in a collective normative order that is not necessarily unitary or coherent. The likelihood for conformity or compliance is reduced when dependent countries like Uganda gain support from such diverse backers (Oliver, 2007:162). In response to Western pressure the Government of Uganda has over the last three decades been known to take a defiant stance and sought support from non-Western sources such as North Korea and Russia especially in the reconstruction of the armed forces. 'Russia has worked in Africa since 1917, meaning they have been here for more than 100 years. I want to work with Russia because they don't mix up their politics with other country's politics', so Museveni is quoted as having remarked most recently in a veiled reference to aid conditionalities of Western donors. [195]

---

195 *The Monitor,* 23 February 2014*,* I'll work with Russians, Museveni tells Obama', http://www.monitor.co.ug/News/National/I-ll-work-with-Russians--Museveni-tells-Obama/-/688334/2217532/-/w6gkn6/-/index.html, accessed on 20 November 2014. See also *The Monitor,* 31 October 2014, 'Museveni hails relations with North Korea, urges on unification with South, http://www.worldaffairsjournal.org/content/ugandas-museveni-hails-relations-north-korea-urges-

5.8.2. ***Aid dependence and the emasculation of Uganda's legislature***

When the stand-off explored in the foregoing sections is looked at from the angle of the politics of defence reform and GoU-donor relations in general, what is striking is the absence of the voice of Ugandan parliamentarians in the debate and the extent to which they have abandoned their role as a counterforce to the executive, and in Uganda's case, the powerful presidency. In a meeting with a delegation of officials from African Caribbean Pacific-European Union parliamentary group headed by co-president Glenys Kinnock, Ugandan parliaments criticised the donors '...for merely looking on as government cuts budgets for important ministries in order increase defence expenditure.'[196] On her part (and to their discredit), Kinnock reminded them of the existence of local institutional avenues including the Constitutional Review Commission for addressing their concerns. Much later in 2004, the legislators reduced themselves to aid donor cheerleaders when the latter refused to endorse Uganda's proposed budget for 2004/05. The New Vision quoted one Uganda parliamentarian as remarking that '...the firmness the donors exhibited had been lacking for a long time.'[197] In a tragic sense, it would appear that the legislators have abdicated and relinquished their role oversight of the 'security sector' to the donors.

Those limitations of the legislators closely mirror the deficiencies of Uganda's civil society in the policy formulation process as the thinking of the country's leading political parties on the oversight of the armed forces demonstrates. In its presentation to the Constitutional Review Commission – which they made a submission to after being reminded of its existence by Glenys

---

unification-south, accessed on 20 November 2014 on military and police training and equipment support of Uganda by North korea.

196 *The Monitor,* 30 October 2002, 'Sabiiti, Oulanyah attack donors over budget cuts'

197 The New Vision, May 17 2004, 'MPs Back Donors on Budget'.

Kinnock – all that the Uganda People's Congress (UPC) had to propose in its 16-page memorandum was that the UPDF should be placed under the Ministry of Internal Affairs – the equivalent of the UK's Home Office – just like the Police and Prisons, '[s]ince the army (under the Ministry of Defence) is recruited in the same way as the Police and Prisons…'[198] It has to be noted that the UPC has been in power twice from 1962 to 1971 and 1980 to 1985, on both occasions leaving power prematurely after being deposed by the military. Given that experience, one would have expected the party's leadership to have the most incisive views on oversight of the military, defence and national security and civil military relations generally. The robustness of such structures continues to be taken as a given in the normative discourse of the international development establishment. It is against that background that the policy processes in the underdeveloped world ends up being overshadowed by dominant individuals, in most cases, simply by default as is indeed the case with Uganda where the controversies over the defence reform process remained the preserve of the president.

5.8.3. ***The predominance of the presidency in policy formulation and decision-making***

For the last three decades the Ugandan political system has been centred on the NRM and the UPDF (formerly the NRA), two organisations that have been single-handedly moulded and nurtured by Museveni from the early 1970s to the years of the emergence of the NRM as a major political force in the 1980s and its ascendance to power in 1986. Museveni's personal dominance over the Ugandan state can be traced back to his early guerrilla days when he doubled as the overall field commander of the National Resistance Army (renamed the UPDF after promulgation of the 1995 constitution) and the Chairman and chief publicist of the

198 New Vision, 13 May 2003, 'Put Army Under Internal Affairs'

political wing, the NRM. As would be expected with any guerrilla organisation, the NRA's early years were clandestine and secretive, conditions that naturally dictated the over-centralisation of decision making. Those legacies of centralisation, tight control and fusion of authority subsequently became a major feature of the management style of the NRM and have continued to linger on long after the former rebel organisation assumed state power. As Leys and Saul have observed, `…the very process of struggling for liberation especially by resort to force of arms may generate political practices that prefigure undemocratic outcomes in the wake of revolutionary success' (1994:146). In the general case of post-insurgency regimes, that would invariably be avoidable given the extent to which organisations with guerrilla origins tend to:

> [O]we a great deal to individual initiative and….allow their leaders a great deal of choice over how they should be organised and how they should operate'. In many cases the leader and the movement are so closely associated that it is hard to conceive one without the other (Clapham, 1998:9).

The over-centralisation of political authority engendered by the guerrilla origins of the NRM has been reinforced by Uganda's constitutional tradition in which executive power is patterned along the presidential (as opposed to the cabinet or parliamentary) system. Like all presidential systems it provides significant latitude for concentration of decision-making authority and what has been called creeping authoritarianism (Barrington, 2012:168). Although policy making power is theoretically divided between the two directly elected bodies, the presidency and the legislature, executive authority – administrative, managerial, law making or decision-making – is vested in the President. This point continues to receive minimal attention from those wishing to effect institutional reform through formal structures such as parliament or even civil society, while paying limited attention to the skewed distribution of decision making authority, much of which may be

entrenched in national constitutions or have its origins in the political histories of particular country being targeted for reform.

In his address to Uganda's parliamentarians in February 2012, Museveni attributed the delay in the equipping and professionalization of the UPDF to external interference, particularly the insistence by donors on a smaller budget as a condition for external financial support. This, according to Museveni, resulted in the prolonged suffering of the population in country's north on account of Kony's terrorism in addition to the continued damage by the Karimojong cattle-rustlers inside Karamoja and in the neighbouring districts. As far as he is concerned the conditionalities set by donors undermine Uganda's national security. He noted that,

> In 2001, I could no longer tolerate the sabotage to national security caused by the under-funding of the army. I called an emergency Cabinet meeting in Gulu. We decided to cut 23% from the budget of each Ministry to cure this mistake. Using the savings, we bought helicopter gunships and other equipments that should have been bought in 1991 when we reduced the Army from 100,000 to 40,000 but which were not bought because of external pressures.[199]

Clearly, the donors and Uganda's political leadership were, throughout the motions of the reform process looking at the same issue from opposite angles. Museveni's heartfelt verdict on the reform process and on aid donor policy interventionism came in form of his letter to the UK Secretary for International development at the height of the acrimony over defence spending and the defence reform (Appendix A). Among other things, he pointed out that:

> Rt. Honourable Benn, I want you to know that I have a real problem with this paternalistic arrangement...What I find unacceptable, however, is for some of you to continue to think (and, even say) that because of the modest sums you give a country like Uganda, you are entitled to exercise

---

[199] YK Museveni, Address to Uganda Parliament, 10 February 2012, at http://www.ugandamissionunny.net/Parliament_address_February_2012_3_.pdf , accessed on 19 May 2014.

> suzerainty over our sovereignty issues (foreign affairs, politics and defence) – our persistent but polite rejection of that position notwithstanding.

The background of the NRM government as a politico-military organisation was hinted on in Chapter Four in the general exploration of the diverse military traditions of Sub-Saharan militaries that have continued to be disregarded by the SSR framework. The impact of the guerrilla origins of the regime in Uganda means that the armed forces remain a very sensitive constituency. They are:

> [An] integral part of the state that it is almost impossible to distinguish between different actors. A major overhaul of one part of the state has such an impact on other parts, those informal networks that hold the state together and sustain the more formal structures are at risk of being ripped apart. A perilous road most politicians would not be ready to take (Jorgel, 2013:245).

In Uganda's case, the special place occupied by the UPDF as a critical pillar of the NRM government was given prominence by Museveni's response to claims by one of his political opponents, a former UPDF officer, that he had 90% support in the military.[200] In the 2000 National Conference of the ruling NRM, he warned that those that intended to divide the army would 'go six feet deep underground'. Urging the over 2,000 delegates to look directly into his eyes, he went on to warn that:

> "Who can divide the UPDF? Anybody who tries to divide the UPDF will be six feet underground. You can play around with other things. You can abuse Museveni on FM stations. If you try to divide the army... Don't waste your time and calories thinking about nonsense."[201]

---

200 The political opponent in question is Colonel (Rtd) Kiiza Besigye. He made that remark earlier in 2000 and has kept repeating it during every electoral season (see: The Observer, 24 January 2008, 'Besigye - Army Support Now Above 90 Percent'; and 22 December 2010, 'I'm better soldier than Museveni, says Col Besigye').

201 *The New Vision, Uganda*, 27 November 2000 'Museveni declares candidacy'

It is that sensitivity that is further explored in Chapter Seven, but also highlighted by Museveni's views in his letter to the UK Secretary for International Development (Annex A).

5.8.4. ***Anglo-Uganda relations 1971 to 1985 and the politics of post 1986 defence co-operation***

Of the factors that have shaped the texture of Anglo-Uganda relations in the last three decades two that have had a long-lasting effect on the UK as a credible partner in shaping Uganda's 'security sector' stand out. First is Britain's direct and indirect association with the armed forces of the 1971-1985 regimes; and the second, the extent to which that association operated at cross purposes with the aspirations the individuals that have dominated Uganda's politics since 1986, most particularly Museveni. The decade and a half from 1971 to 1985 saw Museveni emerging as a figure in the politico-military campaigns to oust the regimes of Idi Amin, that of Milton Obote and subsequently the short-lived one of General Okello Lutwa while Britain directly or indirectly supported the 'security sectors' of those same regimes. British policy in Uganda remained – as Furley has summed it up – guided by the notion that '…the legitimacy of any particular regime in her former possessions – whether democratically elected, or installed by a coup or by war – was not a question for Britain to judge'; and as such, Furley goes on to say, Britain '…recognised many *de facto* governments in Africa, usually with the minimum of delay once it….ascertained that the new regime was established' (1987:276). In 1971, even as some Eastern African heads of state like Julius Nyerere of Tanzania and Siad Barre of Somalia rejected Amin's *coup d'état,* Britain became the first country to recognise him, with the High Commissioner in Kampala assessing him as '[p]opular and a natural leader of men, but simple and practically illiterate; a man of the people....Well-disposed to Britain perhaps to an extent damaging to

him in the African context.'[202] In recognising Idi Amin as *de facto* ruler of Uganda, the United Kingdom's main interest was continuity in trade (Nabudere, 1980; Mamdani, 1983; Furley, 1987; Tandon, 1987). By placing commercial interests at the helm of her relations with Uganda, the UK created grounds for the legitimacy of her stand on other policy initiatives especially in what Museveni has called 'sovereignty issues'[203] to be questioned as one sees with the attempts to reform the defence sector.

Throughout the first year of Amin's rule, Britain remained Uganda's chief trading partner, even as the bloody purge of members of the Acholi and Lango ethnic groups from the 'security sector' as already shown, started to become evident. Some of those trade links remained strong even as late as February 1979 when Idi Amin's government had only two months to fall,[204] even in spite of the fact that Britain had broken off diplomatic ties with Uganda in July 1976 (Furley, 1987:279).[205] Britain sold to Amin's regime radios and other communications

---

202 Cited in *The New Vision*, July 29, 2003; Uganda: 'Amin's Economic War Left Uganda On Crutches.'

203 See Annex A.

204 A Parliamentary Undersecretary of State of the UK government, Baroness Stedman reported to the House of Lords that, for 1978, United Kingdom exports to Uganda were £19 million. Upon being pressed on the need to cut off commercial ties with the Amin regimes, she observed that, '[w]e need to keep the trade lines open for various other reasons.' (Hansard HL Deb 05 February 1979 vol. 398 cc451-3, http://hansard.millbanksystems.com/lords/1979/feb/05/tanzaniauganda-dispute-and-whisky-exports, accessed on 30 July 2013.) The Minister of State for Foreign and Commonwealth Affairs and Deputy Leader of The House of Lords Lord Goronwy-Roberts had also earlier defended trade with Uganda in similar terms, pointing out that, '[i]t would however be a very serious step to embark upon general trade sanctions, with implications for our policies in other areas' (Hansard HL Deb 31 January 1979 vol. 398 cc137-40, http://hansard.millbanksystems.com/lords/1979/jan/31/uganda-suggested-trade-embargo, accessed on 30 July 2014). To many observers and commentators, Baroness Stedman's 'various other reasons' and Lord Robert's 'policies in other areas' referred to the precedent that sanctions against the Amin government would set for apartheid South Africa. See for example *New African*, February 2001 'Uganda: The making of Idi Amin.'

205 Much of the trade was being conducted through the infamous Stansted Shuttle or 'Whisky run', consisting of biweekly flights from Stansted Airport in Essex to Uganda's Entebbe airport. Commenting on the Stansted shuttle, an exiled former aide of Amin noted that, '[t]hese flights, each said to carry goods to the value of $70,000, keep Amin supplied with the equipment and commodities necessary to maintain his regime. None of the goods reach the ordinary people of Uganda. The imports, which go directly to the Army shops, are intended for one thing only – to

equipment, Range Rovers and Land Rovers fitted with advanced eavesdropping, radio detection and communication technology and spare parts for the regimes intelligence system; in addition to luxury goods for Amin's entourage and the military.[206] Although claims that trade between the United Kingdom and Uganda excluded supplies to the military and police, by July 1977, the Amin regime was still receiving police and military trucks and spares;[207] and as close to Amin's fall as February 1979 when exile forces including Museveni's Fronasa were fighting their way towards Kampala, Pye Telecommunications of Cambridge was still arranging a shipment of further equipment.[208] Prime Minister James Callaghan justified the export of specially-kitted vehicles by stating that they were designed to detect television licence dodgers.[209] That recent history, added to the role played by the United Kingdom in instituting and entrenching a less-than-beneficial politico-military tradition of differential ethnic recruitment in the colonial period places the United Kingdom in an untenable position in respect of being an initiator or, even participant in Uganda's civil military relations reform. Museveni's reference in his letter to Hon Hillary Benn to being a 'freedom fighter' should be understood in this context.

UK support to regime forces that were broadly deemed to be abusive did not cease with the fall of Idi Amin in 1979. From 1981 Museveni was once again on the receiving end of Britain support to a military force, the UNLA, against which

---

keep Amin's thugs happy.... As long as the 'whisky runs' continue, Britain's denunciation of Amin seems, at the very best, hollow (Kyemba, 1977:253).

206 For a detailed account of the dealings of British companies with the security services of the Amin government see Harriman, 1979.

207 Hansard HC Deb 07 July 1977 vol 934 cc615-6W, http://hansard.millbanksystems.com/written_answers/1977/jul/07/uganda, accessed on 30 July 2014.

208 Harriman, Ibid

209 Ibid. Mamdani (1983:82) gives an account of similar denials following the sale of Bedford trucks and Land Rovers through the Crown Agents. While the UK government argued that it was powerless to stop the transaction because it did not involve military equipment, the reality was that those vehicles passed through the hands of a local company, Reynolds Boughton for retrofitting en route Uganda. By the time they arrived at Entebbe, they were complete with 'artillery guns to fit'.

he was fighting. Technically, Museveni's NRA/M and the UK were enemies. Even as the international media (including the British press) were reporting on incidents of widespread violence and massacres by the post-Amin military, the UNLA in its hunt for Museveni and his guerrilla force,[210] Britain was in November 1981 dispatching a team of military personnel to assess the training needs for the UNLA, followed by the assembling of the 36-member Commonwealth Training Team for Uganda (CMTTU).[211] While the CMTTU trained the UNLA, Obote hired a private British Company, Falcon Star, partly composed of ex-SAS personnel to train the 'Special Forces'. By early 1984, Falcon Star had trained a special unit of 3,000 men many of whom were to be assigned to counter Museveni and his NRA, in addition to more than a brigade that had been trained by the CMTTU by March of the same year (Africa Contemporary Record, 1985:B298). Recently released official documents show that Prime Minister Thatcher gave full backing to UNLA training.[212] In April 1982, *The Times*, citing Amnesty International was reporting on 'Uganda's deepening anarchy' and referring to how Uganda under Idi Amin was better than that of the 1980's under Obote.[213] The London-based then leader of the NRM Yusuf Lule pointed out that the United Kingdom's efforts to train an ethnically-biased UNLA, dominated by the Acholi and Lango as did the colonial Army, was futile and a disservice to the country, noting that, [i]mposing discipline on such an Army will merely serve to make it a more efficient instrument of

---

210 *The Observer* edition of November, 15th 1981 went on to suggest in vain that, 'Britain and other Commonwealth countries would certainly hesitate to send troops to train an Army set to crush a popular rebellion sparked by its own brutality.'

211 The team comprised trainers and advisors from Australia, Britain, Canada, Guyana, Jamaica, Kenya, Sierra Leone, and Tanzania, commanded by Colonel J. H. Clavering of Britain.

212 In a 30 September 1983 letter to Prime Minister Thatcher Falconstar Director noted that his company was '...completing a major contract with the Government of Uganda, where we have trained over 1,500 Special Force constables in two years' which had '…made a large contribution to internal security and to foreign investors' confidence in Uganda'. In response, Thatcher's private secretary, David Barclay, wrote: 'Mrs Thatcher was most interested to read about Falconstar's services, and sends her best wishes for continued success' (http://www.corporatewatch.org/news/2014/may/29/thatcher-backed-ugandan-crackdown-worse-amin-era, accessed on 20 January 2015).

213 The Times, 24th February 1982.

Obote's oppression and entrench still further his dictatorship'.[214] Ingham, Milton Obote's biographer, mirrored similar sentiments in his description of the UNLA as:

> An armed rabble, with each component part inadequately officered and owing loyalty to different political leaders; while all were prepared to use their arms to loot or to take their reprisals against anyone they or their sponsors deemed to be their enemies (1994:159).

In the face of increasing reports of severe dysfunction and indiscipline within the UNLA, the Commonwealth training team sought not to renew its contract from Uganda on March 15th 1984.[215] Importantly, while all the rest of the countries withdrew their personnel, the United Kingdom, which was by now supplying more than half of the team stayed on and continued training the UNLA as the British Military Training and Advisory Team-Uganda (BMATT-U) in a joint effort with North Korea (Furley, 1987:287).

Throughout this period reports of increasing UNLA abuses kept emerging followed by condemnation by major Western governments including West Germany, the Netherlands and Denmark and particularly by the United States.[216] The US Ambassador in Kampala, Allen Davis and the US assistant Secretary for Human Rights, Elliot Abrams who at the time estimated up to 200,000 deaths in the Luwero Triangle only. Britain poured cold water on the US' unequivocal condemnation of UNLA and set up a special investigation whose conclusions roundly dismissed the US's reported numbers of fatalities in the Luwero Triangle as groundless. Bill Kirkham, a British national personally appointed by Obote to head relief operations in Luwero dismissed the US figures and stated that 'they have no foundation and are simply outrageous.'[217] By the time the UK-supported UNLA started crumbling under the pressure of Museveni's NRA, and with the likelihood that the rebels were going to overrun the country's capital anytime, it had become

---

214 The Times, July 12th, 1987.

215 Earlier on, the Royal Mounted Canadian Police had responded to the violence by withdrawing its contingent of trainers for the Uganda Police Force (Furley, 1989, p.285).

216 Minority Rights Group (1989) summarises those reports.

217 Furley, 1989, p. 289.

clear that '…the British position, with its record of support to two previous regimes, would need serious review, and new approaches would have to be made cautiously' (Furley, 1989:292). When the BMATT contract expired in November 1986, 10 months into Museveni's rule, it was not renewed. Museveni's argument was that the NRM's approach to reorganisation of the NRA was different from that of the British (Mukwaya, 2003:11), but what could not be stated explicitly was the fact that the NRA had defeated the UK-trained UNLA, and in the process, had also dislodged the last remnants of the King's African Rifles. With the fall of the Okello regime in January 1986, and the emergence of Museveni one would ordinarily have expected Britain to take a step back and reflect on how it was going to relate with a government that it worked so hard to keep out of power. Over the years, relations between the UK government and Uganda in the field of defence and security have been restored to a certain degree. However, questions related to Britain's stance towards Uganda in the 1970s and 1980s will remain a critical undercurrent in the two countries' defence relations as long as the individuals and organisations they adversely affected remain on the political scene. The difficulties associated with the implementation of SSR in which the UK sought unsuccessfully to assume moral high ground are just an aspect of that reality.

5.9 CONCLUSION

While the analysis of policy interventionism in Uganda to recast the country's 'security sector' in the last three decades may not provide a universal picture of the challenges and opportunities that such an undertaking provides, it demonstrates the necessity for external actors to pay close attention to the specificity of each case. The indicators of underdevelopment or patterns of instability may bear close resemblance across a number of cases; but the historical realities and internal dynamics of each case may require that policy-related interventions are implemented shy of the kind of standard prescriptions that have

come to characterise the normative agenda of the peacebuilding industry. From the foregoing survey of the reconstitution of the armed forces in Uganda in the wake of the political changes that climaxed in the fall of the short-lived Military Council government on 26th January 1986, external actors do not appear to have fully appreciated the real significance of the evolution of Museveni's NRA as a locally-grown rebel force with no external backers or patrons set its agenda. Neither was the significance of the NRA's emergence as a decisive victor in its war against the Obote government appreciated, particularly in light of the common tendency of civil wars in the Sub-Saharan subcontinent to end in stalemates. For a long time to come those two factors were set to limit the freedom of action of external actors in shaping future events in the country, more so their role in determining how the military, the main pillar and sentinel of the new order, was going to be managed.

As shown, some years before SSR was initiated Uganda's donors participated in the implementation of so-called DDR. The realisation of potential synergies between that 'DDR' and the subsequent SSR were, at the outset, rendered questionable by a lack of clarity on the part of the donor agencies on what Uganda's 'DDR' actually entailed and whether indeed its sanguine depiction in the academic and policy literature was an accurate representation of its implementation. The examination of Uganda's 'DDR' as we consider it to have happened leads us to the following three conclusions: First, the 'DDR' in Uganda actually entailed a more germane and complex process than is often described in the literature examined. The little-acknowledged nuances of the Uganda what was in essence a five-stage process summed in this chapter as 'DARRO', as opposed to the normatively-conceived DDR, have remained at the heart of the management of warring factions in the last three decades. Secondly, any attempt to impose some narrowly conceived, overly technocratic and linear framework such as DDR onto the Uganda process makes the security and development practitioner not only overlook vital lessons on the social and political balancing with which the local actors had to contend in reconstituting the armed forces, but also the sense in

which the pressures of local necessities, particularly the urgency to build broadly inclusive armed forces, were inherently at odds with the desire of the 'development partners' to reap the peace dividend. Thirdly, the seeming urgency by donor agencies to provide mileage to DDR as a policy orthodoxy not only ill-prepared them for coming to grips with process as it actually unfolded as opposed to how it ought to have unfolded, but also subsequently made it difficult to meaningfully build on the gains thereof as indeed the attempt to carry out SSR attests.

Externally-derived attempts at SSR in Uganda may not have been served well by the fact that the process was inspired by the United Kingdom whose past links with Uganda's 'security sector' may not have bode well with its desire to play a leading role or any role whatsoever as a reformer. Apart from the apparent disregard for the ideological implications of the unique history of the UPDF right from its early associations as Fronasa with the anti-colonial liberation movements of the southern African subcontinent through to the war against Idi Amin, for reasons probably related to the importance it attaches to being a major donor or simply out of a proprietary attitude towards Uganda, Britain seems to have treated as insignificant its past role in shaping the character of the military tradition whose antithesis the NRA/UPDF considered itself to be. As pointed out, Britain played a major role in entrenching what turned out to be a non-beneficial military tradition in the colonial days and further beyond that period, it identified itself closely with 'security sectors' that proved to be abusive and incompetent especially from 1971 to 1985. This was always bound to undermine Britain's credibility as an initiator of a morally-couched reform exercise such as SSR, targeting the very force that considers itself as having provided the vanguard for dismantling the same order that was Britain's brain child, an order that Britain nurtured and supported to the very end. That after NRA's triumph Britain presented itself as the champion of the reform of the NRA, a force that was technically its enemy throughout the years of the 'bush war' was always bound to be questionable, awkward and fraught with difficulties, Britain's capacity as a leading aid donor notwithstanding.

5.10 APPENDIX A: Letter from President Museveni to Secretary Hilary Ben[218]

PO/11
Rt. Hon. Hilary Benn
SECRETARY OF STATE FOR DEVELOPMENT CORPORATION
UNITED KINGDOM

Right Honourable Hilary Benn

I have received your letter of 21st March, 2005 in which you say that you will withhold some amount of money that you had promised to us following a "governance assessment" after your High Commissioner's meeting with our Ministers, including our Prime Minister.

Rt. Honourable Benn, I want you to know that I have a real problem with this paternalistic arrangement of the so-called "donor" and "beggar" relationship. As I told the G-8 Group in Sea Island, where your Prime Minister, Rt. Hon. Tony Blair, was present, the real "donors" to the Western countries are the Africans who sell their unprocessed coffee, cotton, leather, gold, etc at 10 percent of their supermarket value.

In other words, in every kilogram of coffee, we donate, at least, US$9 to Western countries, including Britain, which hosts the Nestle factories that use coffee of the backward countries to generate money and employment for your people. It is not entirely the fault of the former imperialist countries that backward states like Uganda were colonised. It is also the fault of our Chiefs who so divided our people that they could not defend our sovereignty. It is also the fault of many of the post-independence leaders of Africa that have failed to transform our economies and end Africa's balkanisation in order to create power blocks on our continent with global influence when it comes to our legitimate interests. What I find unacceptable, however, is for some of you to continue to think (and, even say) that because of the modest sums you give a country like Uganda, you are entitled

218 New Vision Dec 23, 2005, 'Budget cuts: Museveni writes to UK' http://www.newvision.co.ug/D/8/22/472671, accessed on 23 July 2014.

to exercise suzerainty over our sovereignty issues (foreign affairs, politics and defence) – our persistent but polite rejection of that position (notwithstanding.

When we met in Bombo last, I told you that much as we may need some aid in the short run, support will not be productive if we do not insist on our independence in decision-making. If we continue accepting positions we know are wrong, we would be committing other people's mistakes in our names. I must have told you, then, that if dependence and subservience were to be factors in development, then Black Africa should be the most developed part of the globe since we have had the greatest dosages of that debasement (slave trade, colonialism, etc.). Point out one single Black African country that has transitioned because of "aid" from the West in the last 48 years since Ghana's independence in 1957.

I have always felt that we should put the nasty history of the relationship between Europe and Africa behind us. I have, however, told all of you repeatedly that, "trade, not aid will develop Africa". I was most pleased when the USA presidents, H.E. Bill Clinton and H.E. George Bush, working with our supporters in the USA (the Black Caucus, Senator Bill Frist, etc.), finally promulgated the AGOA law. I have described that law as the greatest act of solidarity between Africa and the West in the last 500 years.

This is not an extravagant statement. The EBA of the EU is also a good initiative. You refer to the 800 million British pounds that you have contributed to Uganda's recovery since 1986. Thank you very much. You need to know, however, that on account of the decline of coffee bean (raw material form) prices, Uganda has had a cumulative loss of US$16bn in coffee export earnings alone. In 1986, when our export crop was 2 million bags, we earned US$ 500mn. Our export crop is now 4 million bags. But we are earning only $100mn. I am here talking of coffee beans (raw materials). I am not talking of unprocessed coffee, which, at the minimum, earns ten times the value of the raw materials at the supermarket stage.

Who is impeding the industrialisation process in Uganda? The meddling by donors is part of the problem. They interfered with our counter-terrorism effort by constraining our modest defence expenditure, they forced us to scrap tax holidays on which we had agreed with them before, they constrained, if not banished altogether, our State's possible intervention to kick-start the industrial enterprises and yet foreign investors have now the whole globe open to them. They interfered with our energy development by forcing us to sequence the

construction of dams rather than our preferred option of building two dams simultaneously. You talk of "governance assessment" after your High Commissioner meeting with our ministers, which resulted in the arrogant statement by your High Commissioner: "The beggar has not qualified for his next meal". Did our ministers endorse this assessment? Obviously not. It is therefore your unilateral assessment of us. Who assesses your performance in the UK? What rights do the British have to assess governance in Uganda? You were here for 70 years as colonialists, the first very poorly organised general elections was in 1961. Idi Amin, the monster that caused so much damage to Uganda after almost 70 years of using our people in imperialist adventures, was among the first two Ugandans to go for junior army training in 1958. What, then, gives credence to your position of assessor? Right Honourable, I have tried in the past to be polite (obufura). It seems, however, politeness is not well understood in the West. In fact some of the words do not exist in our languages.

Since you are spending British tax payers' money, you are of course entitled to know that the money is not stolen by the officials of the recipient country. That is why I do not mind discussing with you corruption issues, either privately or in public. Extra-judicial killings by state officials would also not be acceptable to any civilised community. If I had aid, I would not extend it to such a government. A government that does not practice democracy by having regular elections on the basis of universal adult suffrage by secret ballot would not merit my support if I had aid to give. Economic management, leading to inflation, would not endear an aid recipient to me.

Beyond those four reference points, I would not be wise to interfere in the internal affairs of other people. One of the American politicians almost got into trouble on account of a rumour that his campaign had received a donation from the government of China. It is not correct to interfere in the internal affairs of other people. What would you say if I were to fund the Conservative Party candidates in your elections using financial support. Would they be representing the British people or my interests? Yes, governance can influence development. The question is: who is qualified to judge what is or is not good governance? Does a freedom fighter like myself have the ability to know what good governance is or is it a monopoly of British Ministers and the British High Commissioner in Kampala?

Since you are in the habit of cutting off aid after your unilateral assessment, why don't you cut off aid for our delay in adding value to coffee, cotton, beef, milk,

cereals, gold, cobalt, etc? This is the real bad governance; leaders continue donating the wealth of Africa to outsiders while people are wallowing in poverty without employment etc. Why do your conditionalities for aid not include chastising leaders who are so myopic that they do not see the fallacy of only exporting raw materials?

Our Movement has never made a strategic mistake in the last 35 years. We have made some tactical mistakes mainly because of the pressure of others. We always recover from those mistakes. If we made a tactical mistake in thinking that countries like Britain were interested in a new relationship with African countries based on partnerships rather than suzerainty, then it is time to review that relationship. What Uganda and Africa need most is independence in decision-making, not subservience or a satellite or dependency status.

Yoweri Kaguta Museveni
PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF UGANDA
30th May, 2005

5.11 APPENDIX B –Rebel Movements in Uganda, 1986-2006

	ORGANISATION	ZONE OF OPERATION	PERIOD OF EXISTENCE
1.	Uganda People's Democratic Army (UPDM/A)	Central North (mainly Acholi Region)	1986-1987
2.	Uganda People's Army (UPA)	Eastern Region (Teso)	1986-1992
3.	Ninth October Movement/Army (NOM/A)	Eastern Region (Tororo, Mbale)	1985-1996
4.	Equatorial Nile People's Liberation Army (ENPLA)	Eastern and North Eastern Region (based in Sudan and Kenya)	1996-1997
5.	Uganda Mujahdeen Movement (UMM)	Western and Central regions	1996-2001
6.	Allied Democratic Front/Force (ADF)	Western and Central regions, currently in Eastern DRC	From 1996
7.	Ugandan Islamic Jihad	(Merged with ADF)	1993-1996
8.	Force Obote Back Army (FOBA),	Eastern (Tororo, Mbale)	1986
9.	Federal Democratic Movement (Fedemo)	Central (Buganda) Region	1981- 1987
10.	Ruwenzururu Kingdom Freedom Movement	Ruwenzori region	1960s-1994
11.	Uganda Freedom Movement (UFM)	Central (Buganda) Region	1981-1988
12.	West Nile Bank Front (WNBF) I &II	West Nile region	1979-2003
13.	Uganda National Democratic Alliance (UNDA)	Central (Buganda) Region	1994-1995
14.	National Army for the Liberation of Uganda (NALU)	Kasese District	From 1986
15.	Uganda National Rescue Front (UNRF) I &II	West Nile region	1986-2003
16.	Holy Spirit Movement/Holy Spirit Mobile Forces (HSM) I & II	Central North (mainly Acholi Region)	1987-1988
17.	Citizen Army for Multiparty Politics (CAMP),	Central North (mainly Lango Region)	1997-1999
18.	Action Restore Justice (ARJ)		
19.	Former Uganda National Army (FUNA),	West Nile region	1979-1987
20.	Anti-Referendum Army (ARA),		1997-?
21.	Uganda Federal Democratic Front/Movement		1987-?
22.	Peoples' Redemption Army (PRA)	Western and South-western	2001 to c.2006
23.	Uganda Salvation Force/Army (USF/A)	Kenyan Border Region	1998-?
24.	Lord's Army	Central North (mainly Acholi Region)	1988-1989
25.	Lord's Resistance Army (LRA),	Central North (mainly Acholi Region). From 2005, operating in Central African Republic and Democratic Republic of Congo.	1989-2005

Local Ownership, Political Will and SSR: Myths and Realities

6.1 The Illusion of Local Ownership in the Implementation of SSR

6.1.1. ***Introduction***

The enthusiasm with which 'local ownership' is given prominence in the promotion of outsider interventions masks the deeply-held conviction of key constituencies in underdeveloped countries that, donor-driven reforms are external impositions. For many of the countries that are targeted for institutional reforms, the primary pre-occupation is always access to the funding for which the reform is always presented as a conditionality. While it is often the case that outside intervention is prompted by internal crisis and a situation of a 'policy vacuum' in which the recipient may lack the capacity to design its own programmes, many aid recipients will have a modicum of functionality and will either show outright resentment for intrusive reforms or they will endure them for the sake of gaining access to badly-needed financial resources. In whatever state the recipient may be, external involvement in the making of choices regarding institutional architecture is always viewed as an irritant and an infringement on sovereignty. This is particularly the case with proposals for reforming departments of government such as defence that are considered critical to sovereignty, which even for countries that propose reform would be off limits for outsiders. It is in such circumstances that, quite apart from ownership being a desirable expectation and an ideal state of affairs, it is instead '…invoked defensively, asserted in order to avoid the appearance of paternalism or neo-colonialism' (Chesterman, 2007:9). This may be the rationale, albeit at the rhetorical level, for attempts to give the appearance of the primacy of the authorities and civil society of countries targeted for reforms.

In the particular instance of SSR, it is deemed that local ownership is crucial because it '…is both a matter of respect and a pragmatic necessity. The bottom line is that reforms that are not shaped and driven by local actors are unlikely to be implemented properly and sustained.' (Nathan, 2009:20). But as that statement shows, even those who deem ownership to be indispensable declare that indispensability in the same breath in which they remind their audiences that guaranteeing local ownership is not a matter of principle, but rather, it is 'a pragmatic necessity'.[219] That contradiction notwithstanding, it continues to be impressed upon those that are involved in the implantation of SSR that, it '…should be a nationally owned process that is rooted in the particular needs and conditions of the country in question' (United Nations, 2007); a message that United Nations Secretary General has reinforced by stressing the need to '…learn better how to respect and support local ownership, local leadership and a local constituency for reform, while at the same time remaining faithful to United Nations norms and standards' (UN, 2004: para.17). In similar terms' the Secretary General's report on SSR stresses that '…broad national consultation lies at the heart of national ownership' further noting that, success in the implementation of SSR is possible '…only if it is a nationally led and inclusive process in which national and local authorities, parliaments and civil society, including traditional leaders, women's groups and others, are actively engaged' (UN, 2008: para. 36). On its part, the OECD DAC notes that SSR should be '…people-centred, locally owned and based on democratic norms and human rights principles and the rule of law' (2007: 21); while to the IMF it is

[219] Pragmatism as opposed to principle is directly alluded to by OECD. While emphasizing the importance of local ownership and co-ordination, the OECD notes that 'When considering co-ordination mechanisms at field level, it is important to retain the key factor of local ownership as a point of departure and to ensure that, where possible, the partner country government leads on co-ordination (2007:244). In a sense similar to Nathan's statement above, the OECD casually contradicts itself by asserting that local ownership is a 'key factor' which should be adhered to only 'where possible'.

> [A] willing assumption of responsibility for an agreed program of policies by officials…who have the responsibility to formulate and carry out those policies, based on an understanding that the program is achievable and it is in the country's own interest (2001)

In spite of those lofty claims, in reality '…a minimalist approach is often taken in practice, reducing ownership to consultation with the political and security sector leadership (Mobekk, 2010:231), which, by limiting in advance what is often referred to as 'empowerment' serves well the purposes of some key players in international development, such as the World Bank, whose internal actions necessitate that official references to ownership have to be received with some reservations given that in reality, such references are often accompanied by practices that contradict the declared ends of 'participation' and 'empowerment'.[220]

Participation has tended to remain at the level of projects; but even at then level, exclusively within a narrow circle of bureaucrats and not communities, as references to the involvement of civil society organisations may cause one to believe. Questions on how much real empowerment is generated in civil society consultations aimed at achieving ownership remain (Houtzager and Moore, 2003). This is particularly in light of the deficiencies of civil society groups, a problem that we shall explore shortly. What remains unclear is the actual interpretation of local ownership on both sides of the aid giving and aid receiving divide. Many analysts have highlighted this problem, amongst them, Chesterman who has noted that, '…ownership is frequently asserted in both political and economic processes of

220 Wade (2001) points out the controversies surrounding the publication of the 2000–01 World Development Report in which two opposing camps, the 'finance' and the 'civil society' group disagreed on the extent to which the draft report excessively made 'empowerment' centre stage. One of the key controversies was on democracy and the empowerment of the poor, i.e., how to create or strengthen the organizations of the poor, including networks, cooperatives, unions to articulate their interests in the political and market realms, and how to generally make the state responsive to citizens. The initial criticism of this approach was 'Why is this stuff being given priority over growth?', growing to 'get rid of this stuff' especially when the US Treasury stepped into the controversy; later becoming 'these chapters pander to noisy and nosy NGOs' and 'the Bank should not be in the business of empowerment'. That draft report was eventually withdrawn and its director, Ravi Kanbur resigned.

transition, though its meaning is often unclear and may have more psychological effect than political' (2004:196).

In a study of the relationship between a Sub-Saharan African country and its aid donors, representatives of aid agencies were asked about their understanding of local ownership (Helleiner, 2000:85-86). Their responses give an indication of the lack of clarity on what the term refers to and probably also, the reasons why it is preferred. The responses included:

- Ownership exists when they (recipients) do what we want them to do but they do so voluntarily;
- We want them to take ownership. Of course they must do what we want. If not they should get their money elsewhere;
- We have to pressure the local government to take ownership;
- We have to be realistic. Our taxpayers want to be sure their money is being used well. They want to know there is someone they can trust, a national of their own country, in charge;
- I routinely instruct my staff to draft terms of reference for technical cooperation projects and then spend half an hour with a local government official on it.

If externally derived initiatives involving governments are to gain acceptance, outside actors will out of necessity have to acknowledge that the central state authorities or the national governments of the countries where reforms are sought have to be held as the primary and legitimate local owner. This may have to be the case even where control over the instruments of power is being violently contested. If there is no distinct power centre in target countries with which outsiders can engage in establishing whether there is a requirement for

institutional innovations like SSR, then it may well be the case that what needs to be addressed is being misdiagnosed: more than being merely diversionary, emphasis on reform of the so-called security sector may in fact be a misplaced effort. This may be what Scheye has suggested in his comments on the general silence of SSR literature on the question of local leadership. He has observed that, 'local leadership may be the single most important variable in determining whether an SSR project is effective and sustainable, for without a local leader or cohort of leaders, there is no one to drive a project forward to completion' (2010:6). Even when it is acknowledged that the SSR debate unduly narrows the parameters of our understanding of security, it will still remain that with respect to addressing the concerns of physical safety, the aim has to be the reinvigoration of states and governments in conflict afflicted areas of the world, with the view of enabling them to first restore their monopoly over the instruments of coercion in the basic Weberian sense before any other matters such as reform can be hoped to receive sustained attention.

6.1.2. ***SSR as a hard sell: supplicant ownership of benefactor's national interests***

On another level, it has to be understood that the practice by any country or alliance of cultivating relations with other countries, whatever their level of development, is and has always been a matter of self interest. The conditions that dictate the giving and receiving of aid can very easily obscure that reality, particularly when they are looked at exclusively through the lens of the paternalistic proclamations by administrators of aid projects and the research bureaucrats that provide intellectual justification for external interventionism. Even where self-interest is the principal driver of external involvement, the justification for involvement will still be couched in quasi-altruistic terms. The 2003 European

security strategy expresses the point of common interest succinctly in its emphasis that, for the countries of Western Europe,

> [O]ur traditional concept of self-defence – up to and including the Cold War – was based on the threat of invasion. With the new threats, the first line of defence will often be abroad…. State failure and organised crime spread if they are neglected – as we have seen in West Africa. This implies that we should be ready to act before a crisis occurs (2003:7).

The reality of those concerns and the fact that they are never expressed as shared problems tends to make the promotion of institutional reform initiatives along the lines of 'local ownership' more than a hard sell. The saliency of national interest in seemingly altruistic pursuits has been expressed starkly by Greene in his observation that,

> [S]ome potential violent conflicts are of more direct concern to the UK than others, for reasons of foreign policy or national interests but also more contingently because of domestic political lobby groups or media coverage. There is a natural tendency for the UK to focus support for SSR and other conflict prevention measures to address the conflicts that concern it most. However, it is important to recognise that UK's priorities will not necessarily be shared by the government concerned or by its people.' (Greene, 2003:6).

The condescension of donor country statements further works against the reality that they also have their own concerns and vulnerabilities, encouraging the mistaken view that external intervention is a one-way street, involving a supplicant who has to take ownership of the benefactor's policy proposals and offers for help. References to 'local ownership' and 'political will' on the part of the aid recipients and target countries for reform originate from that flawed thinking. The specific countries which donors single out for promotion of institutional reform programmes further highlight the real motive for implementation of those programmes. More significantly, they raise doubts about the validity of any references to 'local ownership', and the related notion of 'political will'. As Scheye notes, '…there is no mistaking the coincidence that the predominant British and

French SSR involvements are in former colonies and in conflicts that are deemed of vital national interest' (2010:7).

A closer look at the programmes of choice also reveals a similar pattern. Scheye notes further that, '…approximately 65 per cent or more of the EU's SSR expenditures target support for police development and border management, subjects that are judged to be of key supranational and national interest.'[221] One exception that comes to mind is that of the Government of the Netherlands aiding and promoting SSR in Burundi, a country with which there are no historical ties like those Britain and France have with their former colonies. The Netherlands can advise on 'local ownership' in Burundi with more moral authority than Britain or France in their former colonies. Those practices indirectly point to the additional limitation of country level approaches to reform. The realities like for which SSR and other peacebuilding initiatives are formulated are always aspects, or even mere overhangs of wider dynamics of collusions and collisions of national armed forces, militias, insurgents and warlords in conjoined conflict formations that transcend 'national' borders, yet the dominant orientation of interventions remains country-focused. As Tschirgi notes,

> It is increasingly recognized that focusing narrowly on country-level peace-building efforts is unlikely to yield significant changes in peace-building outcomes—especially in regions where conflicts have interlocking political, security and economic dynamics (2004:13).[222]

What remains in question is whether the core interests of the outside actor who initiates institutional reform in a conflict prone country can be reconciled with the interests of key constituencies in the country that is targeted for reform.

---

221 Ibid

222 This point is further supported by the UK Department for International Development, DFID at least in theory. DFID notes that, 'The persistence of regional tensions may make governments reluctant to reduce military spending and the size of unaffordable standing armies, for fear of undermining perceived defence needs' (2002:15).

6.1.3. *Imagining 'local ownership' and 'buy-in' through participatory approaches*

Even with all the gains that are supposed to accrue from institutional reform in the politics of the countries that are normally targeted for SSR, the fact that it is an externally derived initiative remains its soft underbelly. To alleviate that weakness, attempts have been made, mainly through participatory approaches to give reform programmes a semblance of being home-grown and developed by local 'stakeholders'. According to that assumption, the OECD in its flagship publication on SSR claims that, '…more inclusive, participatory and transparent process can help ensure that the security needs of the different groups within a country are heard and can change the nature of security sector reform…' (2007:130). However, development practitioners are becoming increasingly critical of participatory methods because they have been turned into a 'flag of necessity' without which development oriented 'research vessels' cannot acquire sea worthiness certificates and a ritual by research bureaucrats and an excuse to limit further investment in in-depth studies of social change (Richards, 1995). Rather than being the liberation tool that it was originally conceived to be, the participatory approach is 'The New Tyranny' that masks oppression behind the rhetoric and techniques of empowerment and democracy and largely maintains existing power relations while suppressing local power differentials (Cooke and Kothari, 2001). Questions over participatory approach become more apparent their intended purpose, namely, buy-in and local ownership is scrutinised further.

As noted already, 'buy-in' and 'local ownership' are the putative requisites for the initiation of SSR. Whether they are present or not is deemed to be a factor that ultimately determines whether a drive for reform will succeed or fail. However, the use to which those two terms are normally put in policy and academic literature does not seem to suggest that what they denote is fully recognised, as evidenced by the manner in which they are used interchangeably.

Whatever explanation can be given for this mix-up, it sheds light on the extent to which development orthodoxy drifts into dogmatism in which the latest buzzwords generated by the international development community are put to unselective and at times contradictory usage. This is bound to lead to questions over the credibility of policy pronouncements that are dressed in those terms. In a few cases, advocacy groups, activists and donors seem to appreciate the implications of any reference to 'buy-in' and what it may mean for the legitimacy of their initiatives, hence the use of 'ownership' as an alternative; but in most cases, the terms are used interchangeably as pointed out, even when in reality they are antithetic. The lack of clarity on the two terms is evident in the writings of some of the key promoters of SSR. For example, Hendrickson and Ball have noted that:

> [A] strong case in Africa for closer engagement with the African Union to heighten its profile on SSR and provide it with the capacity to push for more broad-based continental buy-in of the SSR agenda. This would likely involve close collaboration with sub-regional organisations, governmental agencies, and civil society networks to develop a culture of SSR research that is seen to be truly African in origin (2005:28)

In this case, it would not be easy to reconcile 'a culture of SSR research that is seen to be truly African in origin a culture' with 'broad-based continental buy-in'. Given that the former implies ownership and the latter implies external imposition, that statement is self-contradictory. Seeking clarity between the two terms is not just a lexicographical or semantic exercise but helps to shed light on how much serious thinking goes into the debates and prescriptive analysis on SSR and related initiatives; but also the inherently undemocratic nature of the processes that are the reputed progenitors of democratic governance in countries whose institutions and practices are targeted for reform.

In ordinary terms, 'ownership' is a state of affairs where an individual or group can lay claim to conceiving of, and participating in the development of an idea, a project, a commitment, a decision or a plan of action. As such, the owner

has an attachment to the object of ownership that supersedes mere endorsement, but understands and believes in it and is willing and ready to implement it. On the other hand, 'buy-in' refers to a group or individual, on their own, going through all pre-implementation steps as listed under ownership and afterwards seeking to convince, inspire or induce others who have not been party to the initial phases the inception of an idea or plan to partake of implementation. The key decisions are taken without those that are crucial for successful implementation but as soon as it is realised that those great decisions are not worth anything until they can get implemented, their initiators have to sell them and the implementers have to 'buy-in. As noted by Ball and Hendrickson,

> [D]onor and Northern institutions have generated most of the research and policy paradigms in the area of SSR. This has served to limit buy-in to SSR thinking by....governments, for whom there are often insufficient incentives to undertake SSR in the OECD-DAC sense of the word (2005:28).

This has become the general trend in the promotion of institutional reform by donor countries in aid-dependent countries. As hinted at in the foregoing quote, there are obvious limitations to that essentially dictatorial approach. The 'customers' that have buy into the ideas and plans cannot be expected to identify with a vision when they have been excluded from its formulation and inception; and are unacquainted with whatever alternative options may have been available to choose from, and the justification for zeroing on the option they have to adopt. As such, the plans based on those ideas may be strange or incomprehensible from the outset even for those that may be inclined to implement them. In cases where 'buy-in' is attained, it may be for purely for instrumental reasons: The implementation of the plans may be a prerequisite for the disbursement of badly-needed aid or other forms of intangible support and legitimation. There may be appearances of agreement with the plans and those imposing the plans may feel content that their initiatives have been accepted but such plans tend to be disowned at the earliest opportunity.

6.2 Local Ownership as the Incarnation of the Civil Society Myth in Underdeveloped Polities

Of the terms that have come to dominate post-Cold War debates on the security and development challenges of the underdeveloped countries, 'civil society' stands out as prominently, and probably as equally overused as others like 'good governance' and 'capacity building'. Civil society is hailed as the element upon which rests great hope for resolving the social, economic and political ills of countries and regions afflicted by chronic instability and as '…a crucial agent for limiting authoritarian government, strengthening the empowerment of the people, and enforcing political accountability ….improving the quality and inclusiveness of governance' (Caparini, 2004: 171). More broadly, 'civil-society' as a term has grown into an all-purpose byword in common employment by scholars and analysts on all sides of the political spectrum in their reflection on a host of issues confronting an increasingly globalising world. But as Purdue has observed, the concept remains contested and '...has a complex genealogy of shifting meanings, according to the rhetorical needs of the day' (2010:1).

The period from the early 1990s has witnessed an increased interest mainly by Western governments and NGOs, in funding, if not also finding the continent's civil society (Barkan 1994; Diamond 1995; Hutchful, 1996; Mark Robinson 1995, 1996a, 1996b; Carothers 1997). More specifically for Sub-Saharan Africa, the high expectations of the utility of the term appear not to be confined only to the reform of the 'security sector', but also to the righting of politics in general, leading to the assumption that, '…the political reform of the [sub] continent may depend on the extent to which civil society is able to counteract the stultifying weight of the oppressive state' (Chabal and Daloz, 1999:19). It is n the context of SSR, it is hoped that civil society can:

> [C]ontribute positively to SSR by facilitating dialogue and debate on security issues, assisting in security-related research, training in legal and human

> rights issues, advocacy and awareness raising, security budget analysis and monitoring and evaluation of security policy (Mlambo, 2011:180).

There are many ways in which the category, 'civil society' has been defined and described but all tend to point in the direction of its unselective employment in reference to the pre-industrial countries like those in Sub-Saharan Africa. According to Shaw, civil society is the '…network of institutions through which groups in society in general represent themselves – both to each other and to the state (1994:647), while Norton has defined civil society as that space where one would find a '…melange of associations, clubs, guilds and syndicates, federations, unions, parties and groups come together to provide a buffer between the state and citizen' (1993:206). Elsewhere, he reinforces that statement by emphasizing an important attribute that by far highlights the key limitation of associational life in Sub-Saharan Africa by noting that, civil society is '…literally and plainly at the heart of participant political systems' (1995:7). On his part Stepan views civil society as the

> [A]rena where manifold social movements (such as neighbourhood associations, women's groups, religious groupings, and international currents) and civic organizations from all classes (lawyers, journalists, trade unions, and entrepreneurs, among others) attempt to constitute themselves in an ensemble of arrangements so that they can express themselves and advance their interests (1988:3-4).

However, several observers have questioned the validity of such assumptions by arguing that, the trendy use to which the notion of 'civil society' exemplifies the pitfalls of mechanical importation of ideological conceptions by abstracting them from the context of the struggles, the socio-economic transformations and relations that gave rise to them in the first place (Mamdani, 1990:359). Like Mamdani, Nyangabyaki's comments on the West's interest in civil society in Uganda implicitly point at the limitations of abstraction of ideological formulations from their original context. He has notes that, '…the major thrust of the discourse

on civil society … has not been about the actual history of civil society in Uganda but on social engineering a new type'.[223] Mostly emphasized is the extent of divergence in socio-historical conditions of bourgeois Europe and the largely pre-industrial Sub-Saharan Africa. This is what is seen to be the emergence of the category in the age of the bourgeoisie in Europe and the subsequent effort of this class to ensure empirical differentiation between the private and public spheres, and more specifically protecting the private arena against state action (Woods, 1992: 78).

Moreover, the assumption that the existence of a 'private sphere' with the wherewithal to curb the encroachments of the state is a universal phenomenon disregards the diversity of trajectories of state making across history. State making in much of Europe was largely through a protracted process of bottom-up accretion involving bargains and compromises between emerging monarchs and nobles – be they dukes, counts or *vassi dominici* – and their vassals, or a lord who dominated a feudal principality; in a process was stretched over a period of four to five centuries (Strayer, 1970:57). For most of the states in the underdeveloped world, particularly the former colonies, the process of state making has been predominantly top-down and precipitous, with the central state authorities retaining the organisational initiative at the disadvantage of the populace; with far-reaching implications for the future emergence, character and efficacy of whatever it is that one can call civil society. It is for such reasons that Riddell and Bebbington have observed that,

> Civil society' is a notoriously slippery concept. It has entered donor terminology without careful definition.... In many respects, the term is used as a code for a set of ideas related to participation, good government, human rights, privatisation and public sector reform (1995: 23).

---

223 Cited in Hearn, 1999 p. 4.

A distinction is made between thinkers like Hobbes and Locke who understood civil society primarily as a political society and those who from the eighteenth century start to describe civil society as a sphere of social activity distinguished from the state, conceptualised in the Weberian sense as the central government. Theorists, such as Ernest Gellner took consider civil society it to be a 'natural' condition of human freedom, yet others like Ferguson or Hegel question its utility and assert that it is a result of drawn out historical processes, especially those that result in differentiation of society into distinct socio-economic interest groups. Critics have based especially on the latter interpretation to argue that the undifferentiated socio-economic character of Sub-Saharan Africa imposes major structural limitations on the emergence and sustenance of civil society associations and risks to make civil society-dependent endeavours such as SSR ineffectual. Even for those with a strong belief in the power of norms, doubts over the utility of the term 'civil society' in the context of Sub Saharan Africa are not difficult to detect. According to Callaghy, '...if used at all the concept should be used in a very restricted sense relating to the emergence of a consensus on norms defining a civil sphere' (1994: 235).

However, even without a detailed attempt at tracing the origins of the term, it is clear that both the leadership of civil society organisations in Africa and the much-criticised political and public sector elite have their roots in a common socio-cultural milieu therefore have similar limitations. (Adedeji, 2005:21). Far from being conduits for strengthening governance or serving as agents of development, 'civil society' organisations in present day Africa are but a manifestation of the phenomena that gave rise to the same entrenched political elites that continue to dominate the state sector. Thus, according to Diamond, 'civil society organisations in Africa too often are crippled by the same problems of poverty, corruption, nepotism, parochialism, opportunism, ethnicism, illiberalism and willingness to be co-opted that plague the society in general' (1997:24).

As such, any initiative, SSR inclusive, that bets its success on the ability to utilise such structures is bound to yield very little. In terms similar to Diamond's, Darnolf has argued that,

> [N]ot until the internal operations of civil society's various institutions are permeated by a democratic political culture can its members be patterned to behave in a democratic fashion. Today civil society organisations of many African countries are relatively underdeveloped (1997:20-21).

The underdevelopment Darnolf is referring to manifests as a deficiency in elementary information or tutoring on the basic workings of the state and government, the processes of policy formulation and decision-making, let alone specialised expertise on the essentials of security and strategy. On their part, state authorities always try their best to mystify security and elbow off all matters to do with security. The proponents of SSR accentuate this problem by pursuing the debate as a specialised subject in closed networks of expertise and pamphleteering. Due to these limitations, memberships of civil society organisations are never sufficiently competent to engage in sober and constructive debate on the management of national affairs in general, and defence and security in particular.

Nevertheless, not all within the SSR fraternity are overly sanguine about the potential of civil society in the successful implementation of reforms. Some analysts have raised concerns over the utility of the concept and the wholesomeness of groups that are identified as such. According to Caparini the SSR framework's use of the term conflates an 'empirical category', specifically 'NGO', with a 'political project', that is, the autonomous sphere of social activity that has the potential to improve governance, hold the state accountable (Caparini, 2002/4).[224] As a consequence of this, 'civil society' '...tends to mean all things to all people, and the analytical benefit from a more rigorous use of the concept may

[224] Cited in Peake and Scheye, p. 316.

be lost' (Caparini, 2004:177). Hendrickson contends that a dependence on civil society to achieve reform may be fundamentally misplaced, pointing out how they are often a product of foreign funding, thus questioning their independence. Highlighting the narrow focus by civil society groups - particularly human-rights organisations - on issues of governmental accountability rather than on how administration can be made more effective, he observes that '…the practice of denunciating without making practical suggestions for reform may undermine the processes of debate that generate support' (1999: 31).

Moreover, those that continue to romanticise civil society often overlook the reality that not all the organisations that would fall under that label are 'civil'. Some of the organisations may be dedicated to racism and violence or, like the Mafia, may be illegal, or declared so. Even the Interahamwe of Rwanda, the outfit that spearheaded the extermination of the Tutsi and moderate Hutu in 1994 was a civil society organisation. It may therefore be reasonable to posit that the prevailing conception of civil society may be more part of the problem, than it is part of the solution to many of the daunting concerns that are placed on its shoulders. Particularly, a case like that of Rwanda seems to highlight the need for caution on the part of those who view civil society as always a force for good and a saviour of society. 'It is not the existence of civic associations that strengthens civil society', writes Uvin, 'but their purpose and the extent of their freedom to operate' (1998: 164).

6.3 The Status of Civil Society and State Responsiveness: The Case of Contemporary Uganda

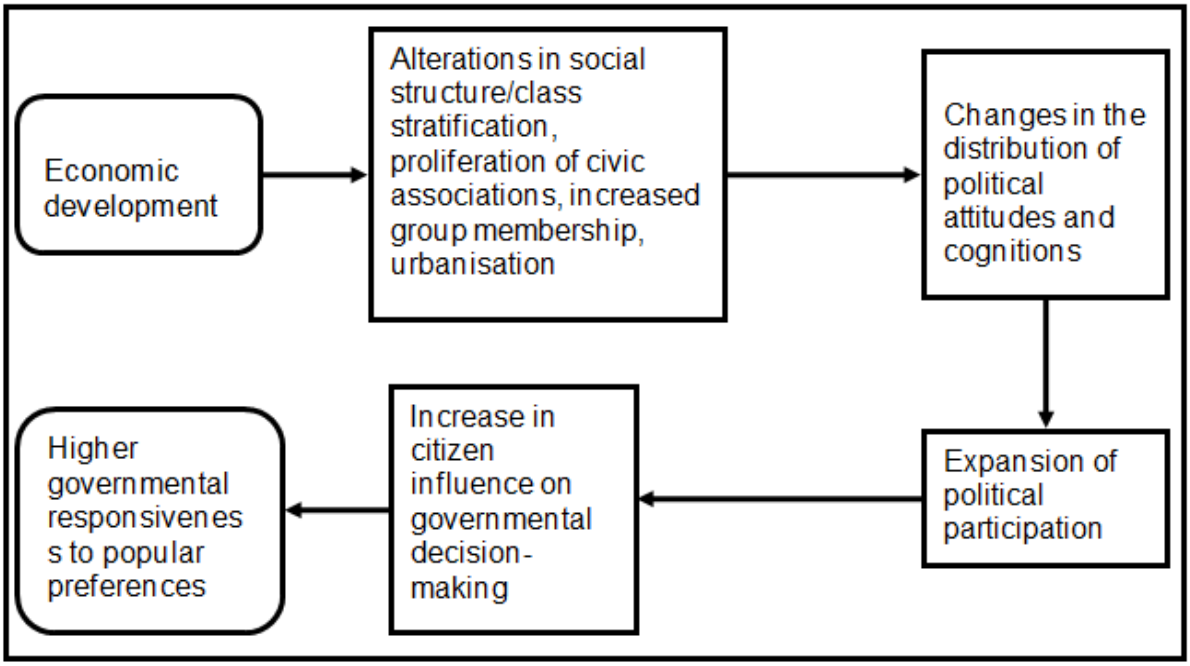
Popular engagement in the policy process takes place within particular country settings which are in turn determined primarily by local social, economic and political realities. As would be expected, countries have diverse political systems and forms of government in addition to being endowed with varying levels of socio-economic development. It is this broad socio-political context that

determines the framing of issues, the setting of agendas, modes of popular engagement (if any) in the policy process and subsequently the policy outputs of a political system. Of greater significance however are the effects of the level socioeconomic mobilisation on the inclination, interest and it can be argued, the competence of the broader masses to participate in political debates. To illustrate the limitations of a narrative on civil society that dispenses with empirical evidence in preference for generic norms, we give a rough sketch of a selection of Uganda's socioeconomic indicators that are determinant of the civic capacity of the country's wider society.

Of those factors, the one that stands out as the axis around which all others revolve is the level of economic development so far attained. While it is an established view that economic development has major consequences for many aspects of social and political life, references to civil society and political participation in the underdeveloped world tend to take the effects of quantitative socioeconomic transformation on institutional architecture and function as a given. Such categories as civil society and democracy, or even others such as fascism, authoritarianism are qualitative manifestations of historically specific quantitative realities whose universality ought not to be taken for granted. Studies of social mobilization, for example, have demonstrated that economic development is associated with sharp increases in the general level of political participation (Black, 1966; Huntington, 1968; Deutsch, 1961; Lipset, 1960). Those studies – among many others – demonstrate a strong link between aggregate measures of socio-economic change such as per capita income, literacy, and levels of urbanisation, on one hand, and aggregate measures of political participation, such as voting turnout, and disposition for involvement in civic activities in general, on the other (Nie, Bingham-Powell and Prewitt, 1969). Similarly, the social status, education, and organizational memberships, that is, membership to civil society organisations reveals a positive correlation with the likelihood of engaging in various types of political activity and the modes of such engagement (Almond and Verba, 1989).

The figure below outlines the causal pathway between economic development and the emergence/capability of civil society.

Figure 7: Socio-economic Development and Civil Society's Influence on Policy



Adapted from: Nie and others, 1969, p.808

These findings have major implications for the usefulness of some of the terminology commonly employed to depict the transactions between political systems and the populations over which they preside and specifically, the capability of the latter to engage meaningfully with the political process. One of the terms commonly used in neoliberal reformist literature is state responsiveness, which, on one hand gauges the extent to which the public authorities defer to the preferences of their constituents, and on the other, the forcefulness with which the constituents articulate their policy preferences.

Whereas the debates on civil society involvement in the political process have tended to emphasize a static and one-sided notion of responsiveness, it is a relational, as much as it is a reciprocal phenomenon involving exchanges between

communities and the policy elites that preside over them. The relationship is two-way, entailing on one hand, the generation and transmission of demands and influences (stimuli) by the community, and on the other hand, responses to the 'stimuli' by the policy elite. Hence, the level of responsiveness is dependent on the nature and intensity of the influences reaching the policy elite. In absence of those influences, responsiveness will depend on the level of self-drive of the elite in identifying and addressing the needs of their constituents. By shaping the priorities of communities, socioeconomic underdevelopment stands out as one of the principal determinants of both the type and intensity of demands placed upon the policy elite by their populations.

In a transitional and largely agrarian country like Uganda, not only is the character of demands radically different from what one sees in industrial settings, they are also channelled to the political system through dissimilar means. The channelling of influence in more developed countries takes the form of interest and pressure group politics: influence is exerted before the passing of laws and formulation of policies. On the contrary, in less developed countries individual and group demands (however the groups may be defined) are pressed at the enforcement stage (Scott, 1969:1142). Scott further observes that, the latter form of channelling of demands is often disregarded especially by Western scholars on account that '...accustomed to their own politics, [they] have been looking in the wrong place'.[225] Those differences in channelling influence have a bearing on the style and focus of responsiveness. Moreover, the nature of demands of the majority of the populations of transitional nations is not amenable to the legislative process. Even when such demands are made for a wider grouping, because society is not yet integrated into a homogenous nation-state, they are likely to refer to a 'primordial' grouping such as an ethnic or linguistic community, or at most a regional bloc. For the term 'responsiveness' to be meaningful, it is important that it is applied with due consideration of the social, economic and

[225] Ibid.

political context of countries and regions being analysed. The table below is an attempt to match the style of responsiveness with the level of socio-economic development the gray column represents the style of governmental responsiveness in underdeveloped countries like Uganda.

Figure 8: Socio-economic Development, Civil Society (CS) Capacity and State Responsiveness.[226]

	STYLE OF STATE RESPONSIVENESS			
MODES OF CS ACTIVISM	**SYMBOLIC RESPONSIVENESS**	**SERVICE RESPONSIVENESS**	**ALLOCATIONAL RESPONSIVENESS**	**POLICY RESPONSIVENESS**
Nature of demands and inducements	Material particularistic inducements play a very minor role except among a limited number of local power holders.	Non-ideological & particularistic demands, individual inducements (material rewards, jobs, licences, patronage, favours, welfare payments associated with 'corruption')	Indivisible rewards e.g., public works, schools (pork barrel or communal inducements).	Broad policy and ideological concerns (defence and security, tax regime, subsidy programmes)
Socio-political context	'Traditional' political systems, very low income largely pre-industrial, rural societies, non-monetised economy	Low income countries, rapid socio-economic and political change, rising expectations, low levels of political institutionalisation, low integration of the socio-political system	Middle income countries	High income, highly urbanised industrial countries, high on the human development index
Strategies of influence/means of interest articulation/preferred modes of political participation	Pleasing, placating or winning favours from a notable, landlord, prominent kith and kin or local official	Mobilised participation, demands reach the political system at the implementation stage, predominance of 'machine politics', 'contacting' to solve individual problems, violence (riots, revolts, coups *d'etat*, assassinations, revolutions).	Autonomous participation through electoral activity, lobbying, organisational activity based on regional blocks.	Autonomous participation Predominance of citizens' groups (political parties, pressure groups, lobbies), demands are channelled at the legislative stage of the policy cycle.
Basis of loyalty/social organisation	Political ties are determined by traditional patterns of deference (vertical ties) to established authorities	Pragmatic relations (kinship, ethnicity, patronage), Individual, family or small group focus, decision-makers and their supporters relate via personal loyalty, minimal overlap between the political, economic and social systems.	Community or locality orientation, ethnic concentration	Vertical or occupational and class ties (arising from a high level of socio-economic development)
Government Decision-making style	Absolutism	Decision-makers have a high degree of latitude in determining policy.	Conferral politics	Predominance of policy processes and ideological concerns, elaborate legislative/party Systems

226 Adapted from Mutengesa and Hendrickson, 2008, p. 26.

6.3.1. ***General underdevelopment***

In any political setting, the priorities of the citizenry influence the nature of demands that they place upon the policy elites and correspondingly, the responsiveness of that elite. The level of socioeconomic development, measured in terms of the education standard, income, levels of consumption and urbanisation among other indicators of socioeconomic mobilisation directly affect the demands and priorities of communities. Moreover, central government responsiveness is a measure of, and the flip side of the extent to which significant sections of the population are involved in 'activity by private citizens designed to influence governmental decision-making' (Huntington and Nelson, 1976:4), or political participation.

A population whose best part is afflicted by ill-health or lives in conditions of absolute poverty will be constantly engrossed in the daily struggles to meet the bare necessities of life and may not be concerned about policy issues. Equally so, low levels of education are a barrier to popular engagement in matters of broader public policy concern, thus limiting the level interaction between governments and their constituents. The age profile, especially the median age in addition to the standard of education of a population have a bearing on the level of participation of wider society in politics with a corresponding impact on state responsiveness. The higher those parameters are, the more likely that the average population will be politically attentive. An older, more educated and more well-to-do population is likely to have a greater sense of belonging, community cohesion and awareness. An assessment of the style of government of the nature of transactions between the policy elite and the broader population would be incomplete without a broad survey of some of those parameters.

6.3.2. ***Low level of socio-economic mobilisation***

Uganda is ranked as the 161st out of 185 on the United Nations human development index making it one of the least developed countries in the world (United Nations, 2013). The average Ugandan is a member of one of the country's 65 indigenous ethnic communities (Republic of Uganda, 1995: 214-215), living on average for just over 54.5 years (United Nations, 2013:146), with a gross annual per capita income of $1,168,[227] compared to the $6,000, the threshold at which developing countries are known to make an irreversible transition to liberal democracy (Przeworski *et al*., 1997). At 26.9%,[228] the proportion of Uganda's industrial production to total production is equivalent to England's in 1849 (Mitchell and Deane, 1962: 271). Economic factors such as the structure and output of national production hinted on above have a decisive influence on responsiveness: after all responsiveness boils down to matching ends with means.

Uganda's very low level of urbanisation places additional limits on how much the country's population can be mobilised on a sustained basis to participate in politics, and to, thereby have a meaningful impact on government decision-making and policy oversight as is envisaged in the discourse on the efficacy of civil society. About 86 per cent of Uganda's population live in rural areas (United Nations, 2012:121), about the same as the average European country at the turn of the nineteenth Century (de Vries, 1984:39). The population of Uganda's largest city, Kampala, is about the same as that of London in the first quarter of the 19th Century.[229] Like in any other underdeveloped country, the population's location

---

227 Ibid.

228 Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) Fact Book, https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/ug.html (Accessed on 12 November 2013)

229 The population of London hit the 2 million mark in the mid-1830s (Greater London, Inner London & Outer London Population & Density History http://www.demographia.com/dm-lon31.htm Accessed on 12 November 2013) out of a UK population of population of about 25 Million (Mathias, 1969:449); while the population of Kampala is only projected to reach 2 million out of a population of 38 million in 2015 (United Nations, 2012:230; The New Vision, Jun 23, 2013, *Uganda*

in the rural countryside is closely tied to limited economic productivity and poverty. About 67 per cent of Uganda's population are considered to be vulnerable to poverty,[230] well above the 1688 proportion of the population of England and Wales that could not live on their income and had to depend on charity and poor relief (Mathias, 1969: 24-26). As Huntington has noted,

> People who are really too poor are too poor for politics and too poor for protest. They are indifferent, apathetic, and lack exposure to the media and other stimuli which would arouse their aspirations in such a manner as to galvanise them into political activity (1968:52).

In that socio-economic reality, the daily efforts of the vast majority of the population are geared towards meeting the demands of basic subsistence leaving very little time for purposeful engagement in politics, excepting the seasonal participation in the electoral process. The pressing needs of such populations tend to force them to privilege service responsiveness over broader issues of policy formulation and legislation as happens in countries whose reality informs prevailing notions of the debate on civil society (Figure 8, p. 282). The majority of the demands of such a population tend to be channelled to the political system at the enforcement stage, but not before laws are passed. Exertion of influence at the enforcement stage will often take the form of 'corruption', in contrast to pressure group politics in countries where populations live significantly above the poverty line and demand nothing else from their political representatives other than effective policy outputs. The structures, methods and characteristics of competitive political organisations in Uganda bears very close resemblance to what has been dubbed as 'machine politics' in which the central mechanism is dominated by a single individual relating to political and social groups by

---

population at record 37 million http://www.newvision.co.ug/news/644270-uganda-population-at-record-37-million.html Accessed on 12 November 2013).

[230] The New Vision, Mar 19, 2013, *67% of Ugandans vulnerable to poverty,* http://www.newvision.co.ug/news/640813-67-of-ugandans-vulnerable-to-poverty.html (Accessed on 12 November 2013).

patronage. It is not likely that such socioeconomic reality can foster the conditions in which complex policy issues can receive sustained attention from the population, with obvious implications for the capabilities of whatever it is that may be meaningfully be referred to as civil society.

6.3.3. ***Lack of information***

'Effective states require engaged societies that demand change and hold governments accountable for such delivery' (World Bank, 2005: 3). Like most underdeveloped countries, Uganda has unique demographic and informational characteristics that impose major limitations on societal engagement in civic activities and engagement in the policy process; with the effect of exaggerating the prominence of central state the policy process, while also limiting their capacity to make enlightened decisions. Societal engagement is a critical measure of the robustness of civil society. It is unattainable in conditions where large sections of the population are illiterate and live in physical isolation in inaccessible rural areas with restricted access to information on programmes and policies of the central government.

As already pointed out, the majority of Ugandans live in scattered communities in the rural countryside, making the country one of the least urbanised in the world. Isolation from the centres of power and the resulting lack of capacity to influence central government policy processes by such populations is compounded by their limited access to basic information. The 2002 Uganda population and housing census estimated that 49 per cent of the population depend on word of mouth as their major source of information (Uganda Government, 2002:iv). In line with that, a United Nations survey has established that Uganda is the 35th country from the bottom of the index of the number of radios receivers per thousand inhabitants; further showing that only 47.8 per cent of Ugandans own a radio, 0.7 per cent own a television and 0.7 per cent have

access to the print media.[231] Additionally, the country's circulation of newspapers and periodicals is one of the lowest in the world. While every one thousand Ugandans have access to 2.7 newspapers or periodicals, the ratio in the developed industrialised countries with politically active populations is in excess of 200 pieces per thousand inhabitants.[232] Access to information is further hampered by low levels of literacy. Uganda's literacy rate is about 68%, just about the rate for England and Wales in 1850.[233]

6.3.4. ***Physical isolation of the population***

To further complicate the informational isolation of Uganda's rural population, much of the countryside is neither accessible by road or rail this, for a country that is already constrained by being landlocked. Uganda is approximately the same size as the United Kingdom but a comparison of the two country's Aggregate Physical Accessibility Ratio of Territory (PART) by roadway measured as kilometres per square kilometre of territory reveals the level of inaccessibility of the country's hinterland and its residents. While for every one square kilometre of territory of the United Kingdom there is 1.6 Km of roads (all of which is paved), Uganda has only 0.29 Km, only 30 per cent of which is paved. The commonly employed measure for accessibility is the length in kilometres of paved roadway per 1,000 of the population. While the weighted average for the 184 countries assessed in 2003 was 9.107; and that for the European Union countries standing at 9.107,

---

231 For every 1,000 Ugandans, there are 121 radio receivers, compared to 2,084 receivers for the United States and 1,454 for the United Kingdom (UN Statistics Division website, http://unstats.un.org/unsd/default.htm, Accessed 23 March 2013)

232 Ibid

233 Uganda's literacy rate is close to Britain's a century and a half ago. According to Stephens ('Literacy in England, Scotland, and Wales', 555), the adult literacy rate for England, Scotland and Wales in 1850 was 61 per cent, increasing to 88 per cent in 1870 (higher than Uganda's projected 85 per cent for 2009/10 [Republic of Uganda, Uganda Population and Housing Census, 30]) and 100 per cent by 1900.

Uganda's is 0.077, about 11,727 per cent below the global average.[234] This reflects a similar trend for railroads, airports and inland waterways, making the country's rural countryside even much more inaccessible given its landlocked status.

A largely illiterate, predominantly rural and physically isolated population is limited on how much it can hold the political elite accountable for their actions and omissions. Such a population can only either lull policy elites into complacence, or furnish fertile ground for the thriving of absolutism as indeed was the case say in mediaeval and early modern Europe. A further point needs to be made regarding the isolation of the predominantly rural populations of pre-industrial countries such as Uganda. Apart from their remoteness from the economic and political centres, many of those communities live in total isolation from each other to an extent that militates against even the most basic form of inter-communal interaction, a foundational dimension of the notion of civil society. Purdue highlights the significance of that interaction when he notes that, '...civil society implies a level of mutual trust between strangers, who may therefore pass among each other in the physical space of cities and trade with another' (2010:1). At the heart of the the notion of civil society lies 'mutual trust between strangers'. In the language and social practices of the pastoralist Karimojong community of the remote Karamoja Province Northeast Uganda, there is no distinction between a stranger and an enemy. Both words are referred to by the same term, e*moit* (a*moit* being the feminine form), and as a general rule, all those that are labelled as *emoit* attract the instant sanction of loss of their belongings – mainly cattle – and death,[235] in keeping with a worldview that closely mirrors the Arab Bedouin political aphorism, 'My brother and I against my cousin; my cousin and I against the stranger'.

---

234 Data on the transportation infrastructure is derived from the CIA, CIA World Fact Book, 2003.

235 The same applies to the neighbouring Turkana in North-western Kenya and probably other related groups in the region. To the Turkana, McCabe observes that '...those who are not Ngiturkan are emoit, strangers and enemies; and enemies should be killed' (2004:56).

The political history of the countries that fall in the same category as Uganda, i.e., the former colonies did not help at all in the process of laying ground for the future evolution of the trait of mutual trust between strangers, and one can even argue, of an integrated national community. Commenting on the long term impact of on national unity by the policy of indirect rule in Nigeria, Ali Mazrui has observed that, it:

> [A]ggravated the problems of creating a modern nation-state after independence. The different groups in the country maintained their separate ethnic identities by being rules in part through their own native institutions.....Different sections of the population perceived each other as strangers, sometimes as aliens, increasingly as rivals, and ominously as potential enemies (1986:112).

In the case of Uganda, Ibingira notes that as early as 1898, a proposal that there should be established a Central Council for Uganda, a device that would have fostered a national outlook and encouraged inter-communal communication was actively discouraged by the colonial administrators (1973:27). In 1925, a proposal by the rulers of the four Kingdoms and the province of Busoga to hold regular meetings was vetoed by colonial Governor (Ingham, 1957).[236] Commenting more generally on the process of founding local government in Uganda, Burke has noted that;

> The establishment of districts based wherever possible on tribal residence has contributed to a sense of tribal nationalism and separatism that in many cases did not exist prior to the arrival of the British and subsequent amalgamation of the parochial segments into single districts (1964:14).[237]

---

[236] Cited in Ibingira, 1973, p.27.

[237] Crawford Young makes reference to the case the creation of a sense of tribalism that in Nigeria in the 1950s of an Ibo leader and future Secretary General of the Ibo Federal Union who had to travel through Iboland as an 'ethnic missionary' to convince the rural folk that they were Ibos, something that many of them could not comprehend (1976, p. 464).

Such are the historical and contemporary realities in the majority of countries and regions that are afflicted by chronic insecurity. The rhetoric of normatively conceived notions of 'civil society' that continue to underpin neoliberal reform initiatives and peacebuilding will for years to come fly in the face of those realities, courtesy of the preference for prescriptions that are not based on a detailed empirical study of contexts that are targeted for reform.

6.3.5. ***Unfavourable demographic profile***

The age distribution of a country's population has a bearing on the extent to which that country's political elite will be amenable to the views and preferences of the population, let alone the quality and volume of views that will issue from wider society. Uganda currently ranks lowest in the world for some of the key demographic indicators that have a bearing on the levels of popular participation in politics, namely, median age, dependence ratio and the proportion of the population above the age of 65 years of age.

With a median age of 14.9 years, Uganda has a smaller politically aware and active population than any other country in the world. Uganda compares in no way with the average of 40 years for the developed industrial countries. Up to 50.2% of the country's population are below the age of 14. The country's 'infant bulge' narrows the active political audience and thus sets limits on representative democratic institutions and processes. Uganda's 'infant bulge' sets limits on politically eligible citizens, in addition to constricting the population base from which a vibrant civil society, interest groups, political parties and other civic organisations can emerge. A low median age structurally constrains responsiveness by limiting 'voice', and autonomous political participation. More than anything else, such a demographic profile can only breed aloofness and paternalism on the part of the political class.

The minority status precludes a large proportion of the citizenry Responsiveness is a function of 'voice' and the latter is directly proportional to the median age. A young and transient population dominated by minors and dependants can only provide fertile ground for inertia and a limited impetus to decision makers to be responsive to popular preferences. Related to the low median age is a high dependence ratio of 111 dependants per 100 workers, the highest in the world. Apart from being an additional indicator of limited voice, a high dependency ratio is a reflection of limited economic potential. Responsiveness is above all else a relationship between ends and means: an agrarian country with a high dependency ratio is necessarily a country with limited economic means and major structural limitations to responsiveness.

One-size-fits-all Reformism and its Critics

7.1 Introduction

Like the Structural Adjustment Programmes (SAPs) of the 1980s, the public sector reforms of the 1990s as exemplified by SSR have attracted relentless criticism from scholars in a range of fields including economics, sociology and political science. Implied by most of the critiques is the message neatly conveyed by Matt Andrews' assertion that, most interventions '...result is a glut of square peg reforms in round-hole governments; laws that are not implemented, systems that are not used, in governments that still lack basic functionality...' (2013:228). The critics of prevailing approaches to institutional reform advance several explanations for the poor record reform initiatives in developing countries, some of them on side of the reformers and others against. The critics of reform point at the inappropriateness of the ideological assumptions and models of reform initiatives, lack of fit between reform designs and reform contexts and the imposition of one-size-fits-all models of institutional change; with the proponents citing a lack of political will on the part of the elites of countries targeted for reform, lack of buy in, lack of local ownership, among other issues. This part of the study sheds more light on the arguments on both sides of the debate, particularly building further on the arguments advanced in the Chapters Five and Six on the social and political constraints within the countries targeted for reform, to externally derived reforms.

Drawing on the writings of a selection of scholars in the fields of international development and the political economy of institutional reform in developing countries, this part of the study gives a broad-brush view of the key criticisms that have been voiced against an approach to reform that is adjudged as being one-size-fits all. The limits that the lack of clearly-spelt out aims or a coherent theory of organisational development in current approaches to public sector reform is explored. In the third section of this chapter, two forms of sensitivity are explored in conjunction with each other: The sensitivity to context

that features prominently in aid donor discourses on reform in developing countries and the sensitivity of the armed forces in countries emerging from violent conflict or those still experiencing protracted social conflict. It is argued that the disregard for the latter form of sensitivity nullifies the claims regarding context sensitivity as they are presented in institutional reform advocacy.

The chapter explores the motivations that drive the elite of developing countries to embrace externally-imposed 'best practice' reforms that they do not necessarily endorse or those that they consider to be intrusive. It argues that while the ideal motivation for undertaking reform may be technical – ostensibly aimed at the improvement of performance – the key driver in most developing country settings is gaining material and moral support and short-term legitimacy from the powerful international actors who use implementation of institutional reform as a conditionality. It is further argued that, in order to satisfy their benefactors, developing and dependent countries employ a range of strategies for going through the motions of 'implementing' reform without necessarily improving functionality. The effect of those strategies is to invalidate some of the reform proposals.

7.2 Boilerplate Reformism: The Issues

Key critics include Ha-Joon Chan (2003a, 2003b); Bill Easterly (2001), Peter Evans (2004), Merilee Grindle (2004), Eric Scheye (2006, 2010) and Matt Andrews. This is only a sample of critics who, though focusing on approaches to economic development nonetheless advance a general critique that applies equally well to other areas of development, given that the assumptions of neoliberal reform tend to span across many areas of public policy. Grindle (2004), in the same vein as Doornbos (1995, 2000, 2001) questions the utility of 'good governance' as a criterion for measuring development more generally, but specifically, its employment as an imperative to institutional reform and poverty reduction in conflict-afflicted countries. She observes that it is deeply problematic as a guide to

development and doubts whether prevailing approaches to good governance represent any sense of priority by the international development community on what needs to be done, when it needs to be done, and how it needs to be done. 'Among the governance reforms that "must be done" to encourage development', Grindle observes, 'there is little guidance about what's essential and what's not, what should come first and what should follow, what can be achieved in the short term and what can only be achieved over the longer term, what is feasible and what is not'.[238]

Grindle highlights the potential pitfalls of such an approach, which, based on her reflections, lacks basic cognizance of the reality that 'all good things cannot be pursued at once'. A typical 'good governance' reform agenda pursues concurrently virtually all aspects of the public sector, ranging from economic institutions, political processes, to decision-making structures that determine priorities among public problems and allocate resources to respond to them, to organizations that manage administrative systems and deliver goods and services to citizens, to human resources that staff government bureaucracies, to the linkages between officials and the populace across the arena of public life. The gap between expectations and realities '…can overwhelm the commitment of even the most

238 Ibid, p.526. The World Bank lists several characteristics of good governance covering institutions, laws, policies, services, and strategies for effecting reforms in those areas. From within the World Development Reports of 1997-2002/3, Grindle cites 45 indicators that developing countries were advised to pay attention to in 1997. By 2002 the number had shot to 116. Before the Highly Indebted Poor Countries (HIPCs) can receive debt relief, their governments have to produce poverty reduction strategy papers (PRSPs). PRSPs are an outline of wide-ranging commitments to extensive reforms affecting policies and institutions in all areas of public policy. They range from poverty monitoring and analysis, inequality and social welfare, monitoring and evaluation, development targets and costs, strengthening statistical systems, public spending, participation, governance, community-driven development, gender, environment, trade policy, rural and urban poverty, urban poverty, human development, social protection, health, nutrition and population, aids, debt relief, education, private sector and infrastructure, energy, transport, water and sanitation, information and communication technologies and mining. To compile the PRSP, the World Bank has produced a 467-page PRSP Sourcebook outlining the reforms to be undertaken simultaneously. To complicate matters for the HIPC which is in most cases either recovering from or experiencing severe conflict, the reforms are shared out in a number of combinations by multiple donors who have conflicting, and at times contradicting priorities. SSR too is undertaken those circumstances.

energetic reformers',[239] leading to reform overload or 'good governance overload' (United Nations, 2009:25), and eventually, 'reform fatigue' (Grindle, 2004).

While Grindle emphasizes the immediate pressures faced by developing countries, Chang's critique focuses not so much on the overwhelming volume of reforms that must be implemented concurrently, but rather the appropriateness of those reforms in light of the stage of development of the majority of the countries that are targeted for them. He argues that even at the most superficial level there is limited evidence to suggest that the policies and institutions that are currently being imposed on developing countries are those that were adopted by the developing countries when they themselves were developing, or when they were still at the same stage of development as the contemporary developing countries. The inattention to historical context by international development practitioners that Chang analyses has been termed by others as 'premature load bearing' (Pritchett, Woolcock, and Andrews, 2010:2).

Chang makes several recommendations that can be summed up in four points. First, there is pressing need for the actual facts of the historical experiences of the now developed countries (NDCs) to be made widely known; and not just for the sake of it, but to enable the developing countries to make their choices in an informed manner. Second, he suggests a radical rethink of the conditionalities that are pegged to bilateral and multilateral loans and grants to developing countries with a particular focus on the practice of portraying certain policies as 'best practice' or norms applicable to all places and for all time. Third, he notes that, as much as improvements in developing country institutions are necessary, the process should not be equated with the orthopaedic imposition of some fixed set of institutions abstracted from the recent experiences of the now developed countries. Special care has to be taken in order not to demand excessively rapid upgrading of institutions by the developing countries, especially

---

239 Ibid.

given that they already have quite developed institutions when compared to today's developed countries when they were at a comparable stage of development, and given that establishing and running new institutions is costly.

Chang's critique is levelled against an approach to international development based on the double standards of an oblique interpretation of normativity according to which the powerful players seek to universalise their own (current) practices as a canonical standard, not just to be aspired for in the medium or long term, but to be adhered to in the immediate term, however historically irrelevant they may be. The methods of work that the current generation of the elite of powerful countries find familiar are codified into 'best practice' and hawked across the globe through a process that Evans has called 'institutional monocropping', or '…the imposition of blueprints based on idealized versions of Anglo-American institutions, the applicability of which is presumed to transcend national circumstances and cultures' (2004:30).

The fashioning of blueprints – already hinted at under the discussion on the sources of normativity in the third chapter of this study – is important for the '…movement driven by international institutions, governments, consulting firms and a veritable industry of entrepreneurial academics and practitioners promoting change programs (of varying quality and integrity)' (Punch, Hoogenboom and Williamson, 2005:268); particularly because they provide a replicable reform product that is easy to specialise in to cement the movement's role in the institutional reform market (Andrews, 2013:70). The shortcomings of this approach go beyond its noticeable insensitivity to history and prevailing reality and point to the basic impracticability of current approaches to reform, a situation that has been summed up by Richard Rose in his observation that:

> There are differences in kind in the resources required by best practice programmes. A best practice social security system will cost a lot of money; a high-quality university system requires able staff as well as money; and a programme for minority rights requires the honest and effective

> administration of laws. An ample supply of laws, money and personnel is taken for granted in countries credited with best practices. But this cannot be assumed of governments in developing and especially low income countries.[240]

Andrews' (2013) critique of institutional reform draws on research and ideas about institutional logics, isomorphism and decoupling and follows the same lines as those discussed above. He argues that reforms fail because they do not fit many developing country contexts, making them appear as inordinately large square pegs forced into settings where opportunities for change resemble small round holes. He argues that many cases of reform are introduced as 'signals' and developing countries use those signals to instrumentally ensure that they attain and retain external support and legitimacy. Such reforms, he argues, are designed with limited attention to context and centre on best practice interventions that may look impressive but are hard to reproduce, or as Schick has put it, lack portability (1998:123). 'They may produce new forms (like laws) but these typically have limited functionality. Governments look better after reform but are often not better' (2013:3).

Mention has to be made also of the terms in which the principles and objectives of reform are expressed. There are terms that Gallie has referred to as 'essentially contested concepts, '…concepts the proper use of which inevitably involves endless disputes about their proper uses on the part of their users' (1956:169), similar also to what Shapiro has called 'gross concepts'. According to Shapiro, the use of gross concepts '…reduces what are actually relational claims to claims about one or another of the components of the relation' (1989:51). Shapiro demonstrates that, claims about such notions as accountability, transparency, effectiveness and efficiency as commonly referred to in the debates on institutional reform are relational. Claims about them are meaningful only if they clearly stipulate their empirical content, namely, agents, actions (and factors that enable

[240] Cited in Andrews, 2013, p.71.

or constrain them), legitimacy and ends. One can cite the example of efficiency a term that ordinarily refers to the extent to which the utilisation of a certain resource such as time, effort or treasure yields outcomes that are commensurate with the intended result. One can indeed ask of each of those terms, how efficient efficiency can possibly be; or how transparent transparency can be. The point is, without making any reference to the implied quantitative dimensions of 'efficiency', or transparency, those terms remain empty slogans. Correspondingly, a practical initiative that is couched in those terms can only remain inconsequential.

7.3 Inescapable Limits to Reformism: Hazy Mission, no Theory

Stripped to its barest essentials, SSR – and other reformist initiatives of the neoliberal agenda – is about the development, the functioning, and adaptive change of formal organisations and the institutional framework within which they exist. In the particular case of SSR, its presumed focus is the functioning, development and change of an even more highly specialised category of organisations and in exceptional circumstances. In spite of SSR's prominence as an approach to institutional change, there is little to show that in putting it together, any effort was ever invested in making it a beneficiary of existing knowledge of organisational science, as a result of which it is devoid of a theory or model of organisational development or change. Brogden's characterisation of community policing can be equally applied to SSR: '…whether as a philosophy or as a programme for implementation features not only an ahistorical rendering but also a theoretical nihilism...' (1999:169).

That latter point by Brogden brings to mind the leading American sociologist Reinhard Bendix's counsel his readers that, 'You know, a little theory goes a long way.'[241] Rather than borrow from what is known about organisational development both as a science and an art, the promoters of neoliberal institutional

[241] Quoted in Bruneau, 2011, p.7

reforms have opted for what Peake and Scheye have described as 'theoretical and generic constructs' (2005:302) or, 'truisms and boilerplate…dogma' (2010:8). In a statement that echoes Peake and Scheye, Derks has observed that much of the literature on SSR and allied approaches '…is more based on observations and intuitive assumptions than on a thorough understanding of the mechanisms underpinning these observations and assumptions' (2008:24). Those deficiencies notwithstanding, SSR and allied initiatives continue to be looked upon as major vehicles for recasting the critical institutions of countries undergoing major change and those faced with political upheaval.

The current framework for dealing with those realities relies solely on a collection of evaluative terms and moral place holders whose practical, analytical or even semantic significance is at best questionable. A survey of the policy and scholarly literature on SSR shows its principles to be, among others, 'good governance', 'transparency, accountability, efficiency and the rule of law. In line with such language, the objectives of SSR according to the OECD (2005, 2007) are, among others, establishment of effective governance, oversight and accountability in the security system, improved delivery of security and justice services, development of local leadership and ownership of the reform process, sustainability of justice and security service delivery, terms which only emphasize some idealised end state without showing clearly the path that is to be taken to reach that end state or the model for the planned change. There are several models of organisational change, each with a distinct set of assumptions about why change occurs, how that the process of change unfolds, when such change should be initiated, for how long it should be undertaken and its outcomes. While a detailed discussion of those models is beyond the scope of this study,[242] it is

[242] Van de Ven & Poole (1995) and Kezar (2001) list up to six models namely the evolutionary, which considers change to be a response to external circumstances, situational variables, and the environment faced by each organization; (2) teleological, according to which change must be always a planned, rational and linear process seen to be affecting purposeful and adaptive organizations; and that change occurs because leaders and change agents feel it is necessary (3)

necessary to point out the potential problems entailed in pursuing an ambitious reform initiative without reference to any known principles of change.

The lack of a theory of organisational development is not helped at all by the haziness of the purpose for which SSR is intended, particularly when looked at from the perspective of the composition of the so-called security sector. The very definition of the 'security sector' according to the leading advocates of SSR, such as the OECD and the Geneva Centre for the Democratic Control of Armed Forces (DCAF) only serves to jeopardize the utility of the (SSR) framework and indeed raises serious concerns on how much care and thought went into its formulation. There is the lingering contradiction between on the one hand, the rhetoric on a 'holistic' approach to security and how it is preferred to the 'state-centric militaristic' approach; and on the other hand, a definition of the 'security sector' that amounts to an endorsement of the 'state-centric' approach. While, that contradiction can be disregarded, the inclusion among the 'security sector' of the 'non-statutory security forces' but more particularly, the composition of that category puts to question the wholesomeness of the SSR framework. The DAC guidelines on SSR (OECD, 2005) and the OECD DAC handbook on SSR (OECD, 2007) list among the non-statutory security forces liberation and guerrilla armies. There is a problem with that claim, and this goes beyond the questionable

---

life cycle or developmental models share assumptions with evolutionary theories and focus mainly on the centrality of human beings in the process of organisational change, extrapolating from the changes that occur within the life cycles of people to the organizations they create; (4) the dialectical models refers directly to the Hegelian-Marxian interpretation in which organisational patterns, values, ideals and norms coexist with their polar opposite in varying strengths influencing each other and through interaction, causing change over the long term; (5) social cognition models which assume that leaders shape the change process through framing and interpretation, and how individuals within the organization interpret and make sense of change (6) cultural models are a blend the social-cognition and dialectical theories and operate on the assumption that change arises naturally as the human environment undergoes alteration, emphasizing its non-linear, irrational, non-predictable, continuous and dynamic character.

taxonomy of armed groups that seems to imply that 'liberation armies' and 'guerrilla armies' are mutually exclusive and jointly exhaustible categories.[243]

The term, 'Non-statutory' refers to formulations, processes and structures that are neither adopted through the legislative or parliamentary process, nor given a blessing by the executive branch basing on parliamentary statutes. The key term here is 'adoption' and it directly implies legality. The fact that a process or structure is non-statutory (i.e., not created by statute) does not necessarily imply that it is illegal (as guerrillas often are). One can give the example of Common Law which is also called non-statutory law. A framework that brackets together into the 'security sector', both the national armed forces and the groups that are sworn to subvert authority is a flawed framework that fails to grasp the antecedents and dynamics of the insecurity it purports to remedy. By placing national armed forces and groups that are united by the common aim of overturning governments at par, the SSR framework explicitly and unambiguously sets out to undermine the same constitutionalism that it promises to uphold, if one is to go by the rhetoric on the rule of law. Such a framework can only be suffered by governments on which it is imposed because its 'implementation' is a precondition for accessing badly-needed financial support, and not because of the positive change it professes to promote.

Other issues that arise from the problematic framing of SSR include questions to do with what it is that 'democratic governance', or 'civilian oversight' or 'good governance' of the security sector can possibly mean when the latter includes brigands, social bandits, liberation Armies and other outfits that qualify for SSR just because they happen to employ guerrilla methods. The classification of private security companies (PSCs) as non-statutory also overlooks the fact that those organisations are governed under specific legal statutes, in most cases the

[243] While being a liberation army refers to ends, being a guerrilla army relates to ends and logically, the two cannot be thought to be independent domains as most literature on SSR tends to imply.

respective police acts. Two examples of countries where SSR programmes have been implemented will suffice. In South Africa, PSCs are governed by the Private Security Industry Regulation 2001(Act 56 of 2001) while in Uganda they are regulated by the Police Act of 1949 and the Control of Private Security Organisations Regulation of 1997.

Lacking a well-worked out theory of organisational development, let alone a well-defined mission, SSR activism has instead taken on the optimism of influential organisational theorists such as Thompson (1967) who generally assume that organizations are relatively malleable and amenable to reform and that they will easily adapt to imposed, changed or altogether unfamiliar circumstances. This may be borne out of the supposition by those advocating for reform that the merits and potential benefits of their proposals for change are clear for all to see and should be obediently embraced. The source of such a sentiment may simply be superciliousness on the part of those advocating for reform or the sanguine faith in what Huntington has called the unity of goodness, summed up by the sentiment that, '...all good things go together and that the achievement of one desirable social goal aids in the achievement of others' (1968:5).

But more than any other factor, a failure to anticipate objection to reform initiatives from actors that are required to implement those changes – who will in most cases have not been part of their conception – may go a long way in explaining the lack of realism that tends to pervade many externally-influenced reforms. Hannan and Freeman's (1984) structural inertia theory offers a model of the process of organizational change that includes both internal and external constraints on organizational change. In anticipating the probability of organisational change, Hannan and Freeman have argued that organizations justify their existence by their ability to perform and if questioned, to account rationally for their actions. Ability to perform and accountability are high when organizational missions are institutionalized and patterns of organizational activity are routinized. Those same attainments that imbue organisations with stability

also generate resistance to change and strong pressures against organizational reform. Thus, it should be expected that the very characteristics that furnish organizations with stability also generate resistance to change and reduce the probability of change (Amburgey *et al.*, 1993:52).

7.4 Aid Donor Condescension: Hectoring the Turkey to Vote for Christmas

A different but equally important factor relates to the rationale, and one can even suggest, the wisdom on the part of external actors in conceiving institutional reforms in conflict-impacted countries making the reform of the armed forces an entry point. The armed forces of an acutely praetorian polity – whether in the midst of major hostilities or making a transition from major hostilities or merely prone to violence – are very central to the calculations of groups contending for political power. Outside actors seeking to reconfigure armed forces in such settings can only do so purposefully only if they are fully aware that their involvement is fraught with the dangers of jumping into the deepest end of violence-prone polities or of polities in which institutionalised political action has not yet struck firm roots. In such contexts, the armed forces are the most sensitive and most closely watched player which, in most instances tends to be located at the very pinnacle of power.

Excepting for excessive idealism, one would expect an initiative that lays claim to context-sensitivity to have such realities as a foremost consideration. One fact that cannot be disputed is, that the institutional design of the instruments of coercion is an exceptionally political process with implications not only for the stability of regimes, but in many instances also for the continued survival of countries as integrated units, in the short and long-term. It is highly questionable whether external actors whose reform initiatives target that most delicate aspect of the politics of other countries are ever mindful of the associated sensitivity.

Commenting on the lack of realism of the SSR vision embodies in the United Kingdom's 1998 Strategic Defence Review (SDR), one scholar has noted that,

> The idealism of the SDR suggests that the goal of SSR has developed in advance of sensitivity to the power structures which it must influence. For anecdotal evidence suggests that promotion of Western concepts of professionalism and accountability is undertaken in a manner that suggests it is divorced from the concerns of the …environment in which it is to operate (Hills, 2000:52).

A closer look at the environment in which SSR is pursued and the concerns it is designed to address shows that, in the overwhelming majority of cases, countries whose armed forces are considered for reform will either be in the midst of an armed conflict and civil unrest, or they will have recently come out of a period of protracted violence. The cessation of hostilities in the latter instance may have been enabled by the signing of a settlement or even a series of settlements whose specific provisions may have been shaped by the manner of termination of hostilities. As often is the cases in Sub-Saharan Africa where sub-state conflicts tend to pit communal groups against each other, settlements involve '…paying particular attention to the ethnic composition of the armed forces, not least because the potential for destabilisation is particularly acute when there is an ethnic dimension to political tensions among ex-combatants' (Berdal, 1994:54). Military forces of individual warring and former warring parties not only provide physical security for the group but are also '…the most obvious source of leverage vis-à-vis adversaries' (Knight, 2009:13). Any intervention that will threaten to upset the equilibria that derive from such bargains will either be viewed as unduly presumptuous or will be embraced very reluctantly. As Fukuyama has pointed out,

> Holding on to a certain structure of political power is often a life-and-death issue for leaders of poor countries, and no degree of external public-goods financing from the donor community will be sufficient to offset losses of power and prestige that will accompany true reform (2004:49).

There are several examples where the timing of reforms or even the choice of the target country can be questioned. In Uganda, defence-related reforms were mooted by the United Kingdom's Department for International Development and the British Development Division in East Africa (BDDEA) in November 1997 with the aim of '…identifying efficiency savings for redeployment to non-defence needs",[244] at a time when the country faced serious external threats and internal subversion, at the height of the counter-insurgency operations in the northern, north-western, western; and parts of central region. The Uganda military, the UPDF was involved in operations in neighbouring Democratic Republic of Congo and limited operations in Southern Sudan, and moreover, the operations against the Lord's Resistance Army (LRA) in the North of the country were a de facto interstate war, given that from as early as 1993, the LRA was being bankrolled by Khartoum. Throughout that period like at other times since the ascendance of the NRM to power, the Ugandan authorities were pursuing a double-pronged strategy of peace talks with insurgent groups or factions thereof that were ready to negotiate their surrender, and military operations against those that were not yet ready to give up fighting. Arguably, this may not have been the most prudent time for donors to press for institutional reform, at least from the point of view of the recipient government, particularly so while advancing reform as a precondition for the disbursement of badly-needed financial support.

Similarly in the case of Southern Sudan, following the January 2005 Comprehensive Peace Agreement (CPA) between the Government of Sudan (GoS) and the Sudan People's Liberation Army (SPLA), United Nations Mission in Sudan (UNMIS) was set up to, among other things, serve the role of guiding and

---

244 Uganda Defence Efficiency Study (UDES)—Main Study, July 1998, Annex A, Terms of Reference. Although the TORs of the exercise called it the 'Uganda Defence Expenditure Efficiency Savings Study' (UDEESS) demonstrating the purely pecuniary and non-holistic focus and motivation of 'security' reforms, it was later renamed as the title of the report shows as the Defence Efficiency Study.

supporting SSR, in addition to police training and DDR.[245] What is notable about Southern Sudan is that, at a time when it required all support that could be provided to build basic state institutions from scratch, including converting the SPLM's armed wing, the SPLA into a regular military force, it was instead being turned into a busy destination for the promoters of SSR. By June 2009, one month before declaration of Southern Sudanese independence and formal establishment of country's armed forces, the Canadian North-South Institute in conjunction with the Centre for Peace and Development Studies (CPDS) at the University of Juba and with funding from Canada's Department of Foreign Affairs and international Trade (DFAiT) was already carrying out preliminary studies on the reform of what was to be named the Southern Sudan Police Service (SSPS) even before it came into formal existence (Lokuji *et al.*, 2009). The SSPS was being targeted for reform even before it was formed. The DFID, operating within the framework of Joint Donor Team established the Peacebuilding Program for South Sudan in 2009 with budget of £5.1 million for, among other activities, SSR.[246] That same pattern of reforming structures that have hardly come into existence has been replicated in most other conflict-afflicted aid-dependent countries in Sub-Saharan Africa, casting doubts on whether the promoters of reform initiatives have any sense of conviction about their putative quest, or whether even they understand the import of their undertakings.

Even where those structures are in existence, key politico-military players are always weary of attempts especially by outsiders to tinker with the delicate balance that attends to the process constituting of those structures. The delicate balancing is always part of the process of forestalling the likelihood of security dilemmas and a likely resumption of hostilities (Salomons, 2005; Williams, 2005;

---

[245] Following the declaration of independence for Southern Sudan in July 2011, UNMIS became United Nations Mission in South Sudan (UNMISS).

[246] Joint Donor Team was set up by Canada, Denmark, Norway, Sweden, the Netherlands and the United Kingdom.

Chuter, 2006; Spear, 2006). The common approach to achieving this is by reassuring former fighting groups about the future utilization and configuration of the joint military forces with provisions for appointments to key staff and command positions and to ensure that peace settlements reflect those provisions. This may also be the case for the apportionment of offices in government departments that are allied to security, including the ministries of the interior, defence and security. What is important to observe is that those arrangements are central to overall peace and security, given that they are formulated as a means of terminating or de-escalating hostilities. As Hoddie and Hartzell have pointed out, for the all key parties to peace settlements, inclusion in strategic government positions, '…ensures they are in a position to monitor the movement of troops and warn of policy decisions that might alter the future composition or use of a state's forces to their detriment' (2005:89), an observation that re-echoes Walter Barbara view that, '…combatants in civil wars will sign and implement a peace settlement only if they are confident that their military forces will be safely consolidated and that power will be shared once they relinquish their own political and military assets' (2000:26).

The preceding views emphasize one point: In general terms, the coercive arm of the praetorian polity (particularly one that is experiencing civil strife, or one that has just emerged from a period of protracted conflict) is the razor's edge on which future peace stability balances precariously. The composition of post-conflict armed forces and the extent to which it caters for the interests of warring factions is a critical aspect of any post-conflict dispensation especially in societies that are deeply divided. It lies at the heart of the protracted and contentious horse trading which precedes the signing of peace deals and is always a crucial concern to forestall the emergence of security dilemmas, '…the single most powerful explanation for the success or failure of negotiated peace settlements' (King, 1977:73). Although that fact is generally acknowledged, it is doubtful whether it ever receives consideration in the planning of externally-inspired

downsizing and radical reconfiguration of the armed forces, reducing all reference to context-sensitivity as a principle of SSR into mere lip service.

Considering SSR's potential for unhinging delicate settlements at the centre of the reconstitution of the 'security sector', it ought not to be surprising at all that local actors should have neither political will nor inclination to own externally-conceived programmes that work against their own basic interests in upholding peace. The triteness of the charge of 'lack of political will' against aid-dependent countries that for all sorts of reasons fail to take on board donor policy proposals has been neatly summed up by Grindle and Thomas in their observation that, political will is:

> [A]n explanation usually expounded by external analysts and donors who see countries not carrying out reforms they consider desirable. In the absence of detailed knowledge about what goes on within another government and a capacity to analyse the decision process, lack of political will becomes a catch-all culprit, even though the term has little analytic content and its very vagueness expresses the lack of knowledge of specific detail (1991:124).

Within the 'post conflict' context, what remains intriguing and probably worth investigating is what it is in the psyche of outside actors that makes them ever wonder that local actors should lack 'ownership', or that local actors should be devoid of the 'political will' to implement programmes that will, if successfully executed, precipitate a reversion to hostilities, or a relapse to the uncertainties of the period preceding the agreement or agreements for cessation of hostilities.

Public Finance Management (PFM) is often cited as a key justification for reforming security institutions (Ball and Holmes, 2003: iv; IMF, 2007). The IMF and the World Bank are insistent on fiscal data transparency requiring that military expenditure be included under the PEM framework. The IMF for instance adopted a 'Code of Good Practices on Fiscal Transparency' to cover all sectors of government (IMF, 2007) requiring that governments publish a broad range of

fiscal data on their spending. As such, what PFM achieves is indicative of the success or failure SSR in terms of general compliance to 'existing good international practices' (PEFA, 2006:5). What continues to intrigue observers is the persistent gap between laws, regulations and other outputs of reform initiatives and practice. Uganda is credited with the best anticorruption laws in the world, in recognition of which the think tank, Global Integrity rates the laws at 99 out of a possible 100 points, while the Transparency International (TI) Corruption perception Index places Uganda at 130th out of 174 countries (Berlin: Transparency International). 'What you see from reforms, in the form of new laws and agencies' writes Andrews, 'is not what you get in practice' (2013: 110).

7.5 The Amnesia of Conservative Reformism: Institutions and Habits as Living Histories

A reflection on the many factors that weigh heavily against the uptake and successful implementation of donor-driven public policy reforms remains incomplete if , like SSR has done, it overlooks the question of the credibility and moral mandate of some of the Western countries that are key promoters of those reforms, particularly in light of the historical role of some of those countries in systematically entrenching practices that are closely associated with the dysfunction that the reforms are intended to remedy. Nowhere else in the public sphere of post-colonial Sub-Saharan Africa have the legacies of pre-independence practices tended to be as visible as they have been in the 'security sector'.

Noticeably, the academic and policy discourse on reform of the 'security sector' has remained silent on the historical roots of its contemporary practices and traditions. Equally noticeable is the manner in which the framing of initiatives for reforming the 'security sector' has characteristically tended to disregard or even discount those historical factors, thereby failing to acknowledge the true extent of the crisis that the reforms are intended to address. The picture that emerges is that of a major 'credibility gap' at the heart of the reform initiatives, affecting the

standing of key donor countries that present themselves as the embodiment of morally framed reform drive, yet, seemingly disowning their historical role in consciously entrenching doctrines and institutional arrangements that have spawned the dysfunction that abounds in many post-colonial polities.

We argue above that as much as there may be some merit in making general reference to such terms as transparency, accountability and efficiency, not much sense can be made of them without grasping their purely relational nature, therefore requiring that they be situated within the specific milieus of the countries to which they are being applied. But, demanding of a prescriptive initiative to base its insights on context, whether contemporary or historical, may be asking for too much: The disregard for context in preference for familiar ideals is the defining trait of normative approaches. When SSR policy practitioners finally elect to disabuse themselves of the proclivity to merely prescribe, they will learn that it is not be feasible to gain understanding on the characteristics of the armed forces of many former colonies without acknowledging at the outset their origins as instruments of occupation whose primary task was internal security and pacification; and not the protection of borders or citizens or acquisition of territory. The founding operational concept of the colonial military forces was structured around the 'punitive expedition' and this has tended to remain dominant feature of the operational methods of post-colonial military forces, a fact that Gutteridge captures well in his assessment of the '…unpredictable ways in which decisions taken to suit imperial purposes have contributed to the post-independence situation' (1969:3).

In recognition of the significance of historical factors, World Bank guidelines on pre-reform evaluations rightly stress that,

> Country context analysis is important because policy reform does not take place in an historical vacuum but takes place in a particular context. Understanding country context better means investigating the inherited and

> evolving mix of….variables that influence policy agendas and change (2007:33).

Regarding the reforms that target certain key sectors, the guidelines further suggest that, '[t]hose carrying out the analysis must also thoroughly understand the reform and the recent history in the sector.'[247] Contrary to the approach that those observations would seem suggest, one instead notices a general preference for preconceived prescriptions that are in most cases not premised on an empirical assessment which if carried out, would necessarily account for the path taken by countries, regions or even institutions to get to a state that calls for reform, if indeed such reform is called for at all; or if a more radical intervention than mere reform is what may be required. In spite of Kofi Annan's exhortations to Sub-Saharan political elites not to blame colonialism,[248] the fact remains that '…pre-independence policies and patterns set the framework for developments well into the period of independence' (Horowitz, 1985:445).

Colonial policies of interest would specifically have to include differential ethnic recruitment that either privileged the so-called 'martial tribes' or 'martial races', the recruitment of groups that were either deemed to be backward or geographically remote from the political or economic heartland of respective colonies; related to which was the enlistment of aliens that had no sentimental connection to the colony where they were assigned and the deliberate setting apart of armed forces apart from the general populace. A detailed treatment of these phenomena is beyond the scope of this study but acknowledgement can still be made of the insights of among others, Driel-Murray (2003); Gutteridge (1969); Hansen (1977); Horowitz (1985); Killingray & Plaut (2010); Lewis (1969); Luckham (1974), Lwanga-Lunyiigo (1988) Parsons (1999) and Welch (1967, 1970). The lesson that one derives from those writers is that of the significance of historical

247 Ibid, p.165.

248 Barbara Crossette 'Stop Blaming Colonialism, U.N. Chief Tells Africa', New York times, April 17, 1998

precedents on contemporary practices. The foremost consideration in crafting credible initiatives for the recasting of the 'security sector' in much of Sub-Saharan Africa is a point that has been aptly expressed by Horowitz in his observation that, '…because individual careers may span twenty or thirty years, the composition of a government body is difficult to change without taking drastic, irregular, and sometimes provocative steps' (1985:445). What one has to question is whether in respect of the armed forces, neoliberal reformism as epitomised by SSR measures up to the steps alluded to by Horowitz.

7.6 Isomorphism vs. Enhanced Functionality

Ashworth, Boyne and Delbridge (2007) have identified two opposing sets of factors that motivate organisational and institutional reform. The first consists of 'rational' or 'technical' motivations according to which reform is undertaken in order to enhance efficiency and effectiveness, however defined. Change may be necessitated by the need to respond to crisis, to plug performance gaps arising from shortfalls in the organisation's ability to meet its objectives, to match objectives and practices to new or emerging technologies, to exploit other new opportunities or to respond to new threats.[249]

It is such justifications for change that one commonly encounters in the literature on public management and organizational development. According to that view, new rules are needed to ensure continued or improved functionality (Andrews, 2013:69). Multilateral and bilateral development agencies including the World Bank, the European Union and the OECD tend to emphasise the technical view in noting that public sector reforms should focus on '…introducing merit-based civil service and performance-oriented public management, agency by agency…', this being the objective of so-called second-generation reforms that emphasize '…institutional development to promote better service delivery, policy

[249] Change may also be pursued just for the sake of change, particularly when there are major changes in the national political leadership, or it may be pursued simply because it sounds good.

quality and responsiveness, and accountability' (World Bank, 2000: 41). The technical approach assumes that '…innovations are prompted by disparities between existing conditions and preferred states' (Dull, 2006:190).

The second set of motivations for organisational change is summed up by the alternative explanation mainly associated with the institutional theorists. Unlike theories that seek to explain social processes basing on normative and rational actor models, institutional theory takes a supra-individual focus and attempts to shed light on the process and mechanisms by which structures, schemas, rules, and routines become established as authoritative guidelines for social behaviour. It seeks further to develop understanding on how those elements emerge, how they become widespread, and the role they play in supplying stability and meaning to social behaviour; and how such arrangements go into decline and pass out of existence; and how their negators and remnants shape successor structures (Scott, 2004).

Institutional theory suggests that, the primary objective of organizational change is not always the need to better substantive performance, but to seek greater legitimacy. Using the example of adaptation and change in the security arena, the institutional theorists would go beyond the explanations such as those offered by Waltz (1979) or Taliaferro, (2006) or Horowitz (2006) that attribute the diffusion of a particular military model to the existence of a universal security imperative that may be common to the emulating country and the archetype; or a power contest in an anarchical international system. The institutional theorists specifically contend that the original impetus by organisations to develop along the pattern of Weberian bureaucratisation premised on '…[p]recision, speed, unambiguity, knowledge of the files, continuity, discretion, unity, strict subordination, reduction of friction and material and personal costs…' (1978:973) has long fizzled out. In modern times, so they claim, public and private sector organisations do not become more rational and bureaucratic because of competition or functional need but rather, they are driven by mimicry. By doing

so, '…organizations adapt their internal characteristics in order to conform to the expectations of the key stakeholders in their environment' (Ashworth *et al.*, 2007:167). This, we contend, is the predominant pattern of externally-inspired institutional change that continues to inform neoliberal reform initiatives in developing and transitional countries.

Borrowing from the biophysical world, Hannan and Freeman (1977), Aldrich (1979) and DiMaggio and Powell (1983), have called this phenomenon 'isomorphism', describing it as a process of conformity in which organizational change is sought not to better substantive performance, but for the purpose of attaining greater legitimacy and acceptability. The conforming agent is partially or wholly dependent on the external environment for political support and resources and is uncertain about internal means and ends. It is under such circumstances that professional or quasi-professional groups anointed or appointed by benefactors and patrons of the entity targeted for reform will propose certain processes, practices and norms as best practice to be complied with mainly as a precondition for receiving financial support from bilateral and multilateral donors and lenders (Andrews: 2013:70). As Frumkin and Galaskiewicz have put the point, [o]rganizations do not always embrace strategies, structures, and processes that enhance their performance but, instead, react to and seek ways to accommodate pressures following external scrutiny and regulation' (2004:285).

Isomorphism centres around the influence of 'best practices' on the choices of dependent organizations in addition to the urge by such organizations to emulate forms and practices that appear desirable or accepted, though without necessarily developing the corresponding functionality; and in some instances there may never be the likelihood of developing such functionality. Andrews' rough sketch of the immediate factors that necessitate conformity mirrors the three forms of isomorphism identified by DiMaggio and Powell (1983:150), namely:

- coercive isomorphism, originating from the problem of political influence and the problem of legitimacy;
- mimetic isomorphism resulting from standard responses to uncertainty;
- normative isomorphism, associated with professionalization

Coercive isomorphism involves the use by one organisation of legal and political means or control of access to resources to exert influence over another and to pressure it to adopt preferred practices, structures or institutions.

Mimetic forces are pressures to copy or emulate other organizations' activities, systems, or structures. Innovations that are deemed to enhance legitimacy are seen as desirable, especially under conditions of uncertainty where actors cannot be sure of the relationship between organizational means and ends. Ashworth *et al*. define mimetic pressures toward isomorphism as '…pressures to copy or emulate other organizations' activities, systems, or structures' (2007:167). Such copying may be undertaken without any clear evidence of performance improvements. Mimetic forces explain the widespread adoption of management practices for which there is little empirical evidence of performance benefits or fit, but just an act of following of fads and fashions (Abrahamson 1996). An example of this is the common practice of donor-supervised restructuring of military forces for land-locked countries that produces new orders of battle that include a naval infantry or marine force. A case in point is the United Kingdom government driven defence review in Uganda in the early 2000's. Mimicry in the Uganda Defence Review went beyond the adoption of an inappropriate organisational structure, to production of Defence Policy by cut-and-paste from sections of the New Zealand Government Defence Policy Framework.

Normative isomorphism relates to the pressure exerted by communities of professionals or other externally legitimated groups on thinking about what

structures or practices are better than others (Andrews, 2013:69). It related to the ways in which organizations are expected to conform to standards of professionalism and to adopt systems, structures and techniques considered to be legitimate by relevant professional groupings, even when the drivers of the dysfunction that institutional reform is supposed to remedy may have little to do with whether or not the new standards are followed.

7.7 Decoupling: Reform-Busting and Neutralization of Isomorphic Pressure

To counteract what they consider to be intrusive outside influences, organizations and governments that depend on external resources and legitimacy adopt a range of strategies to uphold their autonomy. Even when attempts are made to anticipate these strategies, the linear model of implementation that permeates most externally-inspired reforms in post-conflict countries shuts out the likelihood of advance countermeasures. The linear model assumes that once a proposal for reform is put to a resource-dependent government, its adoption and implementation is automatic, the thin veil of the rhetoric on participatory approaches, local buy-in and ownership notwithstanding.

'All too often' Grindle and Thomas have observed, 'implementation is thought to be a matter of carrying out that which has been decided upon, and successful implementation is viewed as a question of whether or not the implementing institution is strong enough for the task' (1991:122). Unsuccessful implementation of institutional reform is explained away tautologically in terms of the need to strengthen institutional capacity as a prerequisite for effective institutional reform; or it is attributed to lack of political will. There appears never to be any need to anticipate possible rejection of, or methodical resistance to reform proposals over the long term. An analysis of the obstacles and limitations of reform has therefore to explore the responses of governments and organisations to pressures for reform and for conformity.

Organisations and governments in the developing world will most times enthusiastically accede to reform proposals and this is just as well given that it is always what is required of them by the actors promoting such reforms. Matt Andrews uses the term 'reform as signals' to sum up the manner in which reform proposals are dispensed by external actors and embraced by countries that rely on outside support. He observes that externally influenced institutional reforms are often adopted as hurried signals to assuage external demands with the aim of gaining short-term support, and not as long-term solutions to real problems (2013). The behaviour of resource dependent countries in face of those pressures remains understudied. Available insights into organisational conformity to external pressure have only come from theory and research on institutionalisation, more particularly from institutional theory.

To sideline the proposals for reform from outsiders, dependent governments may delink the symbolically adopted policies and structures from internal operating processes and actual organisational practices through a process that institutional theorists have called 'decoupling' (Meyer & Rowan, 1977). In the face of pressures to adopt particular polices or procedures, decoupling allows aid dependent organizations and governments '…to signal compliance symbolically without changing their practices substantively (Scott, 2008: 171). By means of decoupling the formal from the actual, actors maintain their latitude by warding off the intrusions of outsiders with whom they find themselves compelled to interact, while at the same time being able to access the tangible and intangible resources they need from those outsiders. Decoupling is a strategy of choice particularly because of the potential normlessness and institutional disorientation that is bound to be a corollary of isomorphic compliance to the demands of multiple donors. Because they end up being targets of reform initiatives by a multiplicity of donors, '…organizations in search of external support and stability incorporate all sorts of incompatible structural elements' (Meyer and Rowan, 1977:356). Incompatibility may go beyond structures as Meyer and Rowan point out, to encompass other

aspects organisational doctrine and even ideological orientation. Conflict-prone countries in Sub-Saharan Africa that are targeted for reform often host multiple delegations of training teams and evaluators from the foreign governments and international organisations involved in reconstruction; and often, as Melmot has remarked, '…engaged in sterile competition' (2009:25).

In the case of the military and police, trainers from different donor countries provide equipment and deliver instruction according to their own native doctrines independent of their peers. Just as an example, the Democratic Republic of Congo (DRC) is host to at least a dozen training arrangements for the same military and police force (Melmot, 2009:17). The trainers' concepts and equipment may be incompatible and doctrines may conflict or even be irrelevant to the needs of the host country. The resulting work processes may not reflect formal structure or the institutional environment and there may even be evidence of unresponsiveness. The extreme form of delinking of structures is partly manifested by the kind of incoherence which among others, Melmot has taken note of in DRC by observing that,

> This lack of coherence stems partly from the security structures which do not make up a system, in the DRC or elsewhere. These structures are hardly linked, and are hostile to any attempts at coordination. They are marked by loyalties and animosities which are multiple and complex.[250]

In part, that problem stems from what Melmot further identifies as incoherence among the reformers and a self-sustained confusion in which '…bilateral initiatives run alongside trilateral initiatives, within multilateral initiatives, none of which are exclusive.'[251]

The organisations and governments that are targeted by a deluge of initiatives as those that one witnesses in the DRC circumvent the resulting

250 Ibid, p.22
251 Ibid.

dysfunction by letting the external reformers carry on with their pet projects, allowing them photo opportunities as they inaugurate the disparate and hard-to-amalgamate units that they have trained. In the meantime, the military and political authorities of the host country proceed to constitute parallel units, such as party militias, presidential guards '…and other praetorian services' (Bagayoko, 2010:26) which are eventually trusted to do the actual work. Since, as pointed out earlier, a typical 'post-conflict' country that is implementing SSR will also be implementing a multiplicity of other concurrent reforms, decoupling will turn out to be a government-wide phenomenon characterising a public sector wherein:

> Parliaments, parties, a military apparatus and other national institutions may well exist, but they cannot get their decisions implemented or are simply ignored. They only have to do with part of the total function, the remainder being handled via other structures (Hansen, 1977:14).

Research on organisational change shows that within the functional matrix of organisations, routine operating processes and structures as opposed to culture and strategy and deeper values will tend to be susceptible to change. Other analysts within the institutional theory tradition have named the two aspects differently. Pinnington and Morris have called culture and strategy the underlying 'interpretive scheme' (2003), while Hannan and Freeman (1984) have used the terms 'core' and 'periphery' to refer to the routine processes and the interpretive scheme respectively. Nevertheless, they all in agreement that while the periphery is susceptible to environmental pressure for change, the core is not.

Towards an Alternative View of the Security-Development Nexus

The diverse conceptions of security that underpin the SSR framework outlined in Chapter Three already point us in the direction of what we intend to focus on in this part of the study. It is suggested here that, the general thinking behind much of the scholarly and policy commentary on the security and development challenges of those countries that emerged on the international scene after World War II – many of which are in the Third World – is based on the problematic assumption that the process that gave rise to those countries enshrined them with the attributes of what we are accustomed to calling nations, states or national states. We argue that the countries of Sub-Saharan Africa are devoid of those attributes; and not because they are not trying, but mainly because the extremely brief tenure of their existence rules out even the remotest possibility that they could be in possession of those attributes. False ascription of those attributes obscures the critical deficiencies in the capabilities of those countries and their structures; as well as denying them the opportunity of being evaluated objectively on their own terms and on the basis of their actual development needs. It is suggested that the fundamental source of insecurity that those countries continue to experience lies with the inappropriate criteria that are used to evaluate their capabilities.

In this final section of the study we propose an alternative conceptualisation of that insecurity as a way of accounting for the reality of those countries that typically presents with the challenges whose remedy is deemed to lie with interventions such as SSR. We advance three principal claims to frame our general argument:

- The insecurity that continues to plague Sub-Saharan Africa is largely related to the on-going processes of national differentiation and consolidation and

state making in the sub region's countries, many of them hardly two generations old.

- The history of other regions of the world demonstrates and as the recent history of Sub-Saharan Africa already has so far shown, the processes of nation building and state making are not only long-drawn out, but are by their very nature also fraught with instability and conflict, a fact that the pacifism and pseudo-liberalism of mainstream development thinking seems not be well disposed to acknowledge.
- The general thinking of a significant proportion of academics, commentators and practitioners in the field of international development continues to take the statehood and nationhood of Sub-Saharan African countries as a given. That erroneous thinking not only goes against the grain of the need to focus on nurturing and supporting the mentioned critical processes underway in the countries in question; but worse still, it diverts all analytical and policy energy into the razzle-dazzle of passing self-righteous value judgments by way of demonstrably inappropriate yardsticks.

8.1 Introduction: The Overlooked Political Content of the Security Predicament

In our search for an alternative concept of Third World security, an attempt is made to revisit the earlier debates in comparative politics and on the political economy of development that focussed on the socio-historical processes that underpin the emergence of nations and states, for, as Ayoob (1984, 1991, 1992, 1994) and Azar and Moon (1988) among other writers have argued, the Third World security predicament is neither primarily of a military nature nor does it necessarily derive from threats from outside the borders of affected polities. A security concept that focuses exclusively on military capabilities and external threats is right at the outset beside the point in countries '…where the legitimacy of states and regimes is constantly challenged, and where demands for economic

redistribution and political participation perennially outrun state capacities and create major overloads on political systems' (Ayoob, 1994:16). The focus, therefore, has to be on the variables that lie at the heart of the 'overloads on the political systems', which the prevailing frameworks of security studies have tended to neglect. The disregard for political variables has impoverished the approach to security studies being questioned by this study.

By not giving due consideration to the deeper processes and phenomena that constitute the content of development, the conception of security under scrutiny becomes deficient on the grounds of narrowing the focus of development mainly on concerns of increased economic output; conceptualising the state in a manner that not only reduces it to some of its components; and taking for granted the existence of states with political communities sharing a common solidarity.

The first deficiency, namely the conflation of development with the increased economic output comes in many guises but the questions that Seers sets out in his often-cited essay on the meaning of development and what ought to be considered as critical criteria for the assessment of a country's development help to shed light on the problem. In spite of the caution in his opening remarks against what he calls the slipshod tendency to confuse development with economic development and the latter with economic growth, he nevertheless goes on to set the parameters for development in terms that contradict his counsel by noting that,

> The questions to ask about a country's development are therefore: What has been happening to poverty? What has been happening to unemployment? What has been happening to inequality? If all three of these have declined from high to low levels, then beyond doubt this has been a period of development for the country concerned (1972:124).

In pursuit of that notion of development, the United Nations, by a resolution, dubbed the 1960s and 1970s the 'Development Decades'.[252] Development was conceived in terms of attainment of 5 percent annual growth rate of gross national product (GNP) in the underdeveloped countries. It would seem that at some stage in the intellectual evolution of the field of development studies, '...particular trends in the social sciences inhibited explicit concern about political, as distinct from economic, development' (Pye, 1965:1). However, the boosting of economic output is just one of several key questions to be addressed in thinking about development. Indeed, it is not even the primary one. As Organski has observed,

> [W]ithout stability of rule, effectiveness of government, and unity of purpose developed nations take for granted, economic advance is sure to be a halting matter, especially in an age when government does so much to push and guide the course of economic change (1965:20).

Yet, even if economic development had been receiving its full share of attention, it would only be a necessary and not a sufficient condition for overall development. When all development is subsumed under the rubric of economic growth and when, worse still, economic growth is conflated with economic development then our understanding of security both as a practical goal and as an area of intellectual endeavour is bound to remain questionable.

The foregoing observation has to be emphasized given that SSR has remained subordinated to the need '...to create the necessary stability and governance conditions required for sustainable growth and development' (OECD/DAC, 2005:47). Looked at from the perspective of International Financial Institutions (IFIs) which maintain a leading role in institutional reform in the less

---

[252]United Nations General Assembly Resolution 1710 of 19th December 1961 designated the 1960s as a 'Development Decade' in which member states were called upon '...to sustain support for their efforts to mobilise and to sustain support and measures required on the part of the developed and developing countries to accelerate progress towards self-sustaining growth of the economy of the individual nations and their social advancement so as to attain in each underdeveloped country a substantial increase in the rate of growth, with each country setting its own target, taking as the objective a minimum rate of growth of aggregate national income of 5 per cent at the end of the Decade...' A similar development philosophy was to be pursued through the 1970s and the 1980s.

developed countries, SSR is '...less a consequence of their direct involvement in security sector reform than of their support for macroeconomic stabilisation measures' (Hendrickson, 1999:37). Arguably, the tendency of liberal political economy to conflate the development of Third World countries with increased economic output and the restricted focus on industrialisation, urbanisation and increased levels of consumption misses the point of what development is all about. Regarding those countries, Huntington has observed that,

> They suffer real shortages of food, literacy, education, wealth, income, health, and productivity…. Beyond and behind these shortages, there is a greater shortage: a shortage of political community and of effective, authoritative, legitimate government' (Huntington, 1968:2).

Economic growth – or even economic development – may redress the former shortages; however, the latter more fundamental ones are addressed by political development, '...the historical process by which nation-states ...have developed over time' (Verba, 1971:283). Important as it is as a key aspect of social transformation, it remains overshadowed by concerns of economic growth that partly informs SSR and allied reforms.

It is also noticeable from the prevailing framework of security studies that there are strenuous attempts by some analysts to create a distinction between av notion of security that is '…militaristic, state centric and gendered…' as Kayode and Musah have characterised the approaches of the Cold War era; and the one that '…sees the human person, rather than the state, as the beneficiary of security.' (1999:227). As already pointed out, this particular view of security which seeks to deemphasize the state and to place the 'human person' on the pedestal is conceptually flawed, a typical case of what Gilbert Ryle (1990) has called a 'category mistake'. States per se do not stand for anything if there are no people. The state is a historically specific form of social organisation in which a population occupying a certain territory is presided over by a political authority that claims sovereignty. By definition, the population is a subset of the state. The desire to

propagate a dogmatic form of individualism tends to disregard that fact as evidenced by the common references to 'state-centric' as opposed 'human-centric' security. That quasi-liberal notion of the state informs the prevailing discourse on peace, security, conflict and development as commonly articulated by elements of the international development establishment, such as in the World Bank and the United Nations.

The thinking behind rolling back the state, as embodied in debates about 'state-centric' security is grievously at odds with what stands out as the pressing need of many conflicted-afflicted countries: state making. The view of the overblown state derives from the historical experience of the developed countries where indeed the state is a fully developed institutional arrangement with the capacity to penetrate all aspects of the life of its citizens. This is the idea of the state that colours the general perspective on the state the world over, even when there is a simultaneous discourse on 'collapsing states', 'ungoverned spaces', 'weak states', 'fragile states' and other references that if anything, only call for strengthening, or to borrow from Evans *et al.* (1985), 'bringing the state back in', and not rolling it back.

The characteristically fleeting attention paid to such issues – of which the foregoing observations can only be a modest sample – may account for the endless terminological and conceptual flux in the discourse on development, to cope with both to emerging concerns and to new perspectives on recurrent concerns. Pye has summed up the problem aptly and one can only do justice to his insight by quoting him lengthily. He has prefaced one of his many exposes on political development by observing that,

> The language of public policy is always in flux, for new concerns produce new terminologies. Yet in the language of politics, in which sloganeering is the common currency of presumed dialogues, fluency in innovation rarely signals advancement in thought. At times fresh terms herald the awareness of novel problems, but more often they indicate merely frustration with intractable circumstance. When the language of politics seeks to define in

> broadest terms the contemporary human condition, it tends to be sensitive mainly to the emotions of hope, anxiety, or frustration which are inherent in the mind's erratic ability to either race ahead or fall far behind the tempo of substantive change. The political analyst in seeking the neutral ground of the observer inevitably faces the dilemma of being able neither to ignore popular terminology nor to use it as the hard currency of disciplined intellectual exchange (1965:2).

Pye's principal concern here is the semantic incoherence that characterises the discourse on the plight of the countries that are afflicted by intractable conflict and stagnation. He correctly identifies that incoherence as a deluge of terms some of which are '…the pompous pretensions of calculating politicians…others are merely the euphemisms of people who think that they may be talking about delicate matters.'[253]

It is not hard to notice that for much of the last four decades, most of the terminology and arguments that have gained currency in on-going debates on security and development are mainly gleaned from the bureaucrats of the United Nations bodies, Bretton Woods' institutions and politicians. It remains a fact that ever since the advent of so-called structural adjustment programming in the 1980s, scholars specialising in development lost the initiative in concept formation. By not readying themselves for the demands of the drastic changes on the international scene over the five decades that followed the end of World War II, scholars – the natural custodians of orderly thought and communication – turned themselves into bouncing boards of the clichés of politicians and bureaucrats. As already noted, when the scholarly community gets sucked into such a crucial debate as the one on development in the new states of the Third World, but with exclusive focus on economic growth, they are making nothing but a false start. It was never going to be conceivable to successfully establish functional national economies, or where they already existed, to imbue them with dynamism and self-sustenance without paying close attention to the role that broader political and social conditions were bound to play in impeding or facilitating economic

253 Ibid

transformation. By being subordinated to the purposes of narrow economic calculations, the discourse on SSR is rendered incapable of generating insights that can shape the broader debate on security and development.

8.2 Thinking security 'outside the box': state of the debate

It is not being claimed here that the criteria set out in the framework being proposed are in any way new or even exhaustive. Several analysts have already commented extensively on the extent to which the level of socio-political development of the countries of the Third World and the expectations set for them by the international system goes a long way in explaining much of the insecurity that those countries continue to experience. In their description of Third World countries as quasi-states, Jackson (1987, 1990, and 1992) and Jackson and Rosberg (1982, 1986) have pointed out the discrepancy between their juridical and their empirical statehood (1982, 1987 and 1990). They argue that many of the states that emerged on the international scene after 1945 are 'quasi-states' devoid of the physical capability, institutional authority and functional capacity to hold their own as states and to ensure their own survival. Despite their lack of the basic attributes of statehood, their existence continues to be guaranteed by collective agreements and behaviour patterns of the world community of states, especially the United Nations, in what has marked a reversal of the historical pattern in which states received recognition from without on the basis of their empirical capabilities. Referring specifically to Sub-Saharan African States, Jackson and Rosberg have argued that those cannot claim sovereignty by a demonstration of inescapable reality. 'Their sovereignty derives far more from right than from fact.' (1986:2).

Ayoob's extensive writings on the 'security predicament' and '…the pervasiveness of insecurity' in Third World countries dwell mainly on their lack of unconditional legitimacy as physical political entities as defined by colonial boundary making, as well as their internal structures and regimes. He reflects on the intractability of the insecurity in relation to the history and the process of state

making and the manner in which the pre-existing system of states has impinged on that process. Echoing the views of Jackson and Rosberg, Ayoob argues that an international normative order that assures inalienability of juridical sovereignty once achieved is responsible for the sustenance of otherwise unviable entities which in an era when empirical sovereignty was the primary criterion of recognition would not have been allowed, or been able to survive. 'Since states, once established, have an open-ended guarantee on the part of the international system that their legal existence is assured' Ayoob observes, 'the traumas that they suffer in the process of translating juridical statehood into empirical statehood take on a garb of challenges to their security rather than threats to their existence' (1991:77).

Like Ayoob, Edward Azar and Chung-in-Moon (1988) highlight the question of state making by emphasizing the domestic political dimensions of Third World security, basing on three criteria: the security environment; hardware and software. By the security environment they mean the external threat and alliance pattern while hardware refers to the physical capabilities, strategic doctrine, the arming and organisations of the armed forces. In contrast to the security environment and the hardware, software refers to political legitimacy, socio-political integration and overall policy capacity of the political systems. They argue that the preoccupation by traditional approaches with the security environment and hardware side obscures the full dynamics of the security of Third World countries particularly its software side characterised by tenuous political legitimacy, disarticulated communal groups and inchoate policy formulation capacity and overall, and incomplete nation-building. All these crucial parameters are taken for granted by traditional approaches. By reducing the security predicament of Sub-Saharan Africa to the bread-or-butter logic, SSR arguably follows the traditional pattern of security analysis that focuses on external/military threats, claims to its being holistic notwithstanding. As Thomas observes,

> [S]ecurity in the context of the Third World states does not simply refer to the military dimension, as it is often assumed in Western discussions of the concept, but to the whole range of dimensions of a state's existence which are already taken care of in the more developed states especially those in the West (1987:1).

8.3 The Critical Twin Variables: Nation Building and State Making

The passage of time has not done much to diminish the import Karl Deutsch's words to the effect that,

> [T]he making and breaking of nations is a process that is now occurring in most parts of the world and it is a process which must be studied in its general and uniform aspects, especially if the unique features of each country and epoch are eventually to be understood better than they have been so far (1963:2).

The major challenge for those countries which in modern times remain low on the scale of nationhood and statehood is having to live side-by-side with the more 'mature' states which enjoyed the luxury of dealing with the major crises of political development over a period ranging from four centuries, according to Tilly (1975b), to seven centuries, according to Strayer (1970). There have been many attempts to map out the process of nation building and an overview of the schools of thought that have emerged from the debate is in order to shed light on the content of the process. Even in outline form, it is evident that in spite of the prevailing loose employment of the term,[254] it has been the subject of longstanding debate; and it is underpinned by a body of elaborate theory that in recent times has been eclipsed by the short-term and quick fix approaches that fall under the general heading of peacebuilding. The more common schools of thought of nation building include the developmental, functional, historical and sequence and stage theories.

---

[254] Recent examples of loose references to nation building include Dobbins et al (2003), Dobbins et al (2007), Fukuyama (2004, 2006) and Watson (2004).

8.3.1. ***Developmental, functional and historical theories***

Developmental theories of nation building stand out as the main alternative to stage, trajectory and sequence models by identifying interdependences or other relationships between a spectrum of changes without necessarily deriving from them regularities, paths or priorities. An oft-cited example is the interdependence between a specialised governmental staff and a strong executive without laying out a sequence in which they appear (Fischer and Lundgren, 1975). Cutright (1963, 1965) and Parsons (1971) stand out among the developmental scholars who emphasize interdependence. Basing on that approach, Cutright has concluded that '...national political, economic, and social systems are interdependent. Changes in the complexity of organisation in one sphere are followed by changes in organisation in other areas' (1965:548). As Tilly demonstrates,[255] the major limitation of that approach is that it takes the existence of nations for granted and mere focusing on factors that determine their durability, strength and effectiveness, in addition to situating most analysis in the era of industrialism.

Functional theories, like developmental theories do not posit stages or sequences, their difference being that that the former gives an outline of the requisites for the existence national states thereby not taking the existence of nation states as a given. In Tilly's view, functional and developmental theories differ 'mainly by subtraction: they do not propose any standard stages, sequences or trajectories but they state what must be present if a nation state is to exist'.[256] Functional theories include the views of anthropologists like Fried (1967),[257] whose thesis dwells mainly on linkage between the degree and type of political organisation of society and the system of stratification, a line that is also pursued

[255]Ibid, p. 912
[256] Ibid, p.621
[257] Ibid

farther by Lenski (1966)[258] who makes comparisons between nation building in agrarian and industrial set ups. Functionalism makes extensive use of cross-sectional comparisons which by their nature are logically inappropriate for the task of analysing change over a long period of time. They are inherently static and unable to account for social change and evolution, diffusion of political forms across social systems. This is indeed evident Lenski's work in which he ascribes historical finality and a self-contained status to the modes of productions – industrial and agrarian modes of production – at the heart of his study. James Rosenau explores how societies adapt to a changing world environment; [259] and within the general limitations of the functionalist approach he employs, he successfully sheds light on the interdependence of national and international affairs, thereby introducing international relations perspectives (1970). By concentrating on existing states, functional comparisons are unable to show how states emerge where none existed before. It is questionable, as Tilly claims, that they can shed much light on the variable strength, durability, effectiveness and responsiveness of existing states.

Historical theories include those of Bendix (1964) who sketches the transformation of the countries of Western Europe from estate societies of the Middle Ages through the absolutist regimes of the eighteenth century to the elective democracies in the nation states of the twentieth century.

8.3.2. ***Sequence and stage schemes of nation building***

A range of analysts have described political development using sequence and stage theories. Prominent among these are Black, Organski and Rustow. For our current purposes, we shall focus on the former two. Organski (1965) spells out what he calls the four stages of political development consisting of (1) the politics of primitive unification; (2) the politics of industrialisation (3) the politics of

---

[258] Ibid, p. 622.
[259] Ibid

national welfare (4) the politics of abundance. According to this scheme, the first stage of primitive unification '...attends the birth and the childhood of nations' (1965:7). It is not very clear from Organski's scheme whether the 'birth' of Ghana in 1957 or Nigeria and Somalia in 1960, is in any sense comparable with what is generally considered to be the founding of England in the 10th Century of France in the 12th; and whether indeed, the two generations over which Ghana, Nigeria or Somalia have existed are analogous to the more than 500 generations over which England and France have navigated through their 'childhood' and maturity. The implications of those temporal variances for our thinking on the development realities and challenges of the former set of countries cannot be overstated. The other three Organski's other three stages reduce the post-unification phase of the life of nation-states to the resolution of what, in the scheme we propose later are the challenges related to the 'distribution' crisis. Tilly rightly takes issue with Organski's scheme pointing at that, by overemphasizing the nineteenth and twentieth century it becomes unhistorical. Tilly further observes that the scheme is unhelpful because it '...brushes all our state-making materials into the basket of "unification"' (1975:607).

Black (1967: 67-89) identifies four critical concerns of political development setting them out as the 'phases of modernisation' which draw attention to most of the shortcomings of modernisation theory as outlined by among others, Gusfield (1971) and Leys (1977). The four phases of modernisation are: (1) The challenge of modernity, the phase in which society, steeped in the traditional framework of knowledge is supposedly confronted with modern ideas and institutions in a process that is related with the emergence of modernising leadership (2) the revolutionary and protracted transfer of power from traditional to modernising leaders and the consolidation of the latter's hold (3) economic and social transformation involving the transition from a predominantly agrarian and rural social structure to an industrial and urban one (4) integration of society in which economic and political transformation produces a fundamental reorganisation of the social structure.

8.3.3. *'Crises of development' and the software of security: Physical Safety Sector Reform or Security Sector Reform?*

Of particular interest to this study is the long-neglected scheme developed by Pye laying out what he called 'crises of political development' (1966:62-67). The scheme identifies transitions and historical changes faced by any unit undergoing political development. It has been has been put to use in subsequent analyses by among others, Binder *et al.* (1971), Tilly (1975b: 608-611), Johari (1982:184-186), Rokkan (1975), Grew (1978) and Ayoob (1994, 1995); and less explicitly by Azar and Moon (1988). The scheme lays out six key imperatives of state making, namely (1) Participation; (2) Integration; (3) Distribution; (4) Identity; (5) Legitimacy and (6) Penetration (7) Institutionalisation. The literature on political development dwells mainly on the first six, the seventh being an additional that in our view cuts across all the rest. It is clear that, from whatever angle the security challenges of the underdeveloped countries are looked at, they all centre on those crises dimensions of state making and it is for that very reason that in Figure 9 (below), the 'crises of development' are presented as the 'critical dimensions of Third World security', in the sense that, the resolution of each of those crises results in the enhancement of security, understood not merely as the immunity from violent attack – the notion that lies at the heart of SSR – but as the 'sustainable and stable existence of groups and individuals', as pointed out in the justification for this study (Section 1.2).

As argued further on, the 'security sector' – which in the SSR debate has been reduced to the instruments of coercion – is only a sub-aspect of a much larger picture, being merely one of the many instruments for resolving the penetration crisis. Therefore it can be stated that, as a category, 'security sector' is a fallacy, especially if it is understood that immunity from violent attack (physical safety) is not synonymous with security as understood by this study. Physical safety is a necessary, but not a sufficient condition for security. Equally so, reform

of the physical safety sector cannot be logically construed as reform of the 'security sector', whatever the latter may be deemed to be.

The actual linkage between security and development as presented here continues to receive limited attention in the debates on peace, security and development at the risk of further exacerbating the security of the affected countries. There are many reasons for the inattention, not least because of the epistemic marginality of the underdeveloped countries; but more so because the debates and intellectual production in the field of security and development are dominated by policy entrepreneurs, researchers and scholars from the developed parts of the world whose present generations are not inclined to draw lessons from the histories of their own countries and regions, making it ever so hard to grasp the development challenges that would probably have been thoroughly comprehensible for a Bismarck or a Garibaldi; a Wolsey or a Richelieu; or a captain of any of the Zaibatsu of Tokugawa Japan. To borrow from Leslie P. Hartley's semi-proverbial remark, as far as the most audible participants in the contemporary security and development debate are concerned, '[t]he past is a foreign country: they do things differently there' (1951:5).

Some brief comments on each of the first five crises, followed by a more detailed discussion on the penetration crisis; and institutionalisation to which is handled in the final section of the study.

- Integration is the establishment of allocation rules equalizing the shares of public offices, benefits, resources among all the culturally and politically distinct sectors of the (emergent) national community.

- Participation is the extension of suffrage to hitherto under-privileged strata of the population and protection of the rights of organised opposition.

- Identity is the measure of the effectiveness of the processes of socialising individuals and groups into accepting themselves as citizens of the

emergent national community (achieved by means of schools, literary media, institutionalised rituals and symbols such as myths, flags, anthems and songs and popular heroes and inculcating a sense of 'national rivals, adversaries and enemies).

- Legitimacy is the culmination of the creation of loyalty to and confidence in the established structure of political institutions in the given system; which also ensures regular conformity to rules and regulations issued by authorities within the system.

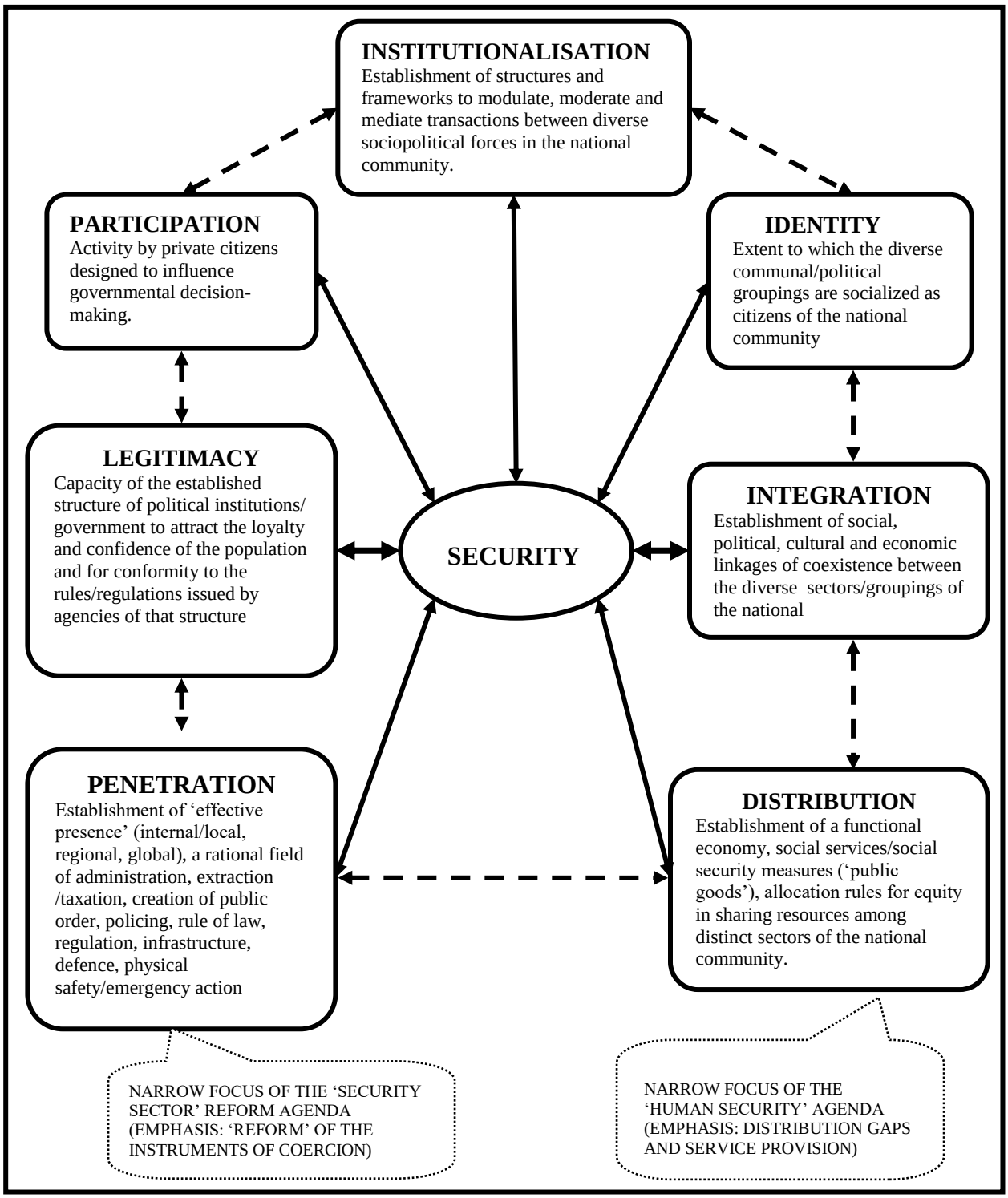
- Distribution deals with the establishment of a functional economy to undergird social services and social security measures, income generation and equalisation through progressive transfers between the less endowed to the more endowed groups, localities and members of society.

Penetration or the crisis of governmental capacity is the establishment of a rational field of administration for resource mobilisation and extraction in form of taxes and manpower, the creation of public order, and the co-ordination of collective efforts in infrastructure development, emergency action and collective defence. The literature gives several characterisations of penetration, but all of them tend to agree on what it entails, both as a process and as a condition, namely, the establishment of effective presence by the central state authorities in the territory over which they preside. In its most basic formulation, attainment of penetration is looked at as '…the need for governments of new states to make their authority effective throughout their territorial jurisdictions' (Doornbos, 1971: 98), similarly described by Eisenstadt as '…the extension of the activities of the central administrative and political organisations and their gradual permeation into all spheres and regions of the society' (1963:99).

In terms similar to the foregoing, Lapalombara refers to '…effective presence of a central government throughout a territory over which it pretends to exercise control' or '…the ability of a political elite to hold the real estate together'

(1971:207). At a minimum then, penetration is the sum total of the requirement not only to establish authoritative structures in the geographical expanse presided over by the authority in question, but also to '…inculcate attitudes of compliance toward these structures among the populace' (Doornbos, 1971:98). As alluded to above, it can be understood either as a static measure or as a process. The latter would include Pye's claim that penetration '…involves the problems of government in reaching down into society and effecting basic policies' (1966:64). Viewed that way, penetration it becomes a matter of process, similar to Binder's interpretation that '…penetration is brought on by the several pressures to increase governmental capabilities.' From the foregoing, it is clear that the so called security sector is only an aspect of the penetration function. The framing of the peacebuilding debate conflates the 'security sector' with the penetration function, and indirectly conflates the latter with security.

Figure 9: Critical Dimensions of Third World Security



Synthesized from Tilly, 1975, pp. 608-609 and Binder et at, 1971

It is these same processes that Ayoob sums up as he makes the point that '...the early modern states of Europe had adequate time at their disposal to complete the process of state-making' (1995:30). Making reference to the resolution of the legitimacy/penetration, identity and participation, he notes that, the early state makers carried the process through three phases namely, the establishment of the centralised absolutist state at the expense of a feudal order; creation of a national identity by merging subjects of the centralised monarchy into a community with a common history, legal system, language and often a common religion, culminating in the transformation of the monarchical state into a nation-state; and gradual extension of representative institutions to co-opt into the power structure emerging social forces.[260]

The countries which emerged on the international scene in the nineteenth and 20th century have had to face a rapid succession of state-making challenges over very short periods of time. Rokkan notes that for older, slowly developing states, issues of national cultural identity, participation and economic inequality were dealt with over a long stretch in contrast to the countries of the Third World where those same issues and more are telescoped into a single phase. The later state-makers were:

> [L]eft with little or no time to reach even temporary institutional solutions to one set of challenges before they were forced to cope with the next set...the late comers were not only late in achieving sovereign status, they were faced with disruptive pressures from outside as well as from inside (1975:574).[261]

---

[260] Ibid.

[261] To underline the straitjacketing of multiple crises into a brief spell of time, Cyril Black (1966, 89-94) has compiled a chronology to show the differences in the rates of modernising change measured in terms of how long, depending on the era under which intensive state making was undertaken, a selection of countries took to consolidate modernising leadership. He considers

Huntington stresses the destabilising influence of the 'demonstration effect' that early state makers have on the later modernisers. He notes that, state-making in Europe and North America was over a period of several centuries, stressing that, '...in general one issue or one crisis was dealt with at a time' (1968:46). On the contrary, Huntington correctly notes, later state makers do not have the luxury of dealing with the problems of centralization of authority, national integration, social mobilization, economic development, political participation, social welfare one at a time, but rather, they are confronted by those problems simultaneously. 'What is important' writes Rokkan, 'is that the Western States were given a chance to solve some of the worst problems of state making before they had to face the ordeals of mass politics' (1975:598).

Other analysts support this view as Verba does in pointing out that, '[w]hat Britain took centuries to do – solve the problems of identity, legitimacy, participation, and distribution – the new nations have to do in the briefest span of time' (1971:314). Focussing on the resolution of the integration crisis, Goldman takes note in a similar vein of the luxury of time that England was endowed with in her early state making. He has observed that 'nominally the English became a nation in the eighth century but did not achieve political integration until the seventeenth century, a thousand years later' (1969:719). Stressing the short and medium term implications on security, of the attempt by underdeveloped countries to replicate those processes but basing on a fixed timetable of very short duration with premeditated goals, Ayoob has perceptively observed,

> [F]itting an evolutionary historical process into a series of deadlines is a difficult and dangerous exercise. It distorts the process of natural evolution and raises hopes for and fears of the final goal, thereby increasing the load

---

England to be the first moderniser and confines the consolidation of modernising leadership to the period from 1649 to 1832, a phase that lasted 183 years; the United States as the second moderniser lasting a much shorter period of 89 years, from 1776 to 1865; while for the 23 countries that launched into intensive state making during the Napoleonic period (1789-1815), it lasted 73 years and for the majority of the countries that entered this phase in the first quarter of the twentieth century it lasted only 29 years.

on affected political systems to such a degree that they are threatened with serious disequilibrium (1995:32).

8.4 Institutionalization as the Master Imperative: Praetorianism or Militarism?

Institutionalisation has been highlighted above as one of the seven crises of political development, as an addition to the scheme that arose out of the comparative studies of scholars on political development as already shown, whether it is viewed as a process or an end state. Institutionalisation is given prominence here because as a process, it underpins all the other sic criteria of political development. To take the analogy of 'security software' a bit further, institutionalisation can be considered to be the background software or the operating system whose lack will result in the hardware being redundant or whose dysfunction will result in frequent system crashes. The defectiveness or deficit of institutions, or deficiencies in the process of institutionalisation is what Huntington has called the 'political gap' (1968:11). The political gap can be understood to be the discrepancy between, on the one hand, the accelerating mobilisation of new social forces into political action, and on the other hand, the gradual development of organisations and procedures for mediating, moderating and disciplining the interaction of those social forces. As Huntington has noted, '[i]n a complex society community is produced by political action and maintained by political institutions.'[262]

The use of the term *institution,* and with it, *institutionalization*, has become commonplace in the social sciences reflecting the growth of institutional economics and development studies. As a concept, it enjoys widespread usage in a wide range of disciplines including philosophy, politics and sociology, a fact that

---

262 Ibid

accounts for the endless controversies over its definitions vis-à-vis other key terms such as *organisation*, controversies that will least concern us here. What remains a major challenge is that even when institutions (and the process of institutionalisation) are given the attention they deserve, it is not unusual for them not to be distinguished from social forms that fall above and below them. On a lower level, institutions tend to be conflated with simpler social forms such as customs, rituals, conventions, norms, roles and rituals that are constitutive of them; and on a higher level, they tend to be conflated with the more complex socio-political forms such as societies and cultures which institutions together with other elements, combine to constitute.

Several definitions of the term related to the general one above have been proffered that capture the notion that reflects the general argument of this study. The more common of those definitions include Veblen's '…settled habits of thought common to the generality of men' (1909:626); Gidden's that looks at institutions as '…the more enduring features of social life' (1984: 31), all of which are captured by Jonathan Turner in his definition of institutions as:

> [A] complex of positions, roles, norms and values lodged in particular types of social structures and organising relatively stable patterns of human activity with respect to fundamental problems in producing life-sustaining resources, in reproducing individuals, and in sustaining viable societal structures within a given environment (1997: 6).

For purposes of this study, we define institutions as structures, procedures, functions and frameworks for mediating and moderating the interactions between the diverse social and political forces that constitute any one society. Institutions are the 'software' of political systems, while interactions and transactions between political and social forces constitute the content of political participation. The wider system will malfunction if the 'software' is missing, corrupted, incompatible or outdated and this will be directly reflected in the commonly preferred approaches and traditions of political participation. Huntington defines institutions

as 'stable, valued, recurring patterns of behaviour' (1968:12), and institutionalisation as 'the process by which organisations and procedures acquire value and stability.'[263] Migdal describes institutions similarly as '… the established systems of rules and roles within which people deal with one another' (1988:90). Despite its slight circularity, Huntington's definition brings out all the elements that would be considered central to any study of institutions. Nevertheless, that does not devalue at all his wider analysis. The rest of the comments in this part of the study, dwelling on institutionalisation as an aspect of political development and building block of security will draw extensively on the Huntington's observations in his *Political Order in Changing Societies*. Institutionalisation – understood as '...the capacity to create public interests'[264] – spans across all the major spheres of public life: political, cultural, social and economic. For purposes of the analysis here, we focus narrowly on the 'security sector' and its relationship with the political system. Institutionalisation both as a drawn-out process and a state of affairs arising from that process is probably the single-most concern whose disregard in the debate on security and development has contributed most to diminishing the usefulness of reform initiatives that have dominated the post-Cold War era; and it becomes ever more important particularly because much of the persistent fallacious accounts of the reasons why the military continues to cast a long shadow over the politics of underdeveloped countries.

The important question is, if institutions are the medium through which social forces relate both to each other and to the rest of the political system, what becomes the case when they (institutions) are lacking in absolute terms, or if they are deficient in 'adaptability, coherence, autonomy and complexity', the time-dependent criteria Huntington uses to assess the extent to which procedures and organisations are institutionalised? In answering this question, Huntington classifies political systems into those that are highly institutionalised and those

263 Ibid.
264 Ibid p. 24

which are minimally institutionalised and disorganised, the civic and praetorian respectively and places the political systems of the underdeveloped countries in the latter category. This classification translates directly into a classification of the preferred modes of political participation, namely, civic participation and praetorianism. Those two provide the context for mapping the character of civil-military relations and the efficacy (or their lack) of reform interventions aimed at placing those relationships on a sound civic footing.

There have been many attempts especially by experts on civil-military relations to shed light on the proclivity of military forces in underdeveloped countries either to intervene in politics or to otherwise exceed the capacities of the civil authorities in keeping them under check. Among the many explanations, the commons ones are:

- The training of military officers of underdeveloped countries in foreign military academies has in the past been credited as a deterrent to almost the same extent that it has been blamed for causing military intervention in politics.
- The class origins of the officer corps of the military, with many references to the middle and lower middle class.
- The skill levels of the military.
- The internal cohesiveness of some military forces.
- Ethnic composition of the officer corps.
- Contagion from successful intervention in politics by the militaries of other countries.

On the basis of some of those accounts policy recommendations and academic hypotheses have been formulated to the effect that the most effective way of countering the intervention of the military in politics was by 'coup-proofing' as a preventive strategy, instituting measures for ensuring civilian control and nurturing cultures that promote democratic control of the armed forces. In spite

of the well-laid out counsel particularly by Huntington (1968), Finer (1962) and Perlmutter (1969, 1977, and 1982) on the limitations of those assumptions, they have more recently resurfaced as 'security sector' governance, with SSR as a means of its attainment.

As Huntington has observed, military explanations do not explain military interventions in politics. 'The most important causes of military intervention in politics' he emphasizes, 'are not military but political and reflect not the social and organisational characteristics of the military but the political and institutional structure of society.'[265] Military interventions and military pre-eminence instead explains the reality that the countries affected by the phenomenon lean towards the praetorian end of the praetorianism-civic continuum. Praetorianism is a referred pain that is perceived in an organ other than the actual site of the painful stimulus. Attempting to remedy such pain by tinkering with the locus where it is remotely projected serves no tangible purpose. In praetorian polities, due to the feebleness or inappropriateness of existing institutions, the political system lacks the medium for mediating, modulating and moderating group action. As a result,

> Each group employs means which are peculiar to its capabilities. The wealthy bribe; the students riot; workers strike; mobs demonstrate; and the military coup....The techniques of military intervention are simply more dramatic and effective than the others.'[266]

The fact is that, in a situation where the functioning of a political system has drifted towards the Darwinian jungle, a contest in which a cardinal sings from a bible and a colonel slings a rifle favours the latter only because of the appropriateness of his means, and not because his motivation differs from that of the former. Singling out for rebuke and for reform, the actor with the most dramatic means is very much a case of what psychophysiologists call 'attentional

---

[265] Ibid, p.194.
[266] Ibid, p.196.

bias': the tendency to focus exclusively on emotionally dominant stimuli in the environment and to neglect other relevant or primary data when making judgments of a correlation or association (Sass *et al.*, 2010). By disregarding the broader question institutionalisation, the promoters of SSR have in the process reduced praetorianism to militarism, thus conflating a syndrome with one of its components, albeit a dramatic one.

CONCLUSION

This study begins with a set of arguments that outline the contours along which the rest of the research was expected to unfold. The arguments touch on the philosophical underpinnings of the normative framing of the SSR debate, the post-Cold War theoretical debates on security, the relationship between SSR and civil military relations, the arguments and concepts that continue to structure the implementation of SSR and suggestions regarding an alternative conceptualisation of the security of Sub-Saharan African countries. The picture that emerges is that for some time to come, the pressing concern for international statesmen, bureaucrats of world bodies and generals – not to mention scholars and campaigners – will remain the task of effecting fundamental socio-economic and political transformation in the less developed, conflict-prone countries particularly in Sub-Saharan Africa. That task will not be made any easier by the complexity of the multiple manifestations of what can be called 'the underdevelopment syndrome', nor will it be helped by the exacting demands, the competing visions and conflicting interests of those that may have the wherewithal to act, as can be seen from the themes that emerge from the study.

The first theme that relates to pressing the need for realism regarding what Berdal (2009: 173) has called '...the multiple and overlapping sources of violence...' in countries that may be classified as 'post-conflict' and even those that may have previously been at peace. The pacifism that is implied by such idealistic

references as 'peace-building', 'post-conflict' and 'sustainable peace' often diverts attention from the 'multiple and overlapping sources of violence' and protracted conflict whose remedy may not lie with the short term and quick fix policy options that are characteristic to the interventionism of the post-Cold War era. As this study shows, SSR stands out as one of the leading examples of such interventionism. It is argued in this study that there may be need for a sense of realism a keen sense of history and acknowledgment that some of the processes of political evolution and state making under way in most countries that are targeted for institutional reform are by their very nature fraught with conflict and instability like they have been in the past in other parts of the globe. As Tilly has observed, for many of the developed countries of the modern world, state making, '...cost tremendously in death, suffering, loss of rights and unwilling surrender of land, goods or labour' (1975a). The challenge for the less developed parts of the contemporary world, the study shows, is how to consolidate territorial and demographic control, maintain order in places where control has been imposed and establish systems of resource extraction and redistribution more peacefully than history shows those processes to often be, and as peacefully as is often required of them by the now developed countries particularly those of the West.

The second theme relates to sensitivity both to history and to the diverse cultural settings within which policy interventions such as SSR have to be implemented. It calls for keen awareness of the enduring impact of both the distinct colonial experiences and the diverse forms taken by anti-colonial struggles in Sub-Saharan Africa on the character and robustness of post-independence states and institutions and crucially, on the diversity of the resulting formats of civil-military relations and the obstacles they can impose on one-size-fits-all institutional reform initiatives such as SSR. Yet, even when such issues are taken into account, it remains that SSR is not a new initiative, but a reincarnation of civil-military relations theory of the 1960s and 1970s; and as such, it is handicapped by the same limitations that invalidated CMR, the parent theory, namely the normative bias towards liberalism and the disregard for the realities in pre-liberal

and transitional political systems or those whose historical experience that were not in accord with the socio-political contexts that influenced the original formulation of the theory. Those limitations do not portend well for SSR.

The theme of sensitivity to history ties in with one of the key arguments of this study regarding the broader question of sensitivity to context. Sensitivity to wider context – whether historical or contemporary – continues to feature prominently in the statements of principle and declarations of intent of international development agencies, but as this study shows, all it seems to attract is lip service. Claims about context-sensitivity in the inception and implementation of international development initiatives contrast sharply with the normative orientation of those initiatives. This accounts for what Lakhdar Brahimi has called '"template"' missions....to carry out the same laundry list of tasks in dramatically different post-conflict settings' (2008:10),[267] or what Andrews (2013) has described aptly as 'square pegs in round holes.'

Underlying the point sensitivity to history is the question humility on the part of some of the countries and coalitions that play a leading role in peacebuilding interventions. This particularly relates to the historical responsibility of key developing countries for emplacing, entrenching and on many occasions, reproducing the structures and processes that predispose underdeveloped countries to intractable conflict. Any reference to historical context that disregards or betrays any hint of being dismissive of those historical factors can only undermine the credibility of those proposing reforms provoke resentment for peacebuilding initiatives, however well-intentioned or potentially beneficial they may seem to be.

This study directly relates to the practical ramifications of that stark choice that is made across the world on a daily basis; in halls of ivy, in boardrooms of world bodies and in military command centres of major powers. This is the choice between, on the one hand, grounding scholarship, advocacy and policy in the field

[267] UN Security Council 5895th Meeting, 20 May 2008, S/PV.5895, Cited in Berdal, 2009, p.171.

of international development in rigorous empirical analysis of the lives of real people, in the real world in its historical specificity; and on the other hand, basing those crucial activities on prescribing what are considered to be 'best practices' and 'international norms', which, though desirable as ideals, may bear no relation whatsoever with prevailing realities; and whose enforcement, however well-intentioned, always ends up turning international development policy and scholarship into an exercise of strapping wings on caterpillars. The reference to 'Antoinettian complacency' in the study's title relates directly to that entomological metaphor which sums up our practical concerns here. The logic of the implied practice is unmistakable: If they have no government, give them good governance and if they have no political community give them the political party. If they have no functional economy give them the free market and if they no monopoly over the instruments of coercion, reform their 'security sector'. As this study demonstrates, that remains the dominant trait of international development as it is currently practised in conflict-afflicted regions of the world such as Sub-Saharan Africa. As this study has attempted to show, understanding the pitfalls of such approaches will be a starting point in coming to grips with the apparent futility of to peace building as it is practiced broadly and as it actualised SSR.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abel, Theodore (1948), 'The Operation Called Verstehen', *American Journal of Sociology*, Vol. 54, No. 3 pp. 211-218.

Abiodun, Alao (2000) Security Reform in Democratic Nigeria, CSDG Working Paper No. 2 (London: Centre for Defence Studies, King's College London).

Abrahamsen, R. and Williams, Michael C. (2006), 'Security Sector Reform: Bringing the Private in', *Conflict, Security & Development* Vol. 6, No. 1.

Abrahamsson, Bengt (1972), Military Professionalization and Political Power (Beverly Hills: Sage Publications).

Adams, Richard H. (2002), Poverty Reduction in Uganda in the 1990s: A Country Case Study (Washington D.C.: USAID).

Addi, Lahouri (2002), 'Army, State and Nation in Algeria' in Koonings, Kees; Kruijt, Dirk eds. *Political Armies: The Military and Nation Building in the Age of Democracy* (London: Zed Books), pp. 179-203.

Adelman H. and Suhrke A. Eds. (1999), The Path of a Genocide: The Rwanda Crisis from Uganda to Zaire (New Brunswick, N.J.: Transaction Publishers).

Afigbo, A.E. and Falola, T. (2004), Nigerian History, Politics, And Affairs: The Collected Essays Of Adiele Afigbo (Trenton, NJ.: Africa World Press)

Allen, Tim (2006), Trial Justice: The International Criminal Court and the Lord's Resistance Army (London: Zed Books).

_____. (1996), In Search of Cool Ground: War, Flight & Homecoming in Northeast Africa (London: James Currey).

Al Mashat, Abdul Monem (1985), National Security in the Third World (Boulder: Westview Press).

Albee, Ernest (1907), 'Descriptive and Normative Sciences', *The Philosophical Review,* Vol. 16, No. 1, pp. 40-49.

Albee, Ernest (1906), 'The Significance of Methodological Principles', *The Philosophical Review*, Vol. 15, No. pp. 267-276.

Albright David E. (1980), 'Comparative Conceptualization of Civil-Military Relations' *World Politics*, Vol. 32, No. 4, pp. 553-576.

Aldrich H. (1979), Organisations and Environments (Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall).

Almond, Gabriel A., and Verba, S. (1989), The Civic Culture: Political Attitudes and Democracy in Five Nations (Newbury Park, CA.: Sage Publications).

Amburgey, Terry L.; Kelly D. and Barnett, William. P. (1993), 'Resetting the Clock: The Dynamics of Organizational Change and Failure', *Administrative Science Quarterly*, Vol. 38, No. 1 pp. 51-73.

Andrews M. (2013), The Limits of Institutional Reform in Development (New York, N.Y.: Cambridge University Press).

Anheier H.; Glasius M. & Kaldor, M. (eds) (2001) Global Civil Society Yearbook 2001, (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Ashworth R., Boyne G. & Delbridge R. (2007), 'Escape from the Iron Cage? Organizational Change and Isomorphic Pressures in the Public Sector', *Journal of Public Administration, Research and Theory*, 19, pp. 165-187.

Atkinson, Ronald R. (2010), The Roots of Ethnicity: Origins of the Acholi of Uganda (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Austin, John L. (1962) How to Do Things With Words (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Avirgan T. & Honey M. (1983), War in Uganda: The Legacy of Idi Amin
(Dar es Salaam: Tanzania Publishing House).

Ayer AJ (1958), Language, Truth and Logic (London: Victor Gollancz).

Ayoob, Mohammed (1994), 'Security Third World Predicament: Searching for the Core Variable' in Graham, Norman A Ed. *Seeking Security and Development: The Impact of Military Spending and Arms Transfers* (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp. 15-28.

Ayoob, Mohammed (1994), The Third World Security Predicament: State Making, Regional Conflict, and the International System (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Ayoob, Mohammed (1992), 'The Security Predicament of the Third World State: Reflections on State Making in a Comparative Perspective' in The Insecurity Dilemma: National Security of Third World States (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp. 11-36.

Ayoob, Mohammed (1991) 'The Security Problematic of the Third World', *World Politics*, 43:2, pp. 257-283.

Ayoob, Mohammed (1984), 'Security in the Third World: The Worm about to Turn?' *International Affairs*, Vol. 60, No. 1, pp. 41-51.

Azar Edward E. and Moon, Chung-In, eds. (1988), National Security in the Third World: The Management of Internal and External Threats, (Aldershot: Edward Elgar).

Baaré, Anton (2001) Demobilization and Reintegration: Revisiting the Uganda Experience'. Paper presented at the USAID Workshop on Demobilization and Reintegration Programs, Nairobi 20—1 March. http://www.certi.org/news_events/'demobilization'2/ppts/USAID_DRP_UGANDA_PRESENTATION_ANTON_BAAR,.htm, 20 September 2012.

Baaz, Eriksson M. and Verweijen J. (2013), 'The Volatility of a Half-Cooked Bouillabaisse: Reflections on Rebel-Military Integration and Conflict Dynamics in Eastern DRC', African Affairs 112(449), pp.563-282.

Babiker Mohammed H. and Ozerdem A., (2003), 'A Future Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration Process in Sudan: Lessons Learned from Ethiopia, Mozambique and Uganda', Conflict, Security & Development, Volume 3:2 pp. 211 – 232.

Baggini, Julian; Fosl, Peter S. 2nd Ed. (2010), The Philosopher's Toolkit: A Compendium of Philosophical Concepts and Methods (Oxford: Blackwell).

Bailey, K.D. (1987), Methods of Social Research, 3rd ed. (London: The Free Press).

Bakan, D. (1973), On Method: Toward a Reconstruction of Psychological Investigation (London: Jossey-Bass).

Ball, Nicole and van de Goor, Luc (2006), Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration: Mapping Issues, Dilemmas and Guiding Principles (The Hague: Clingaedel Institute of International Relations).

Ball, N. & Hendrickson, D (2005), Trends in Security Sector Reform (SSR): Policy, Practice and Research, Paper prepared for the Workshop on "New Directions in Security Sector Reform", Peace, Conflict and Development Program Initiative International Development Research Centre (IDRC), Ottawa, Canada, 3-4 November 2005.

Ball, N., Brzoska, M., Kingma, K. and Wulf, H (2002), Voice and Accountability in the Security Sector (Bonn: Bonn International Centre for Conversion).

Ball, N (2000), 'Good Practices in Security Sector Reform', in Wulf, H., (ed) Security Sector Reform, Brief 15 (Bonn: Bonn International Centre for Conversion), pp. 14-23, http://www.bicc.de/uploads/pdf/publications/briefs/brief15/brief15.pdf, 20 May 2006.

Ball, Nicole and Fayemi, J'Kayode eds., (2004), Security Sector Governance in Africa: A Handbook. London: Centre for Democracy and Development, http://www.gfn-ssr.org/ssg_a/index.cfm 24 December 2005.

Ball, Nicole (2002), 'Democratic Governance in the Security Sector'. Paper presented at the UNDP Workshop on "Learning from Experience for Afghanistan", 5 February 2002 http://www.undp.org/eo/documents/afghanistan-workshop/Nicole_Ball.pdf, 25 July 2006.

Ball N, Friedman Jordana D., and Rossiter Caleb S. (1997), 'The Role of International Financial Institutions in Preventing and Resolving Conflict', in Cortright, David ed., The Price of Peace: Incentives and International Conflict Prevention (Lanham, MD.: Rowman and Littlefield), pp. 243-266.

Ball, Nicole (1988), Security and Economy in the Third world (Princeton: Princeton University Press).

Ball, Nicole (1985), 'The Security Sector, the Budget, and Development', Disarmament and World Development: Is there a way forward? IDS bulletin, Vol. 16, No. 4, pp. 44-48.

Ballentine K. and Sherman J. (eds), (2003), The Political Economy of Armed Conflict: Beyond Greed and Grievance (Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner).

Barber J.P. (1968), Imperial Frontier: A Study of Relations Between the British and the Pastoral Tribes of North East Uganda (Nairobi: East African Publishing House).

Barkan, J. (1994) 'Can Established Democracies Nurture Democracy Abroad? Lessons from Africa', Michigan State University Working Paper on Political Reform in Africa No 10, http://pdf.usaid.gov/pdf_docs/PNACA225.pdf, accessed on 28th April 2013.

Barnes Harry G. (2000), 'Preface: The United States and Human Rights' in Forsythe David P. Ed., The United States and Human Rights: Looking Inward and Outward, Volume 5 of Human rights in international perspective (Omaha, NE.: University of Nebraska Press). Pp. ix-xiii.

Barrington L. (2012), Comparative Politics: Structures and Choices (Boston, MA.: Cengage).

Barzini, Luigi (1966) The Italians (London: Readers Union).

Bayart Jean-François, Ellis Stephen; Hibou Béatrice (1999), The Criminalization of the State in Africa (Oxford: James Currey).

Bayley David H. (1976), Police for the Future (New York: University of California Press).

Bayley David H. (1975), 'The Police and Political Development in Europe' in Tilly, Charles ed., *The Formation of National States in Europe* (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp. 328-379.

Beachey, R.W (1962), 'The Arms Trade in East Africa in the Late Nineteenth Century', *The Journal of African History*, Vol. 3, No. 3, pp. 451-467.

Beardsley, M.C; Beardsley, E.L. (1965), Philosophical Thinking: An Introduction (New York, NY: Harcourt, Brace & World).

Behrend H. (1999), Alice Lakwena & the Holy Spirits: War in Northern Uganda, 1985-97 (Oxford: James Currey).

Bellany, I. (1981), 'Towards a theory of International Security' in Political Studies, I29:1, pp 100-105.

Bentley E.L. (1892), British East Africa and Uganda: A Historical Record Compiled from Captain Lugard's and other Reports (London: Chapman and Hall).

Berdal M. (2013) 'Introduction', in Berdal Mats and Wennmann Achim eds., *Ending Wars, Consolidating Peace: Economic Perspectives* (Oxford: Routledge), pp. 7-14.

Berdal, M. (2009), Building Peace after War (Oxford: Routledge).

Berdal M. and Malone, David M. eds (2000), Greed and Grievance: Economic Agendas in Civil Wars (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Berdal, M. (1996), Disarmament and 'demobilization' after Civil Wars: Arms, Soldiers and the Termination of Armed Conflicts, International Institute for Strategic Studies, Adelphi Paper 303 (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Bernardi, B. (1952), 'The Age-system of the Nilo-Hamitic Peoples: A Critical Evaluation', Africa, Volume 22, Issue 04, pp 316-332.

Beveridge, Albert J. (1995), 'Policy Regarding Philippines' in Wolff Wendy ed. Senate, 1789-1989, Vol. 3: Classic Speeches, 1830-1993, Volume 3 (Washington D.C.: Government Printing Office), pp. 491-516.

Biddle, K; Neema, S; Male, C and Raleigh, C; (1998), Uganda Police Project Evaluation (London: DFID).

Bigo, Didier (2008), 'Globalized (In)Security. The Field and the Ban-Opticon', in Bigo D. and Tsoukala A., Eds, *Terror, Insecurity and Liberty: Illiberal Practices of Liberal Regimes*, (London: Routledge), pp. 10–48.

Binder, L.; Coleman James S.; LaPalombara J.; Pye Lucian W.; Verba S. & Weiner M. Eds. (1971), Crises and Sequences in Political Development (Princeton: Princeton University Press).

Black, Cyril (1967), The Dynamics of Modernization (New York: Harper and Row).

Blackburn, S (2005), Dictionary of Philosophy (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Bland Douglas L. (2000), "Who decides what? Civil-military relations in Canada and the United States", Canadian-American Public Policy, http://findarticles.com/p/articles/mi_hb3189/is_41/ai_n28759933/?tag=content;col1, accessed on 15 March, 2011.

Bland Douglas L., (1999), 'A Unified Theory of Civil-Military Relations' *Armed Forces & Society* 26:1, pp. 7-25.

Born, Hans *et al.* (2003), 'Oversight and Guidance: The Relevance of Parliamentary Oversight for the Security Sector and its Reform' in Hans Born, Philipp Fluri, Anders Johnsson eds., Handbook for Parliamentarians No 5, Oversight of the Security Sector: Principles, Mechanisms and Practices, (Geneva: IPU/DCAF).

Born, Hans; Caparini, Marina; Haltiner, Karl; Kuhlmann, Jürgen (2006), Civil-military relations in Europe: Learning from Crisis and Institutional Change (London: Routledge).

Boughton, J. and Mourmouras, A., (2002), Is Policy Ownership an Operational Concept? IMF Working Papers, WP/02/72, http://www.imf.org/external/pubs/ft/wp/2002/wp0272.pdf, accessed on 14 July 2012.

Boutros-Ghali, Boutros (1992) An Agenda for Peace: Preventive Diplomacy, Peacemaking and Peace-keeping (New York: United Nations).

Boydston, J.A. ed., (1988), The Quest for Certainty (Collected Works of John Dewey): The Later Works, 1925-1953: 1929 v. 4 (Carbondale IL.: Southern Illinois University Press).

Branch, A. (2011), Displacing Human Rights: War and Intervention in Northern Uganda (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Brett, E. A. (1995), 'Neutralising the Use of Force in Uganda: The Role of the Military in Politics'; Journal of Modern African Studies, 33:1, pp. 129-155.

Brogden, M. (1999) 'Community Policing as Cherry' Pie, in Mawby R.I. ed., *Policing Across the World: Issues for the Twenty-First Century* (London: UCL Press), pp. 167-186.

Bruneau Thomas C. (2011), Patriots for Profit: Contractors and the Military in U.S. National Security (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press).

Bryden A. (2007), Understanding the DDR-SSR Nexus: Building Sustainable Peace in Africa, Paper presented at the second international conference on DDR and SSR and stability in Africa, Kinshasa, Democratic Republic of Congo, 12-14 June 2007; at http://www.un.org/africa/osaa/speeches/ddr-ssr.pdf, accessed on 24 July 2013.

Bryden A. and Scherrer V. (2012), Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration and Security Sector Reform: Insights from UN Experience in Afghanistan, Burundi, the Central African Republic and the Democratic Republic of the Congo (Geneva: DCAF).

Bryden, Alan and Fluri, Philipp eds., (2003), Security Sector Reform: Institutions, Society and Good Governance (Baden Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft).

Bryden A., N'Diaye B. and Olonisakin 'F. (2008), 'Understanding the Challenges of Security Sector Governance in West Africa' in Alan Bryden, Boubacar N'Diaye and 'Funmi Olonisakin Eds., Challenges of Security Sector Governance in West Africa (Berlin: Lit Verlag), pp. 4-24.

Brzoska, M; von Boemcken, M; Paes, Wolf C and Jaspers, W (2004), Incorporation of Defence Expenditures into Public Expenditure Work, (Bonn: Bonn International Centre for Conversion).

Brzoska M. (2003), Development Donors and the Concept of Security Sector Reform (Geneva: DCAF).

Brzoska, M. (2000), 'The Concept of Security Sector Reform' In, *Security Sector Reform*, Bonn International Centre for Conversion, Briefing Paper No. 15 (Bonn: BICC).

Builder, Carl (1989), The Masks of War: American Military Styles in Strategy and Analysis (Baltimore, MA: Johns Hopkins University Press).

Bull, Hedley (1968), 'Strategic Studies and Its Critics', World Politics, Vol. 20 No. 4, July, pp. 593-605.

Bull, Hedley (1966), 'International Theory: The Case for a Classical Approach'; World Politics, Vol. 18, No. 3 pp. 361-377

Burk, James (1999), 'Military Culture', in Lester Kurtz and Jennifer E. Turpin, Eds, *Encyclopedia of Violence, Peace and Conflict*. (San Diego, Calif.: Academic Press), pp.1242-155.

Burk, James (2002), 'Theories of Democratic Civil-Military Relations,' *Armed Forces & Society* Vol. 29, No. 1, pp. 7-29.

Burke, Edmund (1834), The Works of the Right Hon. Burke Edmund Volume 1, (London: Holdsworth and Ball).

Burke, Fred G. (1964), Local Government and Politics in Uganda (Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press).

Buzan, B. and Hansen, L. (2009), The Evolution of International Security Studies (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Buzan, Barry (2004), 'Human Security: A Reductionist, Idealistic Notion that adds Little Analytical Value', Security Dialogue Vol. 35, No.3 pp. 369-370.

Buzan, Barry; Ole Waever and Jaap de Wilde (1998), Security: A New Framework for Analysis (London: Lynne Rienner Publishers).

Buzan, Barry (1991), People, States and Fear: An Agenda for International Security Studies in the Post-Cold War Era (Harlow: Pearson Longman).

Bwengye-Wazarwahi F. A. (1985), The Agony Of Uganda: From Idi Amin to Obote: Repressive Rule and Bloodshed : Causes, Effects and the Cure (London: Regency Press).

Caforio, Giuseppe (2006), Handbook of the Sociology of the Military (Dordrecht: Springer).

Call Charles T. (2002), 'Competing Donor Approaches to Post-conflict Police Reform', *Conflict, Security & Development*, 2:01, 99-120.

Call Charles T. & Cousens Elizabeth M. (2008), 'Ending Wars and Building Peace: International Responses to War-Torn Societies', *International Studies Perspectives* 9, pp. 1–21.

Callaghy, Thomas M. (1994), 'Civil Society, Democracy, and Economic Change in Africa: A Dissenting Opinion about Resurgent Societies', in Harbeson John W. *et al* (eds.), *Civil Society and the State in Africa*, (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp.231-53.

Callaghy Thomas M. (1987), 'The State as Lame Leviathan: The Patrimonial Administrative State in Africa' in Zaki Ergas ed. *The African State in Transition* (London: Macmillan) pp. 87-116.

Cameron J. R. (1971), '"Ought" and Institutional Obligation' *Philosophy* Vol. 46, No. 178 pp. 309-323.

Caparini, M. (2004a), 'Civil society and democratic oversight of the security sector: a preliminary investigation', in Fluri, P. and Hadzˇic´, M., eds, *Sourcebook on Security Sector Reform* (DCAF: Geneva), pp. 171-192.

Caparini, Marina (2004b), Civil Society and Democratic Oversight of the Security Sector: A Preliminary Investigation, DCAF Working Paper No. 132 (Geneva: Geneva Centre for the Democratic Control of Armed Forces (DCAF)), http://www.iskran.ru/cd_data/disk2/rr/030.pdf, 12 June 2009.

Carothers, T. (1997) 'Democracy assistance: the question of strategy', *Democratization*, Vol. 4, No. 3, pp.109-32.

Carr, Edward H. (1964), The Twenty Years' Crisis 1919-39: An Introduction to the Study of International Relations. (New York, N.Y.: Harper and Row)

Casati, G. Major (1891), Ten years in Equatoria and The Return with Emin Pasha, Vol. II (London: Frederick Warne and Co).

Cawthra, G., and Luckham, R (2003), 'Democratic Control and the Security Sector Sector: Scope for Transformation and its Limits' in Cawthra, G., and Luckham, R.; eds *Governing Insecurity: Democratic Control of Military and Security Establishments in Transitional Democracies* (London: Zed Books) pp. 306-327.

Chanaa, J. (2002), Security Sector Reform: Issues, Challenges and Prospects. IISS Adelphi Paper no. 344 (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Chang, H.J. (2003a) 'Kicking Away the Ladder: Infant Industry Promotion in Historical Perspective', Oxford Development Studies, 31:1, 21-32.

Chang, H.J. (2003b), Kicking Away the Ladder: Development Strategy in Historical Perspective (London: Anthem Press).

Chazan, N.; Lewis, P.; Mortimer, Robert A.; Rothchild, D. and Stedman, Stephen J. (1999), Politics and Society in Contemporary Africa (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Chesterman, S. (2007), 'Ownership in Theory and in Practice: Transfer of Authority in UN Statebuilding Operations' *The Journal of Intervention and Statebuilding*, Volume 1:1, pp. 3-25.

Chesterman, S. (2006), 'The Trope of Ownership', in Hurwitz, A. and Huang, R., (eds), Rule of Law and Conflict Management: Towards Security, Development and Human Rights (Boulder: Lynne Reiner).

Chesterman, S. (2004), You, the People: The United Nations, Transitional Administration, and State-Building (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Chesterman S., Ignatieff M., &, Thakur Ramesh C. Eds (2005) Making States Work: State Failure and the Crisis of Governance (New York, NY: United Nations University Press).

Chipman, J (1985): Introduction: The logic of French power in Africa, The Adelphi Papers, 25:201, 1-5.

Chrisman, Mathew (2012), 'On the Meaning of Ought' in Shaeffer-Landau Russ ed., *Oxford Studies in Metaethics*, Volume 7 (Oxford: Oxford University Press), pp. 304-332.

Chuter, David (2000), Defence Transformation: A Short Guide to Issues, Institute of Strategic Studies Monograph No. 49 (ISS: Pretoria).

Chuter, David (2006), 'Understanding Security Sector Reform'. *Journal of Security Sector Management* Vol. 4, No.2.

Chuter, David (2009), 'Civil-Military Relations: Is there Really a Problem?' *Journal of Security Sector Management*, Vol 7, No 2, pp.1-17.

Clapham C. (1998), 'Introduction: Analysing African Insurgencies', in Clapham, Christopher, ed., African Guerrillas (Oxford: James Currey), pp. 1-18.

Clark, John F. (2007), 'The Decline of the African Military Coup', *Journal of Democracy,* Volume 18, Number 3, pp. 141-155.

Clark, K.M. (1996), Fostering a Farewell to Arms: Preliminary Lessons Learned in the Demobilization and Reintegration of Combatants, Research & Reference Services United States Agency for International Development Centre for Development Information and Evaluation (Washington, D.C.: USAID/CDI).

Clausewitz, Carl von (1997), On War (Ware, Herts: Wandsworth).

Cochran, Molly (1999), Normative Theory in International Relations: A Pragmatic Approach (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Code, L. (1991), What Can She Know? Feminist Theory and the Construction of Knowledge (Ithaca: Cornell University Press).

Cohen Y., Brown Brian R. and Organski Kenneth A. F. (1981), 'The Paradoxical Nature of State Making: The Violent Creation of Order' *The American Political Science Review* Vol. 75, No. 4, pp. 901-910

Coleman, J.S., (1990) Foundations of Social Theory (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press).

Colletta, Nat, Marcus Kostner, and Ingo Wiederhofer (1996a), Case Studies in War-to-Peace Transition: The 'demobilization' and Reintegration of Ex-combatants in Ethiopia, Namibia, and Uganda, World Bank Discussion Paper 331 (Washington, DC: The World Bank).

Colletta, Nat J, Marcus Kostner, and Ingo Wiederhofer (1996b), The Transition from War to Peace in Sub-Saharan Africa (Washington D.C.: The World Bank).

Collier, David and Mahon James E. Jr. (1993), 'Conceptual "Stretching" Revisited: Adapting Categories in Comparative Analysis', American Political Science Review Vol. 87, No. 4, pp. 845-855.

Collier P.; Alcira K.; Collin S. Scott and Margaret A. (2000), Uganda: Post-Conflict Reconstruction (Washington, D.C.: World Bank).

Collier P. and Hoeffler A. (1998), On Economic Causes of War, Oxford Economic Papers 50 (1998), pp. 563-573.

Colton Timothy, J. (I979), Commissars, Commanders, and Civilian Authority: The Structure of Soviet Military Politics (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press)

Colville, H. Sir (1895), The Land of the Nile Springs : Being Chiefly an Account of How We Fought Kabarega (London : Edward Arnold).

Cooper, Neil and Pugh, Michael (2002), Security Sector Transformation in Post-Conflict Societies; *Conflict, Security & Development Group (CSDG)*, Working Paper No. 5.

Crocker, Chester A. (1974), 'Military Dependence: the Colonial Legacy in Africa.' The Journal of Modern African Studies, 12, pp 265-286.

Cumming Gordon D. (2011), 'Burying the Hatchet? Britain and France in the Democratic Republic of Congo', *The Journal of Modern African Studies*, 49, pp 547-573.

Cutright P. (1965), 'Political Structure, Economic Development and National Security Programs' *American Journal of Sociology*, 70, 537- 548.

Cutright P. (1963), 'National Political Development: Measurement and Analysis' *American Sociological Review*, Vol. 28, No. 2 pp. 253-264.

Dahl, R. A. (1957), 'The concept of power'. *Behavioral Science*, 2, pp. 202-210.

Dahl, Robert A. (1961), 'The Behavioral Approach in Political Science: Epitaph for a Monument to a Successful Protest,' American Political Science Review, 55; pp. 770–71.

Darnolf, S. (1997), Democratic Electioneering in Southern Africa: The Contrasting Cases of Botswana and Zimbabwe: Göteborg Studies in Politics, Volume 45 (Göteborg University, Dept. of Political Science).

Davoodi H.; Clements B.; Schiff J. & Debaere P. (2001), 'Military Spending, the Peace Dividend, and Fiscal Adjustment', IMF Staff Papers, Vol.48, No.2.

Decalo, S. (1998), The Stable Minority: Civilian Rule in Africa, 1960-1990', (Gainesville, FL.: Florida Academic Press).

Decalo S. (1990), Coups and Army Rule in Africa: Motivations and Constraints, 2nd Edition (New Haven, CT.: Yale University Press).

Department for International Development, DfID (1999), Uganda: Country Strategy Paper 1999 (London: DFID).

Department for International Development, DfID (2002a), Understanding and Supporting Security Sector Reform (London: DFID).

Department for International Development, DfID (2002b), Safety, Security and Accessible Justice: Putting Policy into Practice (London: DFID).

Derks, Maria, (2008), 'Security Sector Reform as Development Policy: A Closer Look at the Link between Security and Development'. Paper presented at the ISA Annual Convention in San Francisco.

Deutsch K.W. (1961), 'Social Mobilization and Political Development', *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 55, No. 3, pp. 493-514.

Diamond, Larry J. and Plattner Marc F (1996), Civil-Military Relations and Democracy (Baltimore MD.: JHU Press).

Diamond, Larry J. (1995), 'Promoting Democracy in Africa: US and International Policies in Transition' in Harbeson J. and Rothschild D. Eds. Africa in World Politics: Post-Cold War Challenges (Boulder CO.: Westview Press), pp. 250-277.

Diez, Thomas (2005), "Constructing the Self and Changing Others: Reconsidering `Normative Power Europe'", Millennium - Journal of International Studies 2005 33:3 pp. 613-636.

DiMaggio, P., and W. Powell (1983), 'The Iron Cage Revisited: Institutional Isomorphism and Collective Rationality in Organizational Fields', *American Sociological Review*, 48, pp. 147–60.

Dobbins J., McGinn John G., Crane K., Jones Seth G., DeGrease Beth C. (2007), The Beginner's Guide to Nation-Building (Arlington, VA: Rand Corporation).

Dobbins J., McGinn John G., Crane K., Jones Seth G., Lal R., Rathmell A., Swanger R. and Timilsina A. (2003), America's Role in Nation-Building: From Germany to Iraq (Arlington, VA: Rand Corporation).

Dokos, Thanos P. (2007), Security Sector Transformation in South-eastern Europe and the Middle East, (Amsterdam: IOS Press).

Doornbos M. (2001), ''Good Governance': The Rise and Decline of a Policy Metaphor?' *The Journal of Development Studies*, 37:6, 93-108.

Doornbos, M. (2000), 'Assessing Institutional Interventions', in Martin Doornbos, *Institutionalising Development Policies and Resource Strategies in Eastern Africa and India: Developing Winners and Losers*, (Basingstoke: Macmillan), pp.250–60.

Doornbos, M. (1995), 'State Formation Processes under External Supervision: Reflections on 'Good Governance', in: Olav Stokke (ed.) *Aid and Political Conditionality* (London: Frank Cass) pp.371–391.

Doornbos, M. (1971), 'Concept-making: The Case of Political Penetration'; Development and Change, Volume 2, Issue 2, pages 98–106.

Downing B. M. (1988), 'Constitutionalism, Warfare, and Political change in Early Modern Europe'; *Theory and Society*, 17:1, pp 7-56.

Doyle S. (2006), Crisis and Decline in Bunyoro: Population and Environment in Western Uganda, 1860-1955 (Oxford: James Currey).

Driberg, Jack H. (1923), The Lango: A Nilotic Tribe of Uganda (London: T. Fisher Unwin).

Driel-Murray, C. Van (2003): 'Ethnic Soldiers: The Experience of the Lower Rhine Tribes', in Grünewald, T. and Seibel, S (eds.): *Kontinuität und Diskontinuität. Germania inferior am Beginn und am Ende der römischen Herrschaft*. Beiträge des deutsch-niederländischen Kolloquiums im Nijmegen 2001, Ergänzungsbände zum

Reallexikon der Germanischen Altertumskunde 35, (Berlin: Walter de Gruyter) pp. 200-217.

Duchêne, François (1972), 'Europe's Role in World Peace', in Europe Tomorrow: Sixteen Europeans Look Ahead, ed. Richard Mayne (London: Fontana).

Dull, M. (2006). 'Why PART? The Institutional Politics of Presidential Budget Reform'; *Journal of Public Administration, Research and Theory* 16, pp. 187-215.

Easterly, W. (2001), The Elusive Quest for Growth: Economists' Adventures and Misadventures in the Tropics (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press).

Ebeling Richard M., Ed. (1990), Money, Method, and the Market Process: Essays by Ludwig von Mises (Norwell, Mass.: Kluwer Academic Press, 1990).

Edmunds, Timothy (2007), Security sector reform in transforming societies: Croatia, Serbia and Montenegro (Manchester: Manchester University Press)

Egnell, R. and Haldén, P. (2009), 'Laudable, Ahistorical and Overambitious: Security Sector Reform Meets State Formation Theory.', *Conflict, Security & Development*, 9: 1, 27 — 54

Emsley, Clive (1999), 'A Typology of Nineteenth-century Police'; *Crime, History & Societies* Vol. 3 No. 1, pp. 29-44.

Etzioni, Amitai (1961), A Comparative Analysis of Complex Organizations (New York: Free Press).

European Commission (2007), The EU in the World: The Foreign Policy of the European Union, Directorate-General for Communication, Publications.

European Union (2003), A Secure Europe in a Better World: European Security Strategy (Brussels: EU); at http://www.consilium.europa.eu/uedocs/cmsUpload/78367.pdf, accessed on 19 July 2012.

Evans, P. (2004), 'Development as Institutional Change: The Pitfalls of Monocropping and the Potentials of Deliberation', *Studies in Comparative International Development*, 38 (4), 30-52.

Evans Peter B.; Rueschemeyer D. & Skocpol, T. Eds. (1985), Bringing the State Back In (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Farrell, Theo (2002), 'Constructivist Security Studies: Portrait of a Research Program', International Studies Review; 4:1 pp. 49-72.

Fatton Jr., Robert (1995), 'Africa in the Age of Democratization: The Civic Limitations of Civil Society' African Studies Review, Vol. 38, No. 2 pp. 67-99.

Feaver Peter D. (1996), 'The Civil-Military Problematique: Huntington, Janowitz, and the Question of Civilian Control', Armed Forces & Society 1996 23: 149.

Ferguson, A. (1783), An Essay on the History of Civil Society (London: T.Cadell).

Finer Samuel E. (1970), Comparative Government (London: Allen Lane).
Finer Samuel E. (1962), The Man on Horseback: The Role of the Military in Politics (London: Pall Mall).

Finkle. Jason L and Gable, Richard W (1971), Political Development and Social Change (New York: John Wiley & Sons).

Finnegan L. & Flew C. (2008), Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration in Uganda: Mini Case Study (Saferworld Project on DDR and Human Security); http://www.saferworld.org.uk/DDR%20Mini%20Case%20Study%20Uganda.pdf, accessed on 17 September 2014.

Finnemore M. and Sikkink K. (1998), 'International Norm Dynamics and Political Change'. *International Organization* 52, 4, pp. 887–917

Fischer, Wolfram and Peter Lundgren (1975), 'The Recruitment and Training of Administrative and Technical Personnel' in Tilly C. (ed.), *The Formation of National States in Western Europe* (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp.380-455.

Fogarty, T.J., & Dirsmith, M.W. (2001), 'Organizational Socialization as Instrument and Symbol: An Extended Institutional Theory Perspective'. *Human Resource Development Quarterly*, 12(3), pp. 247-66.

Forster, A.; Edmunds, T.; Cottey A. eds. (2002) The Challenge of Military Reform in Postcommunist Europe: Building Professional Armed Forces (Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan).

Fortna, Page V. (2004), 'Does Peacekeeping Keep Peace? International Intervention and the Duration of Peace after Civil War' International Studies Quarterly 48, pp. 269–292.

Foster, M.; Brown, A.; Norton, A.; and Naschold, F.; (2000), 'The Status of Sector Wide Approaches', (London: ODI).

Freeman, John, and Michael T. Hannan (1989), 'Technical Innovation Inertia and organizational Failure', Working paper, Johnson Graduate School of Management, Cornell University.

Fried, Morton H. (1967), The Evolution Of Political Society An Essay In Political Anthropology (New York: Random House).

Frost, M. (2009), 'Ethical Competence in International Relations', *Ethics and International Affairs*, Vol. 23 No. 2, pp. 91-100.

Frost, Mervyn (1996), Ethics in International Relations: A Constitutive Theory (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Frumkin, P., & Galaskiewicz, J. (2004), 'Institutional Isomorphism and Public Sector Organizations'; *Journal of Public Administration Research and Theory* 14, pp. 283-307.

Fukuyama, Francis (2006), 'Introduction: Nation-Building and the Failure of Institutional Memory' in Fukuyama, Francis ed., *Nation-Building: Beyond Afghanistan and Iraq* (Baltimore, MD: The John Hopkins University Press) pp. 1-15.

Fukuyama, F. (2005), Do we really know how to promote democracy? Remarks made to the Foreign Policy Association, http://www.fpa.org/usr_doc/Francis_Fukuyama.pdf, accessed on 22 March 2012.

Fukuyama, F. (2004), State-Building: Governance and World Order in the Twenty-First Century (London: Profile Books).

Fullerton, G.S., (1920), An Introduction to Philosophy (London: Macmillan & Co).

Fusato M. (2003), 'Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration of Ex-Combatants' in Beyond Intractability, eds., Guy Burgess and Heidi Burgess; Conflict Research Consortium, University of Colorado, Boulder, http://www.beyondintractability.org/essay/demobilization, accessed on 15 September 2014.

Galaskiewicz J. and Wasserman S. (1989), 'Mimetic Processes within an Interorganizational Field: An Empirical Test', *Administrative Science Quarterly*, Vol. 34, No. 3. pp. 454-479.

Gallie, W.B (1956), 'Essentially Contested Concepts', *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society, Vol.56*, pp.167-198.

Garnett, John C., (1984), Common Sense and the Theory of International Politics (London: Macmillan).

Gellner, E. (2006), Nations and Nationalism (Oxford: Blackwell).

Ghani A. and Lockhart C. (2009), Fixing Failed States: A Framework for Rebuilding a Fractured World (Oxford: Oxford University Press)

Giddens, A. (1992), 'Introduction', in, Weber, Max 2nd ed, 'The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism' (Routledge: London), pp. vii-xxiv.

Giddens, A. (1984), The Constitution of Society: Outline of the Theory of Structuration (Cambridge: Polity Press).

Giddens, A. (1977) Studies in Social and Political Theory (London: Hutchinson).

Giedymin, Jerzy (Dec., 1975), 'Antipositivism in Contemporary Philosophy of Social Science and Humanities', The British Journal for the Philosophy of Science, Vol. 26, No. 4 pp. 275-301.

Gleichmann, Colin Michael Odenwald, Kees Steenken and Adrian Wilkinson (2004), Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration: A Practical Field and Classroom Guide (GTZ, NODEFIC, PPC, SNDC) http://www.smallarmsnet.org/pubs/gtzddr.pdf, 27 October 2007.

Giustozzi A. (2009), 'Bureaucratic Façade and Political Realities of Disarmament and Demobilisation in Afghanistan', in Berdal M.& Ucko D. eds., Reintegration of Armed Groups After Conflict: Politics, Violence and Transition (Oxford: Routledge), pp. 67-88.

Gleichmann C.; Odenwald M.; Steenken K. & Wilkinson A. (2004), Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration: A Practical Field and Classroom Guide (Frankfurt: GTZ).

Goldman Ralph M. (1969), 'A Transactional Theory of Political Integration and Arms Control'; *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 63, No. 3 pp. 719-733.

Gompert, David C., Oliker, Olga; Stearns, Brooke; Crane, Keith K.; Riley, Jack (2007), Making Liberia Safe: Transformation of the National Security Sector (Washington, D.C.: Rand Corporation).

Gordon, Peake and Scheye, Eric (2005), 'To Arrest Insecurity: Time For a Revised Security Sector Reform Agenda', Conflict, Security and Development, Vol. 5, No.3, pp. 295 – 327.

Graham, Norman A (1994), Seeking Security and Development: The Impact of Military Spending and Arms Transfers (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Graubard, S.R. (1947), 'Military Demobilization in Great Britain Following the First World War', *The Journal of Modern History*, Vol. 19, No. 4., pp. 297-311.

Gray, Collin S. (1994), Villains, Victims and sheriffs: Strategic Studies and Security for an Inter-War Period (Hull: Hull University Press).

Greene, O. (2003), 'Security Sector Reform, Conflict Prevention and Regional Perspectives', *Journal of Security Sector Management*, Vol. 1, No. 1.

Grew R. Ed. (1978), Crisis of Political Development in Europe and the United States (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press).

Grindle, Merilee S. (2004), 'Good Enough Governance: Poverty Reduction and Reform in Developing Countries'. *Governance: An International Journal of Policy, Administration, and Institutions*, Vol. 17, No. 4, pp. 525–548.

Grindle, Merilee S. and Thomas, John W. (1991), Public Choices and Policy Change: The Political Economy of Reform in Developing Countries (Baltimore, MD: The John Hopkins University Press).

Gusfield, Joseph R. (1971), 'Tradition and Modernity': Misplaced Polarities in the Study of Social Change' in Finkle. Jason L and Gable, Richard W, Political Development and Social Change (New York: John Wiley & Sons), pp.15-26.

Gutteridge, W. F (1969), The Military in African Politics (London: Methuen & Co.).

_____. (1962), Armed Forces in New States (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Gwinyayi Dzinesa A. (2007), 'Post-conflict Disarmament, 'demobilization', and Reintegration of Former Combatants in Southern Africa', *International Studies Perspectives*, Volume 8, Issue 1, Page 73-89.

Hadzˇic´, M., (2004), 'The Concept of Security Sector Reform' in Fluri, P. and Hadzˇic´, M., (eds), Sourcebook on Security Sector Reform (DCAF and Centre for Civil-Military Relations, Geneva/Belgrade), pp. 171-192.

Hagman, L and Nielsen, Z (2003), A Framework for Lasting Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration of Former Combatants in Crisis situations; IPA Workshop Report, New York; at: http://www.ipinst.org/media/pdf/publications/framework_for_ddr.pdf, accessed on 14 July 2014.

Hammond, J. L.; Hammond, B. B. (1920), The Town Labourer, 1760-1832: The New Civilisation (London: Longmans, Green and Co.).

Hänggi, Heine (2004), 'Conceptualizing Security Sector Reform and Reconstruction' in Bryden, Alan and Hänggi, Heine eds., Reform and Reconstruction of the Security Sector, Geneva Centre for the Democratic Control of Armed Forces (LIT: Münster), pp. 3-20.

Hannan M. T. and Freeman J. (1984), 'Structural Inertia and Organizational Change'; *American Sociological Review*, 49, pp. 149–64.

Hannan Michael T. and Freeman John H (1977), 'The Population Ecology of Organisations', American Journal of Sociology Vol. 82, pp. 929-964.

Hansen, Holger B. (1991a), 'The Pride and Decline of a Migrant Community: The Nubians in Uganda and the Military Profession', in Lundahl M. & Svensson Th. eds., Agrarian Society in History (London: Routledge), pp. 318-342.

Hansen, Holger B. (1991b), 'Pre-Colonial Immigrants and Colonial Servants: The Nubians in Uganda Revisited', African Affairs 90, pp. 559-580.

Hansen, Holger B. and Twaddle, M. eds. (1991), 'Introduction' in Changing Uganda: The Dilemmas of Structural Adjustment & Revolutionary Change. (London: James Currey), pp. 1-19.

_____. (1988), Uganda Now: Between Decay and Development (London: James Currey).

Hansen, Holger Bernt (1977), Ethnicity and Military Rule in Uganda: A Study of Ethnicity as a Political Factor in Uganda. Scandinavian Institute of African Studies, Research Report Series Volume 43 (Uppsala: Nordiska Afrikainstitutet).

Hanson, N.R. (1958), Patterns of Discovery: An Inquiry into the Conceptual Foundations of Science (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Harper, John Lamberton (1996), American Visions of Europe: Franklin D. Roosevelt, George F. Kennan, and Dean G. Acheson (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Harriman E. (1979), 'The British Connection: Special Report on how British Technology Supported Amin's Toppling Regime'. *New Scientist*, Vol. 82, No. 1154, pp. 432-434.

Hart, Bushnell A. Ed, (1918), Selected Addresses and Public Papers of Woodrow Wilson (New York, NY: Boni & Liveright).

Hartley, L.P. (1953), The Go-Between (London: Hamish Hamilton).

Hearn, J. (1999), 'Foreign Aid, Democratisation and Civil Society in Africa: A Study of South Africa, Ghana and Uganda', Institute of Development Studies, University of Sussex, Discussion paper 368, at http://www.eldis.org/vfile/upload/1/document/0708/DOC6995.pdf, accessed on 24 April 2012.

Heisenberger, Wener (1971), Physics and Beyond: Encounters and Conversations (New York: Harper and Row).

Helleiner, Gerry (2000), 'External Conditionally, Local Ownership and Development,' in Freedman J., ed Transforming Development - Foreign Aid for a Changing World (Toronto: University of Toronto Press) pp. 82-98.

Helleiner G *et al.* (1995), Report of the Group of Independent Advisers on Development Cooperation Issues between Tanzania and its Aid Donors.

Hendrickson, Dylan (1999), A Review of Security Sector Reform, Conflict, Security and Development Group Working Paper No.1 (London: CSDG).

Hendrickson, Dylan (2005), 'Overview of Regional Survey Findings and Policy Implications for Donors'in OECD, Security System Reform and Governance,

Hettne, Bjorn (1990), *Development Theory and the Three Worlds* (Essex: Longmans).

Hitchcock, N (2002), 'Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration: the Case of Angola', in Peacekeeping pp. 36-40, http://www.peacewomen.org/resources/Angola/ACCORDDDRAngola.pdf, 27 October 2007.

Hills, A. (2000), 'Defence Diplomacy and Security Sector Reform', *Contemporary Security Policy*, 21:1, pp. 46-67

Hills A. (1996), 'Towards a Critique of Policing and National Development in Africa', *The Journal of Modern African Studies*, Vol. 34, No. 2, pp. 271-291.

Hitchcock, N. (2002), 'Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration: the Case of Angola', in Peacekeeping pp. 36-40, http://www.peacewomen.org/resources/Angola/ACCORDDDRAngola.pdf, 27 October 2013.

Hobbes, Thomas (1968) Leviathan (Harmondsworth: Penguin).

Hoddie, M. and Hartzell, C. (2005), 'Power Sharing in Peace Settlements: Initiating the Transition from Civil War' in Roeder P. and Rothschild D., eds. Sustainable Peace: Power and Democracy after Civil Wars (Ithaca: Cornell University Press) pp. 83-106.

Hollis, Martin (1996), 'The Last Post?', in Smith, Steve; Booth, Ken and Zalewski, Marysia eds. International Relations theory: Positivism & Beyond (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press), pp. 301-308.

Hollis Martin and Smith Steve (1990), Explaining and Understanding International Relations (Oxford: Clarendon Press).

Horowitz, Donald L (1985), Ethnic Groups in Conflict (Berkeley, CA: California University Press).

Horowitz Michael C. (2010), The Diffusion of Military Power: Causes and Consequences for International Politics (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press).

Houtzager, P. P. and Moore, M., Eds. (2003), Changing Paths: International Development and the New Politics of Inclusion (Ann Arbor, MI.: University of Michigan Press).

Howe, H.M. (2001), Ambiguous Order: Military Forces in African States (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Human Rights Watch (2001), Uganda in Eastern DRC: Fueling Political and Ethnic Strife, Vol. 13, No. 2 (A), March 2001.

_____. (2003), Abducted and Abused: Renewed Conflict in Northern Uganda, Vol. 15, No. 12 (A).

_____. (2005), Uprooted and Forgotten: Impunity and Human Rights Abuses in Northern Uganda, Vol. 17, No. 12(A).

_____. (2009), Open Secret: Illegal Detention and Torture by the Joint Anti-terrorism Task Force in Uganda.

_____. (2003), Human Rights Watch World Report 2003 - Uganda, 14 January 2003: http://www.refworld.org/docid/3e28183418.html (accessed 31 August 2014).

_____. (2005), Human Rights Watch World Report 2005, available at: https://www.essex.ac.uk/armedcon/story_id/Humanrightswatchworldreport2005%5B1%5D.pdf (accessed 31 August 2014).

Hume D (1978), An Enquiry Concerning Human Understanding (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Hunter, Wendy (1998), 'Civil-Military Relations in Argentina, Brazil and Chile: Present Trends, Future Prospects', in F. Aguero and J. Stark, eds., Fault Lines of Democracy in Post-Transition Latin America. (Miami: The North –South Centre Press), pp.299-319.

Huntington, Samuel P (1968), Political Order in Changing Societies (New Haven: Yale University Press).

Huntington, Samuel P. The Soldier and the State: The Theory and Politics of Civil-Military Relations. Cambridge: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1957.

Huntington, S.P. and Nelson, JM (1976), No Easy Choice: Political Participation in Developing Countries (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press).

Hutchful, Eboe (2000), 'Understanding the African Security Crisis' in Musah Abdul-Futau and Fayemi, J'Kayode, Mercenaries: An African Security Dilemma (London: Pluto Press), pp. 210-232.

Hutchful, Eboe (2003), Security Sector Governance in Africa Paper presented at the SSG Workshop, Elmina Ghana, 24-28 November 2003.

Hutchful, Eboe and Fayemi, 'Kayode J. (2005), 'Security Sector Reform in Africa' in OECD, Security Sector Reform and Governance, DAC Guidelines and Reference

Series, pp. 71-90; http://www.oecd.org/dataoecd/8/39/31785288.pdf , 21 Februrary 2011.

Hutchful, E. (1996) 'The civil society debate in Africa', International Journal, Africa's Prospects; Vol. 5, No. 1, pp. 54-77.

Hutchings, K (2010), Global Ethics: An Introduction (Cambridge: Polity).

Ibingira Grace S.K. (1973), The Forging of an African Nation: The Political and Constitutional Evolution of Uganda from Colonial Rule to Independence, 1894-1962 (New York NY: The Viking Press).

Ingham, K. (1994), Obote : A Political Biography (London: Routledge).

International Crisis Group (2010), LRA: A Regional Strategy beyond Killing Kony, Africa Report N°157, available at http://www.refworld.org/pdfid/4bd9483d2.pdf, accessed on 23 July 2014.

International Court of Justice (ICJ) (2005), Case Concerning Armed Activities on the Territory of the Congo (Democratic Republic of the Congo Vs. Uganda) (The Hague: ICJ).

International Institute for Strategic Studies, IISS (2012), The Military Balance 2012 (London: Routledge).

International Monetary Fund (2007), Code of Good Practices on Fiscal Transparency (Washington, DC: IMF), www.imf.org/external/np/fad/trans/code.htm#code , accessed on 23 December 2012.

International Monetary Fund (2001), Strengthening Country Ownership of Fund-Supported Programs, (IMF: Policy Development and review Department).

Jackson Robert H.; Sørensen, Georg (2007), Introduction to International Relations: Theories and Approaches (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Jackson, Robert H. (1987), 'Quasi-States, Dual Regimes, and Neoclassical Theory: International Jurisprudence and the Third World' International Organization, Vol.41, No.4, pp. 519-549.

Jackson, Robert H. (1990), Quasi-States: Sovereignty, International Relations, and the Third World (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Jackson, Robert H. (1992), 'The Security Dilemma in Africa' in: The Insecurity Dilemma: National Security of Third World States (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp. 11-36.

Jackson, Robert H. and Rosberg, Carl G. (1982), 'Why Africa's Weak States Persist: The Empirical and the Juridical in Statehood', World Politics, Vol. 35, No. 1. pp. 1-24.

Jackson, Robert H. and Rosberg, Carl G. (1986), 'Sovereignty and Underdevelopment: Juridical Statehood in the African Crisis', *The Journal of Modern African Studies*, Vol. 24, No. 1. pp. 1-31.

Janowitz, Morris (1971), The Professional Soldier: A Social and Political Portrait. (New York, NY.: Free Press).

Jenkins, J. Craig, and Kposowa, Augustine (1990), "Explaining Military Coups d'Etat: Black Africa, 1957-1984." American Sociological Review, 55:861-75.

Jervis, R. (1978), 'Cooperation under the Security Dilemma'; World Politics 30(1) pp. 167-214.

Job Brian L. ed. (1992), The Insecurity Dilemma: National Security of Third World States (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Job, Brian L. (1992), 'The Insecurity Dilemma: National, Regime, and State Securities' in the Third World' in Job, Brian L. ed. *The Insecurity Dilemma: National Security of Third World States* (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp. 11-36.

Johnston Harry J. (1902), The Uganda Protectorate, Vol. II (London: Hutchinson and Co.)

Jörgel M. (2013), 'Security Sector Reform in Sub-Saharan Africa: A New Playground, Different Rules, New Players?', in Ekengren M. and Simons G., Eds., *The Politics of Security Sector Reform: Challenges and Opportunities for the European Union's Global Role* (Farnham, Surrey: Ashgate), pp. 243-258.

Johari J.C. (1982), Comparative Politics (New Delhi: Sterling).

Jones, Stephen (2000), 'The Limits of Conditionality: Implications for Bilateral Donor Support for Sector Wide Approaches' DANIDA/Oxford Policy Management Institute, http://amg.um.dk/NR/rdonlyres/14F8B23E-CBBB-475E-87DF-9192DDB4D7D7/0/papir3.pdf , 25 January 2011.

Kalule, Y.S Major (1996), Final Draft Report on Strengthening of Budgetary and Accounting Procedures in the Ministry of Defence, 1st Consultants Report (unpublished report).

Kanbur, R. (2003), 'Aid, Conditionality and Debt in Africa', in Tarp F. ed., Foreign Aid and Development: Lessons Learnt and Directions for the Future (London: Routledge), pp. 318-328.

Kant, Immanuel (2003), Critique of Pure Reason, Dover Edition (Mineola, N.Y.: Dover).

Kanya-Forstner, A.S. (1971), 'Military Expansion in the Western Sudan – French and British Style', in: Gifford, P., and Louis, W.R, Eds., *France and Britain in Africa: Imperial Rivalry and Colonial Rule.* (London: Yale University Press).

Karugire, Samwiri R. (1980), A Political History of Uganda (London: Heinemann).

_____. (1985), The Roots of Instability in Uganda (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Kasozi, A.B.K. (1995), The Social Origins of Violence in Uganda, 1964-1985 (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press).

Kastfelt, Niels, Ed. (2005), Religion and African Civil Wars (London: C. Hurst & Co.).

Kayihura K. Colonel (2000), Uganda: The Integration of Child Soldiers into the School System, Paper presented to the Association for the Development of Education in Africa (ADEA), available at: http://www.adeanet.org/adeaPortal/publications/docs/Uganda-eng.pdf, accessed on 14 June 2014.

Keen D. (2012), Useful Enemies: When Waging Wars Is More Important Than Winning Them (New Haven, CT.: Yale University Press).

Keen D. (1998), The Economic Functions of Violence in Civil Wars, International Institute for Strategic Studies, Adelphi Paper No.320 (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Kezar, Adrianna J. (2001), Understanding and Facilitating Organizational Change in the 21st Century: Recent Research and Conceptualizations (New York, N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons).

Kelling George L. and Moore Mark H. (1988), 'The Evolving Strategy of Policing,' *Perspectives on Policing,* No. 4 (Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice/Harvard University).

Kemp, Kenneth W.; Hudlin Charles (1997), 'Civil Supremacy over the Military: Its Nature and Limits' Armed Forces & Society 1992 19: 7.

Kerlinger, F.N. (1986), Foundations of Behavioural Research, 3rd ed. (Orlando, FL: Rinehart and Winston).

Khiddu-Makubuya, E. (1989), 'Paramilitarism and Human Rights', in Rupesinghe K. ed., Conflict Resolution in Uganda (Athens: Ohio University Press), pp. 141-157.

Kieh, George Klay Jr. and Agbese, Pita Ogaba, (2004), 'The Military Albatross and Politics in Africa', in, Kieh, George Klay Jr. and Agbese, Pita Ogaba, The Military and Politics in Africa: From Engagement to Democratic and Constitutional Control (Aldershot: Ashgate), pp. 1-16.

Killingray, D. & Plaut M. (2010), Fighting for Britain: African Soldiers in the Second World War (Rochester, NY: Boydell & Brewer Ltd).

Killingray, David (1986), 'The Maintenance of Law and Order in British Colonial Africa', *African Affairs*, Vol. 85, No. 340 pp. 411-437.

King, C. (1997), Ending Civil Wars, Adelphi Paper 308 (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Kingma, K. (2002), 'Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration and Peace building in Africa' in Newman E, and Schnabel A. eds., Recovering from Civil Conflict: Reconciliation, Peace and Development (London: Frank Cass), pp. 181-201.

Kingma, K. (2000), Demobilization in Sub-Saharan Africa: The Development and Security Impacts (London: Macmillan).

Kingma K. (1997), 'Demobilization of Combatants after Civil Wars in Africa and their Reintegration into Civilian Life', Policy Sciences, 30:30, August 1997 (pp. 151-165),

Kingma, K. (1994), Demobilization in the Horn of Africa, Proceedings of the IRG Workshop, Addis Ababa, 4-7 Dec 1994, Bonn Centre for International Conversion, http://www.bicc.de/publications/briefs/brief04/brief4.pdf , 26 November 2007.

Knack, S. and Rahman, A. (2007), 'Donor fragmentation and Bureaucratic Quality in Aid Recipients': *Journal of Development Economics*, 83 pp. 176–197.

Knight, M (2009), Security Sector Reform: Post-Conflict Integration (University of Birmingham: Global Facilitation Network for Security Sector Reform) at, http://www.humansecuritygateway.com/documents/GFNSSR_SSR_PostConflictIntegration.pdf , accessed on 20 August 2012.

Knight M.; Loayza N. & Villanueva D (1996), 'The Peace Dividend: Military Spending Cuts and Economic Growth'; IMF Staff Papers, Vol.43, No.1.

Kolodziej, Edward A. and Harkavy, Robert E eds., (1982), Security Policies of Developing Countries (Lexington Mass.: Lexington Books).

Krause, Keith and Williams, Michael C (1996), 'Broadening the Agenda of Security Studies: Politics and Methods' Mershon International Studies Review, Vol. 40, No. 2. pp. 229-254.

Kumar, Krishan (1993), 'Civil Society: An Inquiry into the Usefulness of an Historical Term', The British Journal of Sociology, Vol. 44, No. 3 pp. 375-395.

Kutesa P. Major General (2006), Uganda's Revolution 1979-1986: How I saw It (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Kyemba, Henry (1977), A State of Blood: The Inside Story of Idi Amin (New York, NY: Grosset & Dunlap).

Laitin, David D. (1976), 'The Political Economy of Military Rule in Somalia', *The Journal of Modern African Studies*, Vol. 14, No. 3, pp. 449-468.

Lamb G. (2000), Reflections on demilitarization: A Southern African perspective, *International Peacekeeping*, 7:3, 120-136.

Lamwaka C. (2002), 'The Peace Process in Northern Uganda, 1986-1990' in Okello Lucima ed., *Protracted Conflict, Elusive Peace: Initiatives to End the Violence in Northern Uganda* (London: Conciliation Resources), pp. 28-33.

Lasswell, H. (1936), Politics: Who Gets What, When, and How (New York, N.Y.: McGraw-Hill).

Lasswell H. and Kaplan A. (1950), Power and Society: A Framework for Political Inquiry (New Haven, CT.: Yale University Press).

Lauren, P.G. (2011), The Evolution of International Human Rights: Visions Seen (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press).

Lavender T, Sibbring R. Wheeler D. and Fraser J. Lt Col. (1997), Main Phase of the Uganda Defence Efficiency Study Project; 2nd Consultants' Report.

Le Roux L.; Rupiya M. and Ngoma N., Eds., (2004), Guarding the Guardians: Parliamentary Oversight and Civil–Military Relations: The Challenges for SADC (Pretoria: Institute for Security Studies).

Lebow, Richard N. (1988), 'Interdisciplinary Research and the Future of Peace and Security Studies', *Political Psychology, 9:3*, pp. 507-543.

Legum, C. (1988), 'Uganda: The Military and Politics--Why Museveni Can't Survive' Third World Reports (Richmond, Surrey, United Kingdom).

Lenski Gerhard E. (1966), Power and Privilege: A Theory of Social Stratification (New York, NY: McGraw-Hill).

Lerner D. (1958), The Passing of Traditional Society (New York: Free Press of Glencoe).

Lewis, I.M. (1969), 'Nationalism and Particularism in Somalia', in Gulliver P.H. (ed.), *Tradition and Transition in East Africa: Studies of the Tribal Element in the Modern Era* (Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press), pp. 339-62.

Leys C. (1977), The Rise and Fall of Development Theory (Oxford: James Currey).

Leys C. (1976), 'The 'Overdeveloped' Post-Colonial State: A Re-evaluation' *Review of African Political Economy, 5* pp. 39-48.

Leys C. and Saul John S. (1994), 'Liberation without Democracy? The SWAPO crisis of 1976' *Journal of Southern African Studies*, Vol. 20, No. 1, pp. 123-147.

Licklider R. (1995), 'The Consequences of Negotiated Settlements in Civil Wars, 1945-1993', The American Political Science Review, 89:3, pp. 681-690.

Light, M. (1981), Approaches to the Study of Soviet Foreign Policy, Review of International Studies (1981), 7, 127-143

Lilly, D. and von Tagen Michael P. (2002), The Privatisation of Security and Security Sector Reform; (London: International Alert).

Lindemann S. (2011), 'Just another Change of Guard? Broad-based Politics and Civil War in Museveni's Uganda', African Affairs, 110:440 pp. 387–416.

Lindley-French, Julian (2004), 'The Revolution in Security Affairs: Hard and Soft Security Dynamics in the 21st Century', European Security', 13:1-2, pp. 1-15.

Lipset Martin S. (1996), American Exceptionalism: A Double-edged Sword (New York, N.Y.: W.W. Norton).

Lipset, Martin S. (1960), Political Man: The Social Bases of Politics (London: Heinemann).

Locke, John (1961), An Essay Concerning Humane Understanding, 2nd Ed. (London: John Dent & sons).

Lokuji A.S.; Abatneh A.S. and Wani C.K. (2009), Police Reform in Southern Sudan (Ottawa: North South Institute).

Low, D.A. and Robert C. P. eds. (1960), Buganda and British Overrule, 1900-1955 (Nairobi: Oxford University Press).

Luckham R. (2003) Democratic Strategies for Security in Transition and Conflict in Cawthra, Gavin and Luckham, Robin eds. (2003), *Governing Insecurity: Democratic Control of Military and Security* (London: Zrd Books) pp. 3-26.

Luckham R. (1998), 'Taming the Monster: Democratisation and Demilitarisation', in Hutchful, E. and Bathily, A. (eds), The Military and Militarism in Africa (Dakar: CODESRIA).

Luckham R. (1994), 'The Military, Militarization and Democratization in Africa: A Survey of Literature and Issues', African Studies Review, 37: 2, 13-75.

Luckham, R. (1982), 'French Militarism in Africa', Review of African Political Economy, No. 24, The French Connection, pp. 55-84.

Luckham R. (1974), The Nigerian Military: A Sociological Analysis of Authority and Revolt 1960-67 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Luckham R. and Hutchful E. (2010) 'Democratic and War-to-Peace Transitions and Security Sector Transformation in Africa' in Bryden, A. and Olanisakin, 'F. (eds), Security Sector Transformation in Africa, Berlin: LIT Verlag

Lugard F. D. Captain (1893), The Rise of Our East African Empire: Early Efforts in Nyasaland and Uganda, Vol. I (London: Blackwood and Sons).

Lundestad G. (2013), Introduction: The Past' in Lundestad G. ed., *International Relations Since the End of the Cold War: New and Old Dimensions* (Oxford : Oxford University Press), pp. 1-15.

Luttwak E.N. (1999), 'Give War a Chance', Foreign Affairs; 78:4, pp.36-44.

Lwanga-Lunyiigo, Samwiri (1989), 'The Colonial Roots of Internal Conflict in Uganda' in Rupesinghe, Kumar ed., *Conflict Resolution in Uganda* (Athens: Ohio University Press), pp. 24-43.

Lyons Gene M., 'The New Civil-Military Relations' The American Political Science Review, Vol. 55, No. 1 (Mar., 1961), pp. 53-63.

Macartan H. and Weinstein J. M. (2005), Disentangling the Determinants of Successful Demobilization and Reintegration, Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Political Science Association, Washington, DC. http://www.sscnet.ucla.edu/polisci/wgape/papers/9_Weinstein.pdf, 09 December 2008

MacDonald S Brian (1997), Military Spending in Developing Countries: How Much is too much? (Ottawa: Carleton University Press).

Mackie, J.L. (1977), Ethics: Inventing Right and Wrong (London: Penguin).

MacLean, I. and McMillan, A. (1996), Oxford Concise Dictionary of Politics (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Mahling-Clark K. (1996), Fostering a Farewell to Arms: Preliminary Lessons Learned in the Demobilization and Reintegration of Combatants (Washington, D.C.: USAID/CDI 1996).

Mamdani M. (2001), When Victims Became Killers: Colonialism, Nativism, and the Genocide in Rwanda (Princeton NJ: Princeton).

_____. (1983), Imperialism and Fascism in Uganda, (James Currey: Oxford).

_____. (1976), Politics and Class Formation in Uganda (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Manners, Ian (2002), 'Normative Power Europe: A Contradiction in Terms?' Journal of Common Market Studies, 40, No. 2, pp. 235-58.

Maoz Z. (1984), 'Peace by Empire? Conflict Outcomes and International Stability', 1816–1976. *Journal of Peace Research* 21:3, pp. 227–41.

Manners, Ian (2008), 'The Normative Ethics of the European Union' International Affairs, Vol. 84, No. 1 pp. 65-80.

Marley, Anthony D (1997), 'Military Downsizing in the Developing World: Process, Problems, and Possibilities', *Parameters*, Winter 1997-98, pp. 137-44, http://carlisle-www.army.mil/USAWC/Parameters/97winter/marley.htm, 20th February 2006.

Martin D. (1974), General Amin (London: Faber and Faber).

Martin, G. (1995), 'Continuity and Change in Franco-African Relations', The Journal of Modern African Studies, Vol. 33, No. 1 pp. 1-20.

Martina Fischer; Clem, McCartney and Wils, Oliver Eds., (2004), Security Sector Reform: Potentials and Challenges for Conflict Transformation, Berlin: Berghof Research Center for Constructive Conflict Management, at: http://www.berghof-handbook.net/documents/publications/dialogue2_ssr_complete.pdf , accessed on 24 December 2010.

Mathias, P., (1969), The First Industrial Nation: An Economic History of Britain 1700-1914 (London: Methuen & Co.).

Mazrui, Al-Amin A. (1986), 'The Triple Heritage of the State in Africa' in Kazancigil A. Ed. *The State in Global Perspective* (Aldershot: Gower), pp. 107-118.

McCabe Terrence J. (2004), Cattle bring us to our Enemies: Turkana Ecology, Politics, and Raiding in a Disequilibrium System (Ann Arbor, MI: University of Michigan Press).

McCarthy, T. (1978), The Critical Theory of Jurgen Habermas, (Cambridge, MA.: MIT Press)

McCord, Geoffrey Sayre (1985), 'Logical Positivism and the Demise of "Moral Science"', in Rescher, Nicholas ed. The Heritage of Logical Positivism (University of Pittsburgh Philosophy of Science Series, 1985), pp. 83-92.

McCrisken, Trevor B. (2002), American Exceptionalism and the Legacy of Vietnam: U.S. Foreign Policy Since 1974 (Basingstoke: Pelgrave Macmillan).

McGowan, Patrick J. (2005), 'Coups and Conflict in West Africa, 1955-2004: Part I, Theoretical Perspectives' Armed Forces & Society vol. 32 no. 1, pp. 5-23

McIntyre Alasdair (1967), A Short History of Ethics (London: Routledge).

McMullin J. (2013), Ex-Combatants and the Post-Conflict State: Challenges of Reintegration (London: Palgrave Macmillan).

McNamara, R. (I992), 'The post-Cold War World: Implications for Military Expenditure in the Developing Countries.' Proceedings of the World Bank Annual Conference on Development Economics, I991 (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank).

Mearsheimer John J. (1990), 'Why We Will Soon Miss The Cold War'. *The Atlantic Monthly,* Volume 266, No. 2; pp. 35-50.

Melmot, Sébastien (2009), 'Candide in Congo: The Expected Failure of Security Sector Reform (SSR)' *Institut Français des Relations Internationales (Ifri), Focus Stratégique n° 9 bis*.

Merlingen, Michael (2007), "Everything Is Dangerous: A Critique of `Normative Power Europe'" Security Dialogue 38: 435-453.

Meyer, J., & Rowan, B. (1977), 'Institutional Organizations: Formal Structure as Myth and Ceremony', *American Journal of Sociology*, 83 (2), pp. 340–361.

Michelmore, P. (1962), Einstein: Profile of the Man (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company).

Middleton, John and Tait, David (1958), Tribes without Rulers: Studies in African Segmentary Systems (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul).

Mill, John S. (1866), Auguste Comte and Positivism (London: N. Trubner & Co).

Minority Rights Group (1989), *Uganda*, Report No 66, (London: MRG).

Mitchell, Brian R. and Deane P. (1962), Abstract of British Historical Statistics (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Mill, John S. (1874), A System of Logic: Ratiocinative and Inductive 8th Edition (New York, N.Y.: Harper and Brothers).

Mkandawire, Thandika (2001), 'Thinking about Developmental States in Africa', *Cambridge Journal of Economics*; 25; pp.289-313.

Mlambo, Norman (2011), 'Conceptualising and Implementing a Transformative African Union Policy on Security Sector Reform', in Bryden, A and Olonisakin, F. Eds, *Security Sector Transformation in Africa* (Geneva: DCAF), pp. 167-186.

Mobekk, Eirin (2010), 'Security Sector Reform and the Challenges of Ownership' in Sedra, Mark ed. The Future of Security Sector reform (Ontario: The Centre for International Governance Innovation, CIGI), pp. 230-243.

Modelski, George (1964), 'International Settlement of Internal War' in Rosenau, J. ed. *International aspects of Civil Strife* (Princeton: Princeton University Press).

Moore, George E. (2004), Principa Ethica (Mineola, N.Y.: Dover).

More, Sir Thomas (2009), Utopia: On the Best State of a Republic and on the New Island of Utopia, (Auckland: The Floating Press).

Morsink, J. (1999), The Universal Declaration of Human Rights: Origins, Drafting, and Intent (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press).

Mosca, Gaetano (1939), The Ruling Class (New York: MacGraw-Hill).

Moyse-Bartlett H. (1956), The King's African Rifles: A Study in the Military History of East and Central Africa, 1890-1945 (Aldershot: Gale and Polden).

Mudoola, Dan (1991), 'Institution-building: The Case of the NRM and the Military in Uganda 1986-9' in Hansen, Holger B. and Twaddle, M., eds., *Changing Uganda: The Dilemmas of Structural Adjustment & Revolutionary Change*. (London: James Currey), pp. 239-246.

_____. (1989), 'Communal Conflict in the Military and its Political Consequences', in Rupesinghe, Kumar ed., *Conflict Resolution in Uganda* (Athens: Ohio University Press), pp. 116-140.

_____. (1988), 'Political Transitions since Idi Amin', in Hansen, Holger B. and Twaddle M., eds., *Uganda Now: Between Decay and Development* (London: James Currey), pp. 280-298.

Mugyenyi, Joshua B. (1991), 'IMF Conditionality and Structural Adjustment under the National Resistance Movement' in Hansen, Holger B. and Twaddle, M., Changing Uganda: The Dilemmas of Structural Adjustment & Revolutionary Change. (London: James Currey), pp. 61-78.

Multi-country Disarmament and Reintegration Project (MRDP) (2003), MDRP Position Paper: Linkages between Disarmament, Demobilisation and Reintegration of Reporters and Security Sector Reform, at:
http://www.mdrp.org/PDFs/ssr-paper.pdf, accessed on 24 June 2014.

Murshed S. M and Sen S. (1995), 'Aid Conditionality and Military Expenditure Reduction in Developing Countries: Models of Asymmetric Information' The Economic Journal, Vol. 105, No. 429, pp. 498-509.

Museveni, Kaguta Y. (2011), National Resistance Movement Election Manifesto 2011-2016: Prosperity for All-Better Service Delivery and Job Creation (Kampala: NRM Publications).

_____. (2008), 'The Strategy of Protracted People's War: Uganda', Military Review, Volume LXXXVIII, No.6, pp. 4-13.

_____. (2006), National Resistance Movement Election Manifesto 2006: Prosperity for All (Kampala: NRM Publications).

_____. (2001), National Resistance Movement Election Manifesto 2001: Consolidating the Achievements of the Movement (Kampala: NRM Publications).

_____. (1997), Sowing the Mustard Seed: The Struggle for Freedom and Democracy in Uganda (Oxford: Macmillan).

Musah Abdul-Futau and Fayemi, J'Kayode (2000), Mercenaries: An African Security Dilemma (London: Pluto Press).

Mutengesa S. (2013), 'Facile Acronyms and Tangled Processes: A Re-Examination of the 1990s 'DDR' In Uganda', *International Peacekeeping*, 20:3, pp. 338-356.

Mutengesa S. and Hendrickson D. (2008), 'State Responsiveness to Public Security Needs: The Politics of Security Decision-Making, Uganda Country Study'. (Conflict Security and Development Group Study No. 16).

Mutibwa, Phares M. (1992), Uganda since Independence: A Story of Unfulfilled Hopes (Trenton N.J.: Africa World Press).

Mwenda, A. (2003), Playing Mouse to the IMF and World Bank Cat: How Donors Finance Armed Conflict, Promote Corruption, Stifle Democracy, and Sustain State Patronage: A Case Study of Uganda 1987-2003. Unpublished.

Nabudere, Wadada D. (1980), Imperialism and Revolution in Uganda (London: Onyx Press).

Nathan, L. (2004). 'Obstacles to Security Sector Reform in New Democracies' in Bloomfield, D; Fischer, M and Schmelzle, B. Berghof Handbook for Conflict transformation, available at: http://www.berghof-handbook.net/documents/publications/dialogue2_nathan.pdf, 24 March 2011.

Nathan, L. (2007), Security Sector Reform and the Imperative of Local Ownership (Global Facilitation Network for Security Sector Reform: Birmingham).

Nathan, Laurie (2009), 'The Challenge of Local Ownership of SSR: From Donor Rhetoric to Practice', in Donais, Timothy Ed. *Local Ownership and Security Sector Reform* (New Brunswick: Transaction Publishers), pp.19-38.

Newman E., and Schnabel A., Eds. (2002), Recovering from Civil Conflict: Reconciliation, Peace and Development (London: Frank Cass).

Neurath, Otto (1973), Empiricism and Sociology, (Dordrecht: D. Reidel Publishing Co.).

Newman, Edward (2004), 'Human Security: A Normatively Attractive but analytically Weak Concept' Security Dialogue Vol. 35, No. 3 pp. 358-359.

Newsom David D. (1996), The Public Dimension of Foreign Policy (Indianapolis, IN.: Indiana University Press).

Nie, NH; Powell, BG, Jr. and Prewitt, K (1969), 'Social Structure and Political Participation: Developmental Relationships, Part I.' The American Political Science Review, Vol.63, No. 2, pp. 361-378.

Nie, NH; Powell, BG, Jr. and Prewitt, K (1969), 'Social Structure and Political Participation: Developmental Relationships, Part II.' The American Political Science Review, Vol.63, No. 2, pp. 808-832

Nordlinger, Eric A. (I977), Soldiers in Politics: Military Coups and Governments (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall)

North, Douglass C. (2009), Institutions, Institutional Change and Economic Performance (New York, NY: Cambridge University Press).

Norton, Augustus R. (1995), Civil Society in the Middle East: Volume One (Leiden: Brill Academic Pub).

Norton, Augustus R. (1993), 'The Future of Civil Society in the Middle East', *Middle East Journal, Vol. 47, No. 2*, pp. 205-216.

Omoigui, Nowamagbe A. (2004), 'Military Defense Pacts in Africa', in Kieh, George Klay Jr. and Agbese, Pita Ogaba eds.: *The Military and Politics in Africa: From Engagement to Democratic and Constitutional Control.* (Aldershot: Ashgate), pp. 130-182.

Nwagwu, Emeka (2002), Taming the Tiger: Civil-Military Relations Reform and the Search for Political Stability in Nigeria (Totowa, NJ.: Rowan and Littlefield).

Oakeshott, Michael (1962), Rationalism in Politics and Other Essays (London: Methuen).

Odom, William E. (1973), 'The Soviet Military: The Party Connection', Problems of Communism, xxii p. 23.

OECD (2005), Security System Reform and Governance; DAC Guidelines and Reference Series, OECD Publishing, available at: http://www.oecd.org/dataoecd/8/39/31785288.pdf, 15 July 2010.

OECD (2007), OECD DAC Handbook on Security System Reform: Supporting Security and Justice and Governance (OECD Publishing).

OECD (1994), Development Co-operation I993 Report (Paris: OECD).

Ofcansky T. (1992), 'National Security', in Byrnes Rita M, ed., Uganda: A Country Study, DA Pam 550-74 (Washington D.C.: United States Government Printing Office).

Ogle, Marbury B.; Schneider L. and Wiley, Jay W. (1954), Power, Order, and the Economy: A preface to the social sciences (New York, N.Y.: Harper).

O'Kadameri B. (2002), 'LRA/Government Negotiations 1993-94', in Okello Lucima ed., Protracted Conflict, Elusive Peace: Initiatives to End the Violence in Northern Uganda (London: Conciliation Resources), pp. 34-41.

Oliver C. (1991), 'Strategic Responses to Institutional Processes', *The Academy of Management Review*, Vol. 16, No. 1. pp. 145-179.

Omara-Otunnu, A. (1987), Politics and the Military in Uganda, 1890-1985 (Basingstoke: Macmillan).

Ondoga, ori Amaza (1998), Museveni's Long March: From Guerrilla to Statesman (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Opio-Epelu J. (2009), Teso War 1986-1992: Causes and Consequences (Kampala: Fountain Publishers).

Orbie, J. (2006), 'Civilian Power Europe: Review of the Original and Current Debates'; *Cooperation and Conflict*, Vol. 41 no. 1 pp. 123-128.

Organski AFK (1965), The Stages of Political Development (New York, NY: Alfred A. Knopf).

Ottaway, M. and Mair, S. (2004), States at Risk and Failed States: Putting Security First, Policy Outlook, available at: http://www.carnegieendowment.org/files/Ottaway_outlook3.pdf, 20 November 2010.

Pain D.R. (1987), 'Acholi and Nubians: Economic Forces and Military Employment' in Dodge, C.P. and Wiebe, P.D. eds., 'Beyond Crisis: Development Issues in Uganda' (Kampala: Makerere Institute of Social Research) pp. 23-26.

Paris, Roland (2004), At War's End: Building Peace after Civil Conflict (New York, NY: Cambridge University Press).

Paris, Roland (2001), 'Human Security: Paradigm Shift or Hot Air?' *International Security*, Volume 26, No. 2, pp. 87-102.

Parsons, Talcott (1971), *The System of Modern Societies* (Englewood Cliffs: Prentice –Hall).

Parsons, Timothy H. (2007), 'The Lanet Incident, 2-25 January 1964: Military Unrest and National Amnesia in Kenya', International Journal of African Historical studies, 40:1, pp. 51-70.

Parsons, Timothy H. (2003), The 1964 Army Mutinies and the Making of Modern East Africa (Westport, CT.: Greenwood).

Parsons Timothy H. (1999), '"Wakamba Warriors Are Soldiers of the Queen": The Evolution of the Kamba as a Martial Race, 1890–1970', *Ethnohistory* 46.4 pp. 671-701.

PEFA (2006), Public Expenditure and Financial Accountability Performance Measurement Framework (Washington, DC.: World Bank).

Perlmutter, A. and LeoGrande, William M. (1982), 'The Party in Uniform: Toward a Theory of Civil-Military Relations in Communist Political Systems' *The American Political Science Review, Vol. 76, No. 4*. pp. 778-789.

Perlmutter, A. (1977), The Military and Politics in Modern Times: On Professionals, Praetorians, and Ordinary Soldiers (New Haven: Yale University Press).

Perlmutter, A. (1969), 'The Praetorian State and the Praetorian Army: Toward a Taxonomy of Civil-Military Relations in Developing Polities' *Comparative Politics*, Vol. 1, No. 3 (Apr., 1969), pp. 382-404.

Pillar, P. (1983), Negotiating Peace: War Termination as a bargaining Process (Princeton: Princeton University Press)

Pinnington, A., and T. Morris (2003), 'Archetype Change in Professional Organizations: Survey Evidence from Large Law Firms' *British Journal of Management* 14:85–99.

Plato (1906), The Republic; Everyman's Library No. 64 (London: J.M. Dent and Sons).

Popper, Karl R (1969), Conjectures and Refutations: The Growth of Scientific Knowledge, 3rd ed. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul).

Popper, K.R, (1968), 'Is there an epistemological problem of perception?' in Lakatos, I and Musgrave, A. eds. *Problems in the Philosophy of Science* (Amsterdam: North Holland), pp. 163-164.

Porter, B. (2006), The Absent-Minded Imperialists: Empire, Society, and Culture in Britain (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Possony, Stefan T. (1944), 'No Peace without Arms' *The Review of Politics*, Vol. 6, No. 2, pp. 216-227.

Pritchett L.; Woolcock, M.; Andrews M. (2010), 'Capability Traps? The Mechanisms of Persistent Implementation Failure'; CGD Working Paper 234 (Washington, D.C.: Center for Global Development), http://www.cgdev.org/content/publications/detail/1424651, accessed on 11 May 2013.

Prunier G. (1995), The Rwanda Crisis: History of a Genocide (New York: Columbia University Press).

Przeworski A. and Limongi F. (1997), 'Modernization: Theories and Facts', *World Politics*, Vol. 49, No. 2 pp. 155-183.

Pugh, Michael (2004), 'Civil Society and the Security Sector: Security-Sector Reform is too serious a Business to be left to Soldiers.' In: Fluri, P. and Hadz˘ic´, M., Eds, *Sourcebook on Security Sector Reform* (DCAF and Centre for Civil-Military Relations, Geneva/Belgrade), pp. 209-216.

Purdue D. (2010), 'Dimensions of Civil Society', in Purdue D., ed , *Civil Societies and Social Movements: Potentials and Problems* (Oxford: Routledge), pp. 1-16.

Pye Lucian W. (1966), Aspects of Political Development: An Analytic Study (Boston, MA: Little, Brown & Co).

Pye, L., (1971), 'Identity and the Political Culture' in Binder, L. *et al.,* eds., *Crises and Sequences in Political Development* (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp.101-134.

Quine, Willard Van Orman (1960), Word and Object (New York: MIT Press).

Quintelier, Katinka; Van Speybroeck, Linda; Braeckman, Johan (2011), 'Normative Ethics Does Not Need a Foundation: It Needs More Science', Acta Biotheoretica, Vol. 59, 29-51.

Ramphal, Shridath S. (1985), 'Disarmament, Development and Security', IDS Bulletin, Volume 16, No. 4 (Disarmament and World Development: Is there a way forward?).

Reichenbach, Hans (1938), Experience and Prediction: An Analysis of the Foundation and the Structure of Knowledge (Chicago, IL: Phoenix).

Reid R. (2002), Political Power in Pre-Colonial Buganda: Economy, Society & Warfare in the Nineteenth Century (Oxford: James Currey).

_____. (2007), War in Pre-Colonial Eastern Africa (Oxford: James Currey).

Reith, C. (1952), The Blind Eye of History (London: Faber).

Ridley, F.F., and Blondel, J. (1969), Public Administration in France (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul).

Rokkan, Stein (1975), 'Dimensions of State Formation and Nation-building: A Possible Paradigm for Research on Variations within Europe' in Tilly, Charles ed., The Formation of National States in Europe (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp. 562-600.

Roscoe J. (1911), The Baganda: An Account of Their Native Customs and Beliefs (London: Macmillan).

Rose, R. (2003), 'What's Wrong with Best Practice Policies – And Why Relevant Practices Are Better', On Target? Government by Measurement; London: House of Commons Public Administration Select Committee HC 62-II, 2003, 307-317.

Rotberg R., ed. (2003), State Failure and State Weakness in a Time of Terror (Cambridge, MA: World Peace Foundation).

Rudner, Richard S. (1966), Philosophy of Social Science (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice Hall).

Rummel R.J. (1994), Death by Government (New Brunswick, N.J.: Transaction).

Russell, Bertrand (2004), Power: A New Social Analysis (London: Routledge).

Russell, Bertrand 2nd Ed., (1998), The Problems of Philosophy (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

Rwamirama, Kanyontore B. (1999), The Effect of Organisational Structure on Performance and Work Relationships: A Structural Analysis of Uganda Ministry of Defence and its Army Headquarters (Master's Degree Dissertation submitted to Makerere University Business School), http://www.mubs.ac.ug/docs/masters/mba/RWAMIRAMA%20BRIGHT%20K.%20MBA.pdf., accessed on 20th May 2014.

Salmon, Wesley C (1973), Logic (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice Hall).

Salomons, D. (2005), 'Security: An Absolute Prerequisite', in Gerd J. and Willemijn V. eds., *Postconflict Development: Meeting New Challenges* (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner), pp. 19-41.

Sartori, G. (1970), 'Concept Misformation in Comparative Politics', *American Political Science Review* 64, pp. 103-53.

Sass, SM; Heller, W; Stewart, JL; Silton, RL; Edgar, JC; Fisher, JE; Miller, GA (2010), 'Time Course of Attentional Bias in Anxiety: Emotion and Gender Specificity', *Psychophysiology* 47 (2): 247–59.

Sathyamurthy T.V. (1986), The Political Development of Uganda: 1900 – 1986 (Hants, England: Gower Publishing Company Limited).

Schein, E. (1985), Organizational Culture and Leadership: A Dynamic View (San Francisco: Jossey-Bass).

Scheye, Eric (2010), Realism and Pragmatism in Security Sector Development, United States Institute of Peace, Special Report 257, at http://www.usip.org/files/resources/SR257%20-%20Realism%20and%20Pragmatism%20in%20Security%20Sector%20Development.pdf, accessed on 18 July 2012.

Schick A. (1998), 'Why most developing countries should not try New Zealand reforms'. *The World Bank Research Observer vol. 13, no. 1*, pp. 23-131.

Schiff, Rebecca (1995), 'Civil-Military Relations Reconsidered: A Theory of Concordance'. *Armed Forces & Society*, 22: 7–24.

Schiff, R. (2009), The Military and Domestic Politics: A Concordance Theory of Civil-Military Relations (New York: Routledge Press).

Schlick, Moritz (1936), 'Meaning and Verification'; The Philosophical Review, Vol. 45, No. 4 pp. 339-369.

Scholte J.A. (2000), 'Global Civil Society' in Woods, Ngaire, The Political Economy of Globalization (New York, N.Y.: Palgrave Macmillan), pp. 173-201.

Schomerus, M. & Tim A. (2006), A Hard Homecoming: Lessons Learned from the Reception Center Process In Northern Uganda: An Independent Study, United States Agency for International Development / United Nations Children's Fund (Washington, D.C..: USAID).

Scott James C. (1969), 'Corruption, Machine Politics, and Political Change', *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 63, No. 4, pp. 1142-1158.

Scott, R. W. (2008), Institutions and organizations (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage).

Scott, Richard W. (2004), 'Institutional Theory' in George Ritzer, ed. *Encyclopaedia of Social Theory* (Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage), pp. 408-14.

Seers, D. (1972), 'The Meaning of Development' in Uphoff Norman T and Ilchman Warren F. eds. The Political Economy of Development (Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press), pp. 123-129.

Shapiro I. (1989), 'Gross Concepts in Political Argument', *Political Theory*, 17:1, pp. 51-76.

Shaw, M. (2000), 'The Development of "Common-Risk" Society: A Theoretical Overview', in Kuhlmann J. and Callaghan J. Eds, *Military and Society in 21st Century Europe: A Comparative Analysis* (Hamburg: LIT), pp. 13–26.

Shaw, M. (1994) 'Civil Society and Global Politics: Beyond a Social Movements Approach', *Millennium: Journal of International Studies*, 23, pp. 647–67.

Shirley, Mary M. (2008), Institutions and Development (Cheltenham: Edward Elgar).

Short, C. (1999), Security Sector Reform and the Elimination of Poverty, Paper presented at the Centre for Defence Studies, King's College, London on 9 March 1999, http://www.clareshort.co.uk/speeches/DFID/9%20March%201999.pdf, accessed on 25 September 2014.

Short, Clare (1998), 'Security, Development and Conflict Prevention', Speech at the Royal College of Defence Studies, London, 13 May 1998.

Sidgwick, Henry (1884), The Methods of Ethics, 3rd Ed. (London: Macmillan & Co.).

Simon D. (2008), 'Postmordernism: Panacea, Placebo or Perversity?' in Desai V and Potter Robert B eds., *The Companion to Development Studies* (London: Hodder), pp. 119-124.

Slessor J. (1962), 'Introduction' in Gutteridge W., Armed Forces in New States (Oxford: Oxford University Press), pp. vi-ix.

Smith, Steve (1996), 'Positivism and Beyond', in Smith, Steve; Booth, Ken and Zalewski, Marysia eds. International Relations theory: Positivism & Beyond (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press), pp. 11-46.

Smith S. (1992), 'The Forty Years' Detour: The Resurgence of Normative Theory in International Relations', Millennium - Journal of International Studies 1992 Volume 21, No 3, pp. 489-506.

Smith, Steve; Booth, Ken and Zalewski, Marysia eds. (1996), International Relations theory: Positivism & Beyond (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press).

Snider, D.M. (1999), 'An Uninformed Debate on Military Culture' *Orbis*, 43 (1), 11-26.

Sorel, A. (1885), L'Europe et la Revolution Francaise (Paris: E. Plon, Nourrit et cie).

Spears, I. (2000), 'Building Confidence Amidst Africa's Civil Wars: The Opportunities and Constraints' *Civil Wars Volume* 3, No. 2, pp. 23-50.

Spears I. (2000), 'Confidence-Building Measures in Africa', Written for the Canadian Department of International Affairs and Trade, International Security Research and Outreach Program; http://www.dfait-maeci.gc.ca/arms/pdf/Africa_CBMs_paper-e.pdf , 10 January 2004.

Spear, J. (2006), 'Disarmament, Demobilization, Reinsertion and Reintegration in Africa', in Furley Oliver and May Roy, Eds., *Ending Africa's Wars: Progressing to Peace* (Burlington VT: Ashgate Publishing Company), pp. 99-112.

Spear, J. (1999), 'The disarmament and 'demobilization' of warring factions in the aftermath of civil wars: Key implementation issues' *Civil Wars*, Volume 2, Issue 2, pages 1 – 22.

Stanley, Henry M. (1890), In Darkest Africa or, The Quest, Rescue and Retreat of Emin, Governor of Equatoria, Vol. II (New York, N.Y.: Charles Scribner's Sons).

Stapleton, Timothy J. (2013), A Military History of Africa, Volume 1 (Santa Barbara CA.: Praegar).

Stead W.T. ed. (1902), The Last Will and Testament of Cecil John Rhodes (Review of Reviews Office: London).

Stedman S J, Rothschild D S., Cousens, E M (2002), Ending Civil Wars: The Implementation of Peace Agreements, (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Stepan A. (1988), Rethinking Military Politics: Brazil and the Southern Cone (Princeton N.J.: Princeton University Press).

Stephens, W. B., (1990), 'Literacy in England, Scotland, and Wales, 1500–1900'. *History of Education Quarterly*, 30(4), Special Issue on the History of Literacy, pp. 545–71.

Stinnett, D.M., and Diehl P.F. (2001) 'The Path(s) to Rivalry: Behavioral and Structural Explanations of Rivalry Development', *Journal of Politics* , 63:3 pp. 717–740.

Strayer, Joseph B. (1970), On the Mediaeval origins of the Modern State (Princeton NJ.: Princeton University Press).

Strayer Joseph B. (1963), 'The Historical Experience of Nation-Building in Europe' in Deutsch Wolfgang, Karl and Foltz, William eds., Nation-building (New York: Atherton) pp. 17-26.

Suhrke, Astri (1999), 'Human Security and the Interests of States' Security Dialogue, Vol. 30 No. 3 pp. 265-276.

Sundhaussen, ulf (1998), 'The Military: A Threat to Democracy?' Australian Journal of Politics and History: Volume 44, Number 3, 1998, pp. 329-49.

Tadjbakhsh, S., and Chenoy, A.M. (2007), Human Security: Concepts and Implications (London: Routledge).

Taliaferro Jeffrey W. (2006), 'State Building for Future Wars: Neoclassical Realism and the Resource-Extractive State', *Security Studies* 15, no. 3 464–495.

Tandon, Y. (1987), 'Elements of Continuity and Change Between Obote and Museveni: Some Lessons from Obote's Rule for Museveni's Government'; *Ufahamu: A Journal of African Studies*, 15(3), pp. 79-97.

Tangri, R. and Mwenda Andrew M. (2013), The Politics of Elite Corruption in Africa: Uganda in Comparative African Perspective (Abingdon, Oxon: Routledge).

Tangri, R. and Mwenda Andrew M. (2003), 'Military Corruption & Ugandan Politics since the late 1990s' Review of African Political Economy No.98, pp 539-553.

Tangri, R. and Mwenda Andrew M. (2001), 'Corruption and Cronyism in Uganda's Privatisation in the 1990s', African Affairs, No. 100, pp. 117-133.

Tschirgi, Neclâ (2004), Post-conflict Peacebuilding Revisited: Achievements Limitations, Challenges (Prepared for the WSP International/IPA Peacebuilding Forum Conference, 07 October 2004), http://www.ipacademy.org/pdfs/POST_CONFLICT_PEACEBUILDING.pdf, 11 March 2008.

The EU in the World: The Foreign Policy of the European Union, European Commission, Directorate-General for Communication, Publications, June 2007, 4 (http://www.delago.ec.europa.eu/ao/ue_global/en.pdf, cited on 01st February 2012).

Therborn, G. (1997), 'Europe in the Twenty-first Century: The World's Scandinavia?', in P. Gowan and P. Anderson Eds, The Question of Europe (London: Verso), pp. 357–84.

Thomas, Caroline (1987), In Search of Security: The Third World in International Relations (Brighton: Wheatsheaf).

Tilly C. (1975a), 'Reflections on the History of State-making' in Tilly, C. ed., The Formation of National States in Europe (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp. 3-83.

Tilly, C. (1975b), 'Western State-Making and Theories of Political Transformation', in Tilly, C. ed., The Formation of National States in Europe (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp. 601-638.

Tilly, C. ed., (1975c), The Formation of National States in Europe (Princeton: Princeton University Press).

Toft, M. (2006), Peace through Security: How to Make Negotiated Settlements Stick, Paper presented at the annual meeting of the International Studies Association, San Diego, California, USA, Mar 22, 2006.

Transparency International (2012) Corruption Perceptions Index 2012 (Berlin: TI), http://issuu.com/transparencyinternational/docs/cpi_2012_report?e=2496456/2010281, accessed on 27 April 2013.

Tschirgi, Neclâ (2004), 'Post-conflict Peacebuilding Revisited: Achievements Limitations, Challenges'; *A Paper prepared for the WSP International/IPA Peacebuilding Forum Conference, 07 May 2009),* available at

http://www.un.org/esa/peacebuilding/Library/Post_Conflict_Peacebuilding_IPA.pdf, accessed on 01 December 2012.

Turner, J. (1997), The Institutional Order, (New York, NY: Longman).

Uebel, T. (2010), 'Opposition to 'Verstehen' in Orthodox Logical Empiricism', in U. Feest, ed. Historical Perspectives on 'Erklaeren' and 'Verstehen'; (Dordrecht: Springer; p. 291-310.

Uganda Government (2014), Report of the Committee on Defence and Internal Affairs on the Ministerial Policy Statements and Budget Estimates for the Fiscal Year 2013/2014, http://www.parliament.go.ug/new/index.php/documents-and-reports/committee-reports/category/31-committee-on-defence-and-internal-affairs, accessed on 25 June 2014.

Uganda Government (2006), 2002 Uganda Population and Housing Census: Analytical Report Population Size and Distribution (Kampala: Uganda Bureau of Statistics, UBOS).

Uganda Government (2002), Uganda Population and Housing Census, 2002 (Kampala: Uganda Bureau of Statistics, UBOS) http://www.ubos.org/2002%20Census%20Final%20Reportdoc.pdf, accessed on 25 May 2010.

UNICEF (1996), The State of the World's Children 1996 (Oxford: Oxford University Press).

United Nations Organisation (2006), Integrated Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration Standards (IDDRS) (New York, N.Y.: United Nations).

United Nations (2002), Final report of the Panel of Experts on the Illegal Exploitation of Natural Resources and Other Forms of Wealth of the Democratic Republic of the Congo (UN: New York).

_____. (2000), The Role of United Nations Peacekeeping in Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration: Report of the Secretary General (New York, N.Y.: United Nations).

_____. (1999), Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration of Ex-Combatants in a Peacekeeping Environment: Principles and Guidelines. Lessons Learned Unit (New York: UNDPKO)

_____. (1994), An Agenda for Development: Report of the Secretary General, UN Doc A/48/935 (6 May 1994).

United Nations Development Programme (2013), Human Development Report 2013: The Rise of the Global South: Human Progress in a Diverse World. (New York: United Nations).

United Nations (2012), World Urbanization Prospects: The 2011 Revision, *Report ST/ESA/SER.A/322 of the Department of Economic and Social Affairs Population Division* (New York, NY; United Nations).

United Nations (2009), The Least Developed Countries Report 2009: The State and Development Governance (New York, NY: United Nations Publications).

United Nations (2008), Securing Peace and Development: The Role of the United Nations in Supporting Security Sector Reform; Report of the Secretary-General (New York: United Nations).

United Nations Organisation (2006), Integrated Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration Standards (IDDRS) (New York: United Nations).

United Nations (2004), A more Secure World: Our shared Responsibility, A/59/565 - Report of the High-level Panel on Threats, Challenges and Change (New York: United Nations). .

United Nations (2004), The rule of law and transitional justice in conflict and post-conflict societies, Report of the Secretary-General (New York: United Nations).

United Nations (2000), The Role of United Nations Peacekeeping in Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration: Report of the Secretary General, http://www.smallarmssurvey.org/files/portal/issueareas/measures/Measur_pdf/i_measur_pdf/UN_doc/s_council/S_2000_101.pdf, 01 January 2008.

United Nations (1999), Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration of Ex-Combatants in a Peacekeeping Environment: Principles and Guidelines (Lessons Learned Unit (New York: UNDPKO) http://www.un.org/Depts/dpko/lessons/DD&R.pdf , 28 October 2007.

United Nations, (1994), An Agenda for Development: Report of the Secretary-General, UN Doc A/48/935, 6 May 1994; http://www.un.org/Docs/SG/agdev.html, accessed on 20 March 2011.

_____. (1972), 'The Relationship between Disarmament and Development', ST/ECA/174 (Sales no E.73.1X.1) New York.

US Army (1998), FM 100-17 Mobilization, Deployment, Redeployment, Demobilization (Washington, DC.: Government Printing Office).

Uvin, P. (1998), Aiding Violence: The Development Enterprise in Rwanda (Hartford, CT: Kumarian Press).

Van de Ven, A. H., and Poole, M. S. (1995), 'Explaining development and change in organizations', *Academy of Management Review*, 20(3), 510–540.

Van Dyke V. (1962), Political Science: A Philosophical Analysis (Stanford, CA.: Stanford University Press).

Veblen T (1909), 'The Limitations of Marginal Utility' *Journal of Political Economy*, Vol. 17, No. 9 pp. 620-636.

Verba S. (1971), 'Sequences and Development', in Binder, L. *et al.,* eds, *Crises and Sequences in Political Development* (Princeton: Princeton University Press), pp. 283-316.

Verweijen J. (2014), 'Half-Brewed: The Lukewarm Results of Creating an Integrated Congolese Military', in Licklider R. ed. *New Armies from Old: Merging Competing Military Forces after Civil Wars'* (Washington, D.C.: Georgetown University Press), pp. 137-162.

Viotti, Paul (2010), American Foreign Policy (Cambridge: Polity).

de Vries, Jan (1984), European Urbanization, 1500-1800 (Oxford: Routledge).

Wallace W. (1994), 'Between Two Worlds: Think Tanks and Foreign Policy', in Hill C and Beshoff P., Eds. 1994. The Two Worlds of International Relations: Academics, Practitioners and the Trade in Ideas (London: Routledge), pp. 139-163.

Walter, Barbara (2002), Committing to Peace: The Successful Settlement of Civil Wars (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press).

Waltz Kenneth N. (1979), Theory of International Relations (New York, NY: McGraw-Hill).

Watson, C. (2004), *Nation-building: A Reference Handbook* (Santa Barbara, Ca: ABC-Clio, Inc.).

Weber, M (1978), Economy and society (Berkeley, CA: University of California Press).

Weitzer, Ronald (1985), 'Policing a Divided Society: Obstacles to Normalization in Northern Ireland', *Social Problems, Vol. 33, No. 1* pp. 41-55

Welch, Claude E. and Smith, Arthur K. (1974), Military role and rule: perspectives on civil-military relations (North Scituate, Mass.: Duxbury Press).

Welch, Jr., Claude E. ed. (1970), Soldier and State in Africa: A Comparative Analysis of Military Intervention and Political Change (Evanston: Northwestern University Press).

Welch, Claude E. (1967), 'Soldier and State in Africa', *The Journal of Modern African Studies*, Vol. 5, No. 3, pp. 305-322.

Whewell, W (1858), History of Scientific Ideas, Vol 1 (London: John W. Parker).

Whitfield L.; Fraser A. (2010), 'Negotiating Aid: The Structural Conditions Shaping the Negotiating Strategies of African Governments' *International Negotiation*, 15, pp. 341–366.

Wiener, Myron and Huntington SP eds., (1987), Understanding Political Development (Boston: Little Brown and Company).

Wilkinson A. and Hughes-Wilson J. (2001), Safe and Efficient Small Arms Collection and Destruction Programmes - A proposal for practical technical measures (UNDP, New York).

Willibald, Sigrid (2006), 'Does money work? Cash Transfers to Ex-Combatants in Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration Processes', *Disasters*, Volume 30, Issue 3, p. 316-339.

MacDonald, Matt (2008), 'Constructivism', in Williams, Paul D. Ed., *Security Studies: An Introduction* (Oxford: Routeledge), pp. 59-72.

Williams, H. and Murphy P.V. (1990), 'The Evolving Strategy of Policing: A Minority View,' *Perspectives on Policing*, No. 13 (Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice/Harvard University).

Williams M. and May, T (1996), Introduction to the Philosophy of Social Research (London: UCL Press).

Williams R. (2000), Building stability in Africa: Challenges for the new millennium, Monograph 46, Institute for Security Studies (Pretoria: ISS), http://www.issafrica.org/Pubs/Monographs/No46/Africa.html accessed on 03 February 2010.

Williams R. (2005), 'African Armed Forces and the Challenges of Security Sector Reform', *Journal of Security Sector Management*, Vol. 3, No. 2.

Willibald S. (2006), 'Does money work? Cash Transfers To Ex-Combatants in Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration Processes', Disasters, Volume 30, Issue 3, p. 316-339.

Winch Peter (1990), The Idea of a Social Science, 2nd Ed. (London: Routledge).

Wittgenstein L. (1961), Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus (Routledge: Oxford).

Wood S. (2009), The European Union: A Normative or Normal Power? European Foreign Affairs Review, 14 (1), pp. 113-28.

Woolcock Michael; Szreter Simon and Rao Vijayendra (2011), 'How and Why Does History Matter for Development Policy?', Journal of Development Studies, 47: 1, 70 — 96.

World Bank (2007), Tools for Institutional, Political, and Social Analysis of Policy Reform: A Sourcebook for Development Practitioners (Washington, DC: The World Bank).

World Bank (2005), Building Effective States, Forging Engaged Societies. Report of the World Bank Task Force on Capacity Development in Africa (Washington, DC.: IBRD).

World Bank (1999), The Transition from War to Peace: An Overview (Washington, DC: IBRD) http://www.interworksmadison.com/WorldBankmodulenoc.pdf accessed on 20 September 2012.

World Bank (1998a.), Assessing Aid: What Works, What doesn't and Why. World Bank Policy Research Report, (New York, N.Y: Oxford University Press).

World Bank (1998b.), Recommendations for Strengthening the Government of Uganda's Anti-Corruption Programme (Washington D.C.: World Bank).

Wrigley C. (1988), 'Four Steps to Disaster' in Hansen, Holger B. and Twaddle, M. eds. *Uganda Now: Between Decay and Development* (London: James Currey), pp. 27-35.

Wulf H., (2005), 'Security Sector Reform in Developing and Transitional Countries Reform in New Democracies' in Bloomfield, D; Fischer, M and Schmelzle, B. Berghof Handbook for Conflict transformation available at: http://www.berghof-handbook.net/complete.htm, 24 December 2010.

Young C. (2012), The Postcolonial State in Africa: Fifty Years of Independence, 1960-2010 (Madison: The University of Wisconsin Press).

Young C. (2004), 'The End of the Post-Colonial State in Africa? Reflections on Changing African Political Dynamics,' *African Affairs, 103*, pp. 23–49.

Young C. (1976), The Politics of Cultural Pluralism (Madison, WI: University of Wisconsin Press).

Zartman William I. ed. (2005), Cowardly Lions: Missed Opportunities for Preventing Deadly Conflict and State Collapse (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).

Zartman William I. ed. (1995), Collapsed States: The Disintegration and Restoration of Legitimate Authority (Boulder, CO.: Lynne Rienner).